





# GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 02

*Zi Chan Bao Zeng*

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

# God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

# Synopsis

---

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 101: Breaking Through the Base

---

The distance between the place Yue Zhong's group lived and the entrance to the base wasn't far.

Yue Zhong took the lead wearing bone armor, charging to the base's entrance.

"Who are you? Stop! Otherwise we will open fire!"

The four soldiers standing guard at the entrance shouted at Yue Zhong.

The soldiers standing guard had the Chinese produced type 89, 12.7 mm caliber machine guns that could pierce armored cars.

Yue Zhong sped along the road. As he was approaching the soldiers, his speed which was four times faster than an ordinary person, shot forward like an arrow moving in a zig-zag pattern.

The four soldiers guarding the entrance immediately grabbed their type 03 automatic rifles and spread fire at Yue Zhong.

Those soldiers weren't worthy of the name, having never gone through strict training. Even though Yue Zhong was moving high speed, there were still several bullets that hit his body. Immediately the bullets were sent flying by the bone armor. Ordinary bullets couldn't pierce through the current White Bones armor which had been only the strengthened several times. Only the 12.7 mm rounds could pierce through Yue Zhong's bone armor.

"Monster!!!" The soldier's eyes flashed with fright seeing bullets had no use against Yue Zhong. Knives and bullets were inferior to evolvers. This was their first time seeing one. Never before had they seen a monster that couldn't be stopped by bullets.

Yue Zhong arrived before the four soldiers in the space of several breaths. He used his hand to chop at the four soldiers, knocking them unconscious.

After taking care of the four soldiers, he rushed up the stairs towards the top of the city walls.

There were two type 89, 12.7 mm heavy machine guns fixed on the walls. They could both threaten Yue Zhong's life.

In a few moments Yue Zhong appeared on the city wall. Like an arrow he appeared at the sides of the two heavy machine gun operators. The two were knocked unconscious with two hand chops.

After entrance had been cleared, Liu Yan brought people to quickly secure the vicinity. He took the two type 89 heavy machine guns and placed them on a large truck.

He also seized an armed jeep near the entrance of the base.

Liu Yan pointed at the six soldiers knocked unconscious by Yue Zhong: "Captain Yue, what do you want us to do with these people?"

Yue Zhong looked at the six soldiers and said in a low voice: "Tie them up tightly and toss them in the truck! Prepare to leave immediately!"

Long Hai City base was nearly a military post. It would be very hard to match these opponents with military characteristics. Don't even mention the opposition recovered a military base possessing moderns light and heavy weapons.

Under the orders of Yue Zhong, Liu Yan made people quickly gather various supplies and load them on the truck. They took a Dong Feng truck, an armed jeep, and two hummers, and they madly sped far away from the base entrance.

Yue Zhong sat on the armed Jeep and stared at the ever distant Long Hai City survivor base. In his mind he coldly thought: "Ice King Association! I will remember this! It seems everything tested my ability."

This event with the Ice King Association at Long Hai City and

every thing he saw at Long Hai City caused a great change in Yue Zhong's thinking. It cut off his last trace of trust in the government.

Not long after Yue Zhong's group left Long Hai City, two type 92 infantry fighting vehicles (IFV) suddenly appeared on the highway.

Seeing the two type 92 IFVs appear, everyone's hearts became ice cold. On the type 92 IFVs were zpt90, 25mm round cannons that could easily tear apart the armor of their vehicles.

Yue Zhong shouted to Wang Shuang: "Don't panic! They don't necessarily know we are fleeing from the base. Just pass by!"

Wang Shuang's body slightly shivered. He just kept driving by according to Yue Zhong's plan.

"Stop the vehicle!" As two vehicles were passing, a voice broadcasted from an IFV.

"Stop the vehicle!" Yue Zhong said to Wang Shuang.

Wang Shuang let off the gas, and he immediately stopped the vehicle.

The armored jeep stopped, and the following vehicles all stopped behind.

Wearing a full set of military clothes, Yue Zhong and Wang Shuang got out of the vehicle. Everyone else got out of the vehicles one by one.

A young officer got out of the IFV and came over to the side of Yue Zhong's group.

The young officer looked at Yue Zhong. His brows wrinkled, and he asked: "I am the 3rd company 2nd platoon platoon leader Xu Zhigang! Which unit do you belong to?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed a cold light, and he started the skill shadow step. His level of speed rose sharply, and he strode forward immediately overcoming Xu Zhigang. A knife-hand chopped Xu



Zhigang on the neck causing him to knock unconscious.

Yue Zhong entered within ten meters of an IFV in the moment that Xu Zhigang was collapsing, and he immediately started the skill Art of Fear in the blink of an eye.

In an instant, an enormous baleful aura and spiritual power shrouded the area within ten meters. The soldiers in the IFV had no way to resist Yue Zhong's sneak attack.

On the other side, White Bones who was disguised as a person grabbed its axe. Moving at the speed of three times a normal person, it crazily rushed in a zig-zag pattern towards the second IFV.

The second IFV stopped. The light and heavy firepower poured out like a torrent towards White Bones. Artillery and machine gun fire formed a frantic bullet screen that could easily tear apart a light armored vehicle.

Even though White Bones did its best to evade, it was still hit by some machine gun fire. The machine gun fire had no effect on White Bone's body, only leaving a small impression, but the 25mm rounds could blow a hole in its body.

In the space of a few short breaths, White Bone's chest and right arm were hit by the heavy rounds. It rolled nearby to the side of the road. This let it not be completely destroyed.

Taking advantage of White Bones drawing the firepower, Yue Zhong moved at peak speed like a demon. He already arrived at within ten meters of the second IFV after a couple leaps, and he started the Art of Fear skill.

The baleful aura of the Art of Fear skill invaded the IFV in a moment. It made all the soldiers in the IFV so afraid that they passed out.

# Chapter 102: Infantry Fighting Vehicle (IFV)

---

“Hu!” Seeing the two IFVs simultaneously cease fire, Yue Zhong relaxed his breath.

The zpt90, 25 mm cannon was mighty. Yue Zhong’s motorcade would have few survivors left if the IFV fully opened fire.

Yue Zhong used sneak attack tactics. Using his evolver strength and items as well as the Art of Fear skill, he was able to seize the two IFVs without firing a shot.

Liu Yan seized the opportunity and brought men to open up the IFVs. He detained all of the unconscious.

There were nine soldiers in each of the IFVs, totaling eighteen men. The soldiers were detained and brought before Yue Zhong.

Second Lieutenant Xu Zhigang saw all of his captured comrades after he became conscious, then he stared at Yue Zhong and asked: “Who are you?”

Yue Zhong stared at him and plainly said: “I’m Yue Zhong! I’m a survivor that was just driven out of Long Hai City base. I am also one of those so called evolvers.”

Xu Zhigang continued to ask: “For what purpose did you capture us?”

Yue Zhong looked at Xu Zhigang and said in a low voice: “I want to know the distribution of Long Hai City’s defenses.”

Xu Zhigang stared at Yue Zhong. He said with emphasis: “You won’t get any intel from my mouth. I can’t sell off my comrades. You should kill me!”

Yue Zhong looked at Xu Zhigang, his eyes were written with the will to die. He unenthusiastically smiled and said: “You have a backbone, but not everyone is the same as you. Bring him over.”

Two of Yue Zhong’s team members walked over. They carried

the bundled Xu Zhigang behind the vehicle, making sure he was tied up nice and tight.

After Xu Zhigang was taken away, another soldier was brought before Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong stared at the soldier. He had a shaved head, dark skin and was extremely young. Yue simply said: "What is your name?"

The young soldier hesitated and said: "I am Wu Guang!"

Yue Zhong coldly said to Wu Guang: "I want to know the distribution of the troops in Long Hai City. If you tell me you can live. Don't speak, and I will violently kill you. Either way I have twenty captives, one should be willing to talk."

Just as Yue Zhong anticipated, Wu Guang nodded his head. He excitedly told everything he knew about the troops in Long Hai City: "Yes! I'll speak!"

When Lei Cheng started he only had two companies totaling two-hundred soldiers. Also over fifty of the soldiers who had gone through strict military training died in battle taking over Qingyuan county. But the survivor base has too many people. Lei Cheng quickly recruited over five hundred people who are in the prime of their lives into his ranks. Right now he has around six hundred troops.

But although the amount of troops increased a lot, Lei Cheng's combat strength hasn't increased very much. When attacking Qingyuan county, a large amount of ammunition and shells were used up. Right now Lei Cheng's ammunition supply isn't as much as when he recaptured the military base. Moreover, there are only ten IFVs in the whole survivor base. Yue Zhong had already seized two. He had already seized one fifth of their armored vehicle strength.

Yue Zhong stared at Wu Guang and slowly spoke: "Why are you telling me all this information so excitedly?"

Wu Zhong didn't know whether to laugh or cry: "Lei Cheng and his men rounded up all the beautiful women, and they hide in Long Hai City living a life of debauchery. We are left to do all the dirty work. My brothers are already dissatisfied in their hearts, but who wouldn't sacrifice their lives to help him in order to get food?"

"Furthermore, Lei Cheng doesn't have any ability. If it wasn't for his old man, he basically couldn't have become a battalion commander! Zhang Yizhang, the platoon leader who captured Qingyuan county is the talented person. Only as soon as he captured Qingyuan county, Zhang Yizhang mysteriously died. But this matter made his brother's hearts all half cold." Finished speaking, Wu Guang no longer called Lei Cheng a battalion commander, but rather Wu just called him by his name.

The army certainly doesn't publicize that type of thing. Although there are several high ranking officials with ability, there are also several who used relationships to move up. This is the pattern from ancient times until now.

Yue Zhong stared at Wu Guang and said: "Good! From now on you all are one of us. You will start as outside personnel and work your way up. Liu Yan! From now on you are the armored vehicle platoon leader. Wu Guang and your men will form into the first armored vehicle squad. You will teach Liu Yan's men to drive and operate the IFV. Wu Guang you are appointed the vice-leader of the first armored vehicle squad, and you will be a preliminary team member."

The IFV has enormous power, but Yue Zhong doesn't have any skilled soldiers. He could only let Wu Guang and these men complement his ranks, and impart IFV driving skills. If not, these two vehicles would slip from Yue Zhong's grasp, and he would have no way to bring into play their formidable combat ability.

Liu Yan's face showed a pleasant surprise, and he yelled in response: "Yes!"

The armored vehicle squad's combat ability greatly exceeded an ordinary soldier. Although the armored vehicle unit only had two IFVs, the small armored vehicle squad's combat ability also greatly exceeded other squads. Liu Yan was naturally in ecstasy being able to command this unit.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Wu Guang slightly relaxed his breath. He and his comrades wouldn't have to die like this. Several people started to become ruthless in order to live on, and live with a better life after Z-Age. Every day in Long Hai City survivor base, one could see the corpses of suicide victims and those killed by murderers.

Wu Guang hesitated a moment, and then asked Yue Zhong: "Captain Yue! What do you plan on doing with platoon leader Xu?"

Yue Zhong raised an eyebrow and asked: "What do you think?"

Wu Guang gritted his teeth. He raised his head, looked at Yue Zhong, and seriously said: "I wish Captain Yue couldn't kill the platoon leader. Although he is a little pedantic, he is a pure soldier. He is also a comrade worthy of our trust."

Yue Zhong carefully looked at Wu Guang. Waiving his hand he said: "Bring over Xu Zhigang."

Two team members brought Xu Zhigang over from the vehicle.

Yue Zhong looked at Xu Zhigang, and he slightly smiled. He pointed at Wu Guang and re-introduced him to Xu Zhigang: "Xu Zhigang, let me give you an introduction. This is our armored vehicle vice-leader Xu Guang."

Xu Zhigang's face suddenly became pale, and he interrogated Wu Guang: "Little Wu, what is this? Don't tell me in order to live you are betraying the party, betraying the nation? Are you shamelessly joining this bandit? Don't tell me you feel no shame in front of all these comrades?"

## Chapter 103: Wu Guang's Heartfelt Words.

---

Listening to Xu Zhigang's interrogation. The other soldiers captured by Yue Zhong all lowered their heads in shame.

Wu Guang's face changed, eyes flashing a blood-red light. He raised his head without showing the slightest bit of weakness and looked at Xu Zhigang: "Platoon Leader Xu, I deeply respect your character and ability. Originally there were some things I wouldn't think to say. But since you have said these words, I must say what is on my mind."

"You say I betray the party and the nation! Does that bastard Lei Cheng represent the party and the nation? Just because he is an upper level army commander, we must sell our lives to him?"

"We put our lives on the line when fighting zombies, and where is that bastard? He is busy getting his hands on all the beautiful women, living a life of debauchery, and hiding away in the base. It was Leader Zhang Yizhang who commanded the front lines. After the battle, where did Zhang Yizhang go?"

"After taking Qingyuan County, we were given all of the most dangerous assignments. Where is Lei Cheng? He is in the base playing with women! His son even publicly seized several women and took them to the barracks. Everyone knows these things. Do these type of men deserve to represent the nation?"

"Where do you live! In the special region!! You get to play with the special region women! And us? We live in a shabby building! His direct subordinates eat and drink whatever they want. We can only eat corn bread every day! The only reason is because we aren't his direct subordinates!"

"For the country, I'll fight foreign nations, if I'm needed than this life means nothing. But to sell my life for a person like Lei Cheng! I spit! He is undeserving!"

Wu Guang clenched his fists, his body shaking in fury. He became more agitated the more he spoke. The captured soldiers who joined Yue Zhong to save their lives all raised their heads. Wu Guang's words spoke their inner thoughts. They didn't want to sell their lives to a person like Lei Cheng.

As soon as Xu Zhigang heard Wu Guang's words, his face burst green and white. Everything Wu Guang said was true. It's just the job of a soldier is to obey commands, and Xu Zhigang is a pure soldier. Although he loathed Lei Cheng's character, but he could only resolutely complete the commands of Lei Cheng, because Lei Cheng is his legal superior.

Wu Guang gave Xu Zhigang one final salute. He said without any doubt: "Xu Zhigang, I respect your character and ability. Go back by yourself today! We will follow Yue Zhong from today on. The next time we meet on the battlefield, I won't hesitate to pull the trigger and drop you. Goodbye!"

Xu Zhigang looked at the dozen soldiers standing at Wu Guang's side. He returned a salute to Wu Guang, thinking to leave: "Goodbye!"

"Wait a moment! Platoon leader Xu! I have a few words I want you to take to Long Hai City survivor base." Yue Zhong called out to Xu Zhigang.

Xu Zhigang turned his head and looked at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong slowly said to Xu Zhigang: "I am Yue Zhong. The reason I brought people and fled Long Hai City survivor base today, it is entirely because the Ice King Association framed us. We don't have any opposition to Long Hai City survivor base. I wish for us to have a dialog and resolve this problem."

Although Yue Zhong attained a warehouse full of weapons, the majority of those weapons are all outdated, and the difference between modern military equipment is huge.

Long Hai City's armed forces were still far superior to Yue Zhong's. When it comes to dealing with people of unequal power, it is best to use a dialog to settle problems. Yue Zhong wasn't opposed to opening a dialog with Long Hai City survivor base.

Xu Zhigang indifferently nodded, and turned his body leaving alone towards Long Hai City survivor base: "Understood!"

Seeing Xu Zhigang leave, Yue Zhong turned to Wu Guang and asked: "What mission were you guys carrying out?"

Long Hai City unexpectedly sent out two IFVs to conduct a mission. Obviously this mission is extremely important.

Wu Guang already decided to be loyal to Yue Zhong. He frankly told Yue Zhong the mission he was carrying out: "Nearby to the north of Qingyuan county is Shanglin county. In the outskirts of Shanglin county is a large granary. This time our mission was to explore the specific situation of the area."

"This time we dispatched three IFVs. If the mission didn't have any major obstacles, then we were to capture the granary. If there was danger, we were to leave and report the intel to Long Hai City, then the higher ups would make a decision."

"We encountered a flood of mutant rats after arriving at the granary. Each one of those mutant rats was the size of a cat. Their claws were able to penetrate the weak places of the IFV's armor. Although we did our best to resist, attempting to withdraw, an IFV was still trapped in the rat swarm. All of our comrades inside the IFV died in combat."

Wu Guang's voiced dropped a little bit at the end of his speech. He still couldn't release his feelings towards his fallen comrades.

"Granary!"

Hearing this word, Yue Zhong's eyes lit up. If he could capture a granary full of food, the food crisis could be temporarily resolved.

Yue Zhong continued to ask: "How many soldiers are close to Lei



Cheng? And what is their combat ability?

Wu Guang thought a moment: “Lei Cheng’s trusted men total to two platoons, approximately 70 men. Those men have all gone through strict military training like us. Apart from those soldiers, Lei Cheng has also recruited over five hundred survivors to serve as subordinates. It is also said he has used beautiful women to recruit several evolvers. I only know this much.”

At that time, white bones, who was hit in the chest and shoulder, jumped out from the side of the highway. Its bones wiggled and extended. The parts hit by the 25mm cannon were restored to their original shape.

Yue Zhong attained the intel he wanted. He pondered a moment, then he lead everyone towards Always Bright Village.

In a villa at Qingyuan County specialty region, a middle age fatty wearing military clothes was scolding Xu Zhigang: “What? An IFV was swallowed by rats! The other two IFVs were captured by a single person? What did you eat? How are you so incompetent?”

The fatty in uniform scolding Xu Zhigang is no other than Qingyuan County’s highest military officer Lei Cheng. Lei Cheng has an irritable temperament, and he is harsh and merciless. Merely because he is the son of a battalion commander, he was able to climb up the ranks to this position. Because he is this type of person, Wu Guang and the rest easily threw in their lot with Yue Zhong.

There was a man with extremely neat combed hair. He was wearing military clothes, and he looked like a refined military person. He said to Lei Cheng: “Regiment commander Lei calm down. Didn’t platoon leader Xu say his opponent was an evolver? Evolvers have fantastic abilities of all kinds. A person who could snatch away two IFVs obviously has amazing abilities.”

This extremely refined looking military person is Lei Cheng’s think-tank member, Fang Wen. He is also one of Lei Cheng’s close

comrades. After Lei Cheng enlisted several survivors into his ranks, he immediately made himself the regiment commander. After forming the regiment, Fang Wen adapted to Lei Cheng's fancy, calling him regiment commander Lei.

# Chapter 104: Yue Zhong's Transformation

---

Fang Wen looked at Xu Zhigang and asked: "What else did he say?"

Xu Zhigang immediately reported Yue Zhong's words to Fang Wen.

Lei Cheng heard Yue Zhong's words, and his brows wrinkled: "Yue Zhong, who is he?"

Fang wen analyzed: "I estimate he is a new survivor to the base. He had a problem with the Ice King association, and then the Ice King association used all their methods to force him out the base."

Yue Zhong hadn't been in Long Hai City for many days, and his reputation wasn't known. Fang Wen didn't know much information about Yue Zhong. He could only rely on some clues to speculate.

Lei Cheng commanded Fang Wen: "Carefully inspect his background."

Lei Cheng couldn't easily resolve this matter without clearly knowing his opponent's strength. After all a person who can snatch away two IFVs is terrifying. Now Qingyuan county only has 7 IFVs left. If Yue Zhong continued seizing IFVs, they would lose their largest military intimidation power.

On the other side, Yue Zhong smoothly brought back the two IFVs to Always Bright Village.

As soon as the IFVs entered the village, they were surrounded by the villagers.

"Is that a tank?" A man who knew nothing about the military looked at the two IFVs and asked.

"Fool, those are IFVs!! Another survivor who knew about the military mocked.

“Haha!” The survivor ignorant about the military laughed. His eyes filled with warmth as he looked at the two IFVs

The defensive power of Always Bright Village just increased. Their lives became even more safe.

After Yue Zhong came into power, the survivor's lives became much better than when Tiger was in power. At the very least everyone could eat gruel every day. If they worked hard, they could also go fishing in the brook. Their lives were extremely satisfying compared to the past.

When night fell, all the high level members of Always Bright villages were gathered by Yue Zhong into the Villa. Everyone has missions during the daytime, so they could only be gathered at night.

“What's going on?” Chi Yang looked at Yue Zhong and asked.

Yue Zhong left Always Bright village a couple of days, and obviously he didn't stay very long. Naturally something unexpected happened.

Yue Zhong de-emphasized the situation saying: “The Ice King Association in Long Hai City is shady. I lead everyone out of the base, and we conveniently attained two IFVs.”

Yue Zhong said in a deep voice: “Today I gathered you all to listen to everyone's opinions. Always Bright Village isn't a place for long term residence. Right now our current priority is to find a new place to call our base. That place should be easily defendable, and it should have various types of facilities and factories.”

There are several shortcoming in Always Bright Village, and the supplies are lacking. It didn't compare to the Long Hai City survivor base in Qingyuan county. There were basically no prospects if they stayed in Always Bright Village. It would just be waiting to die. Yue Zhong always wanted to give Always Bright Village over to the survivors in the past, and he didn't think much

about it. But now Yue Zhong decided he can't rely on anyone else, only himself. Right now the urgent priority is to migrate from here and find a new base.

Da Gouzi extremely energetically proposed: "What about Big Cliff Village? The population of Big Cliff Village isn't large, and it has a small scale steel factory. There are several types of steel and heavy machinery factories. After recapturing that place and resuming production, we will have a large amount of steel products that we can use."

Da Gouzi was the largest supporter of Yue Zhong. Da Gouzi was more energetic than Yue Zhong himself. He wanted to use Yue Zhong to put on airs. After all if he didn't have Yue Zhong, the powerless Da Gouzi would become nothing. If Yue Zhong grew more powerful, his position would continue to climb up.

Since Yue Zhong seized the weapons arsenal, it would be no problem to launch a small scale war. It would be no problem to seize the small town of zombies.

Yue Zhong considered a moment, then directly refused this proposal: "No! Big Cliff Village is too close to Lei Jiang City. And it is hard to defend. Lei Jiang city has over 100,000 zombies. If one day they decide to move and attack in that direction, we wouldn't be able to stop them."

Wu Guang also proposed: "What about Shanglin county? That place has a large granary. If we can solve the mutant rat problem there, we can attain the granary. We wouldn't have to worry about food again."

Wu Guang also energetically expressed himself in order to enter Yue Zhong's powerful group.

"Shanglin County? Yue Zhong held his head with one hand and lightly tapped the table with another. Shaking his head he said: "No! If we capture Shanglin county, then Long Hai City base will attack us. In order to feed themselves, we could be extinguished."

Long Hai City survivor base had already become a threat in Yue Zhong's mind. He couldn't take Shanglin County due to Long Hai City survivor base. He was unable to predict Long Hai City's actions.

Other people proposed several counties and villages, but they were all vetoed by Yue Zhong.

“What about Stone Horse Village?” at this time, Guo Yu who always sat beside Yue Zhong without speaking, suddenly spoke.

Yue Zhong raised a brow and looked at Guo Yu.

Everyone in the meeting looked at Guo Yu.

The young and tender face of Guo Yu didn't show a trace of nervousness being looked at by so many people. She stared at Yue Zhong and slowly explained: “Stone Horse Village rests against Dragon Flower Mountain. It is also surrounded by two rivers, a natural defense. We only need to defend one side.”

Guo Yu methodically explained: “If zombies break through our defense, we can also retreat and hide in Dragon Flower Mountain. The two rivers will also have lots of food, resolving our food supply problem. The only thing to worry about is Dragon Flower Mountain could have mutant beasts. But if we resolve the mutant beast problem, then we will have a safe place to live. Also, Big Cliff Village is to the right of Stone Horse Village. If we have strength in the future, we can recapture Big Cliff village, attaining their heavy machinery and steel. Stone Horse village is our best choice from a safety point of view.

Guo Yu continuously sought information on the villages near Lei Jiang City and Long Hai City after Yue Zhong took over Always Bright Village, and she selected a place sufficient for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong asked Chi Yang: “Chi Yang, how is the terrain of Stone Horse Village?”

Chi Yang had been gathering supplies and rushing about all over

the place these past few days. He knew the surrounding terrain.

# Chapter 105: Exploring Stone Horse Village

---

Chi Yang looked at Yue Zhong. Shaking his head he said: “I only saw that place from far away.”

Chi Yang hadn't seen Stone Horse Village with his own eyes, and he refused to speak casually about it.

Yue Zhong looked at Guo Yu, and he said in a deep voice: “Guo Yu, go find someone who has been to Stone Horse Village. Tonight we will go to Stone Horse Village to check it out. If the terrain is as you say, then we will move our base there. You will also be promoted to an official member.”

“Yes! Captain Yue!” Guo Yu gave Yue Zhong a beautiful smile without equal. Becoming an official team member is something she attained by using her own strength and receiving Yue Zhong's recognition. By becoming an official team member, she finally felt like she had entered the inner circle of Yue Zhong's powerful group.

Yue Zhong sat in the Hummer, and Guo Yu was in the driver's seat, concentrating on driving.

Driving a vehicle isn't a hard thing. Only studying the traffic laws is a little troublesome. Guo Yu continuously works hard, and in her spare time she learned to drive.

“It is truly cute!” Sitting shotgun, Yue Zhong attentively looked upon Guo Yu in the driver's seat.

Guo Yu had long black hair like a waterfall. She had soft and creamy skin like cow's milk, making one feel as if a light pinch would make water come out. Her face was like carved from jade, her delicate beyond compare features carrying a trace of a young and tender aura. Accompanying her well developed fiery figure formed a charm that could cause a person to commit a crime.

Guo Yu driving added on an additional three times charm points.



Although Guo Yu was always at Yue Zhong's side, but Lu Wen always glared like a tiger watching it's prey. Therefore Yue Zhong never tasted this sweet Lolita. He has only held onto her and embraced her. As for Yue Zhong, that alone was an enormous joy.

Actually, before Z-Age, Guo Yu lived the life of a princess. Not only did she grow up with beautiful sex-appeal, but her father was also the mayor. She could have anything she wanted. If it were before Z-Age, an ordinary person like Yue Zhong wouldn't even be placed in her eye. If it was a different world, Yue Zhong and Guo Yu would be two parallel lines that never intersected.

The more Yue Zhong looked at Guo Yu, the cuter he thought she was. He carefully looked at Guo Yu for a moment, then he turned and looked outside. If he continued to look at her, he wouldn't be able to help but take advantage. She was just too cute.

On the road everything is quiet and still in the night of Z-Age. Yue Zhong's Dark Night, night vision skill lets him see far away.

Guo Yu stopped the vehicle at an intersection, turning her head to Yue Zhong she asked: "Stone Horse Village is 2 km from here. Do you want to drive in?"

Yue Zhong looked at the black painted intersection, and he said in a deep voice: "Stop the vehicle!"

The sound of vehicles can easily attract zombies and mutant beasts. They would be easily attacked if they continued driving their vehicles into the village. It would be hard for Yue Zhong to bring out his full power inside the vehicle.

Guo Yu nodded and stopped the vehicle near the intersection to Stone Horse Village.

Yue Zhong, Guo Yu, and Zhang Nan who was a refugee survivor from Stone Horse Village headed out.

In the dark of night, a black figure shot forth from the underbrush towards Yue Zhong like lightning.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed a cold light. Using his Imitation Tang Sword, he split the figure in two halves, spraying blood everywhere.

Yue Zhong took a look, that extremely fast figure was a rat the size of a cat.

At that time, an extremely fast black figure rushed towards the mutated rat on the ground.

Yue Zhong's brows wrinkled, and he kicked the black figure.

The black image was knocked back several paces with one kick.

Yue Zhong took a look, the owner of that black image had short black hair. It's body was short and small, and its face had exaggerated features, it's eyes were flashing hatred. It was a child holding a dagger.

The small child kicked up off the floor, and rushed towards Yue Zhong like a whirlwind holding the dagger.

"What fast speed!" Looking at the small child's speed, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with confusion. The small child's speed was astonishing. The child's speed could match an agility type S1 zombie.

Yue Zhong's Agility has gone through continuous upgrades, and he already exceeded an S1. Looking at the dark-haired small child, Yue Zhong's body slightly shifted, avoiding the small child's attack. Yue Zhong grabbed the small child by the back.

The enormous evolver power of Yue Zhong bubbled out, and pressed the small child who was like an a civit cat to the ground.

The black haired child was constantly pressured to the ground by Yue Zhong. He ruthlessly stabbed his dagger towards Yue Zhong's thigh.

Seeing the small child be so ruthless, Yue Zhong's brows wrinkled. He sat on the small child, and he grabbed both of the

child's hands. Holding on them, he completely suppressed the dark-haired child.

Guo Yu grabbed a piece of rope and tied up the small child extremely tightly.

The dark-haired child struggled for his life, but didn't say a single word.

Yue Zhong looked at the child whose eyes were written with anger. His brows wrinkled: "Mute?"

Yue Zhong looked far away, and he saw eight people rushing towards him like fire.

Seeing how exceptional the small child was, Yue Zhong's heart started pumping. He hid Guo Yu and Zhang nan in the dense underbrush to the side.

The eight people came over from the side.

Yue Zhong looked through the gaps in the underbrush. He saw the eight people were all men. They all looked malnourished, and their clothes were in tatters. But all of their eyes held a mysterious light.

A large-sized malnourished looking man's eyes flashed with madness: "This time, we will grab several easy marks and have a nice meal!"

A small and frail man licked his dry cracked lips and said: "What will we do if we run into that dark-haired little sheep again?"

A ruthless looking man said in a deep voice: "Kill him! He stopped us again this time. We will kill him together. If he doesn't die, we will die."

Another survivor lewdly continued: "This time if we to get several sheep, I want to have some fun! The last little sheep we ate, I got to play with her pretty rough. I heard in in the past she was an art student with a lot of ability."

Yue Zhong was hiding in the brush. Hearing the absolutely horrifying words of the eight men, Yue Zhong's mind flashed with murderous thoughts.

Yue Zhong had seen several types of cruelty after Z-Age, but eating people. This type of thing greatly exceeded his psychological bottom line.

# Chapter 106: Domestic Animal

---

The dark-haired child under Yue Zhong struggled after hearing the words of the eight mad survivors. But no matter how hard he struggled, he couldn't shake of Yue Zhong.

As soon as she heard the insane words of the eight men, Guo Yu's eyes flashed with fear, and she tightly grabbed onto Yue Zhong's arm. She already knew the cruelty and madness in men's hearts after Z-Age, especially since she had been captured in Always Bright Village. But eating people, this type of madness greatly exceeded her psychological limit. Guo Yu never thought she and Yue Zhong would run into this type of insane survivors, and her heart began to shiver with fear.

"Follow!" Yue Zhong said to Guo Yu in a low voice, after waiting until those eight insane survivors left.

Yue Zhong carried the dark-haired child, completely restricting him he said: "Calm down. We aren't their partners."

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, the fury in the small child's eyes settled down a little bit, and he no longer struggled.

"Right here!" The male survivor pointed at a small mountain cave and ferociously smiled.

Hearing footsteps, a small nine year old girl poked her head out of the cave and took a look. Her face suddenly changed. Like a bird startled by the mere twang of a bow, she retreated back in to the cave.

The eyes of them men flashed with a color of ferociousness upon seeing the nine year old girl. Licking their lips, one strangely smiled: "It's a girl! This time we can have a little pleasure!"

The eight men rushed into the mountain cave. They grabbed the young girl and two other small boys, and brought them out.

The three children sat shivering on the ground. One of the male

survivor's eyes flashed with a maddening light and said: "Three fat little sheep. There's also a girl. This time we can have a little fun!"

Yue Zhong quietly looked at the eight men. The small child at his side flashed with dread, ready at any moment to rush towards the three children.

But the young child couldn't budge under the pressure of Yue Zhong.

The dark-haired child stared, eyes filling with rage at Yue Zhong. Yet Yue Zhong didn't have any movement.

The survivor who had the stature of a leader with a ruthless look said in a commanding voice: "We are leaving! There will be trouble if the dark-haired sheep returns.

The remaining survivors nodded. They detained the three crying children and took them in the direction of Stone Horse Village.

Yue Zhong quietly snuck behind the eight survivors, following them along the way.

The eight men arrived at a tent on the outskirts of Stone Horse Village. There was a large pot set up outside the tent. Some bones were also discarded next to the tent. The absolutely horrifying thing is that among those bones were three human skulls.

A survivor looked at the small girl, and his eyes flashed with a lewd light. He took off his pants in front of everyone: "Fuck! Big brother! Hurry up! let everyone first have a little fun!"

"Good!" The leading ruthless survivor's eyes flashed with lewdness. His hand extended towards the young girl to grab her.

Looking at the ferocious survivor, the little girl's eyes flashed with dread and hopelessness, and she struggled to retreat away.

The ruthless looking survivor creepily smiled. The struggling of the little girl gave him even more pleasure. He extended a hand and grabbed onto the little girl's shoulder.

As soon as the man's hand touched the girl's shoulder, a gunshot sounded off. A bullet easily passed through that man's skull.

The ruthless leader immediately fell powerless to the ground.

“Gunshot!!”

“We have enemies!!”

The seven leftover survivors immediately looked astonished, one by one seeking cover.

Yue Zhong's face became ice cold. He strode out of the underbrush, type 79 assault rifle in hand, and he spread fire at the seven mad survivors.

After emptying the clip, three of the men were filled with bloody holes. The remaining four survivors fled into the darkness of night.

A cold light flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes. He swapped the clip and commanded to White Bones at the same time: “Kill them!”

The ever-present White Bones shot like an arrow, rushing towards the remaining four men.

Yue Zhong could still see objects for thousand meters in the darkness of night. He held the gun and took large strides, spreading fire. Another two men were shot down by his gunfire.

White Bones zoomed after the few remaining men at the speed of three times a normal person. Each step cut down the distance between the two by a huge amount. After a few steps, he appeared among a survivor. Waving his axe, he brought a whirlwind that sent his head flying, blood splattering everywhere.

The remaining man's face had great changes seeing the cruel end of his partners. He hated himself for not being faster.

White Bone's image flashed. It rushed behind the man in a few steps. The axe waved, sending the last man's head flying.

“Don't kill me!!.....Don't kill me!!” Yue Zhong looked at the men

who had been shot to the ground. A Few of them still hadn't died yet. They struggled toward Yue Zhong, begging.

“Go die!” Yue Zhong's eyes flashed ice cold as he walked before the remaining survivors. He placed a bullet in each of their heads.

Yue Zhong was extremely lacking in manpower, but he didn't need these kinds of lowlifes who had already forfeited their humanity.

Finishing off the wicked men, Yue Zhong walked over to the three small children.

The three children looked at Yue Zhong, and their eyes revealed a trace of fear. They couldn't help but huddle up and retreat back several steps. The survivor's who had lost their humanity had cast a psychological shadow on them. Even though Yue Zhong saved them, they still feared Yue Zhong.

Looking at the three children, Yue Zhong's brows wrinkled. He grabbed three pieces of chocolate from his pocket and tossed it to them. Yue simply said: “Eat! I'm not a bad person. Eat up and follow me.”

Seeing the three pieces of chocolate on the ground, their eyes released a light. They quickly snatched the chocolate, then they peeled the wrapper and began eating.

The small girl mustered up some courage. Holding on the the remaining half of her chocolate, she walked over to Yue Zhong and asked: “Uncle! Can you release Yao Yao?”

“Yao Yao? She is a girl? Yue Zhong turned his head and looked at the child with short dark hair. He originally believed this fierce little monster was a boy. He never thought this fierce little monster who had the speed of an S1 is a girl.



# Chapter 107: Mutated Monkey

---

Yao Yao looked at Yue Zhong, who was looking at her, and she fiercely stared back at him.

Yue Zhong slightly smiled. He used the Imitation Tang Sword and cut the ropes binding her, restoring her freedom.

As soon as she gained freedom, Yao Yao immediately walked over to Yue Zhong without fear and extended a hand. Using pure and sweet lolita voice she said to Yue Zhong: “Give me back my dagger!”

Yue Zhong smiled and tossed the dagger back to Yao Yao: “As long as you agree, from today on you all are my people.”

Yao Yao took back the dagger. While playing with the dagger, she couldn't help but look at the three children with chocolate in their hands. Although she is a lone wolf, she couldn't help but be attracted by the food in her hungered state. It is human instinct.

Yao Yao couldn't hide her state from Yue Zhong. Smiling, he grabbed another piece of chocolate from his pocket and gave it to Yao Yao.

Yao Yao grabbed the chocolate from Yue Zhong and tore open the wrapper, and she nibbled small bites out of it.

Yue Zhong saw Yao Yao finish the chocolate and finally asked her: “How is your speed so fast? Did you get a skill book?”

Yao Yao thought a moment, looking at Yue Zhong, she extended a little hand: “Skill book? I don't know what that is? Eat!”

Yue Zhong once pulled out a compressed biscuit from a bag and gave it to Yao Yao. He continued to ask: “Then how is your speed so fast? Before Z-Age, your speed couldn't be as fast as it is now.”

Yao Yao thought a moment: “After Z-Age, I drank some life water. After one day and one night, I changed like this.

Yue Zhong looked at Yao Yao and quietly thought in his mind: “Is it because she adapted to the virus, and she naturally produced an evolution? There has never been a person who underwent mutation from the God and Devil World system...”

Yue Zhong walked over to the camp of the eight men and entered their tent. He immediately smelled something that made him want to vomit. He resisted the urge and looked inside.

Everywhere in the camp were fumes that made one one to vomit, and there was a fishy smell. Yue Zhong only took a look and retreated back out. He would throw up if he stayed in there a second longer.

Yue Zhong immediately used devil flame and set the camp on fire. All of the sins were burned clean by the flames.

After burning down the camp, Yue Zhong walked over to Yao Yao and asked: “Do you know what the situation is inside Stone Horse Village?”

Yao Yao used her pure and sweet lolita voice and said without any hesitation: “I know!”

Yue Zhong lead the four children, Guo Yu, and Zhang Nan continuing on towards Stone Horse Village.

In the black of night, one couldn't see their hand before their face. Apart from the daring little lolita Yao Yao, the others all followed closely behind Yue Zhong.

Under the screen of darkness, two mutated cats the size of lions rushed like a shot of electricity towards Yue Zhong's group.

White Bones acted. He shot forward like an arrow. His axe flurried like thunder, chopping at the mutated cat's body. A horizontal slash cut the mutated beast into two halves, splashing blood everywhere.

Yue Zhong used his Imitation Tang Sword and casually slashed. Carrying a burst of cold light he cut the airborne cat into two

halves.

Seeing the two mutated cats so easily cut in two by Yue Zhong, Yao Yao's eyes flashed a strange light. She finally realized just now, Yue Zhong hadn't even used his full power yet when fighting.

As soon as the mutated cats died, an experience orb sunk into Yue Zhong's body, and another experience orb rushed into White Bone's body. They dropped one skill book and twenty life coins each.

"Level 2 Skill book: High Speed Movement: Using this skill requires five stamina. After using the skill, one will receive 15 agility for 30 seconds."

Yue Zhong took the skill book and life coins, and he placed them into his backpack. Then he used the Imitation Tang Sword to open up their skulls and search around, but he didn't find a blood-red bead like the one he found in the mutated river snake.

After getting up, Yue Zhong continued on his way.

Using Zhang Nan's knowledge of the terrain, Yue Zhong arrived at a small hill that overlooked Stone Horse Village.

Just like Guo Yu Described, Stone Horse Village was surrounded by two rivers. One side rested against the mountain, and there was only one path in and out. It was indeed a place very suited to be a base.

Furthermore, in front of Stone Horse Village was Big Cliff Village. If they could capture Stone Horse Village, they could use it at a stagepoint to capture Big Cliff Village. Big Cliff Village had a steel yard and steel production factory. After capturing this place they could obtain various types of steel products. They could even make cold weapons.

"Let's go!" Carefully observing a moment, Yue Zhong lead them back toward the path they came from.

After walking fifty meters, Yue Zhong suddenly felt danger. He

stopped. He pointed at Guo Yu and commanded to White Bones: “White Bones! Your combat priority is to protect this woman.”

What Bones wasn't very bright. If he said protect Guo Yu, White Bones wouldn't know who that is.

Guo Yu became frightened, and she drew a little closer to Yue Zhong.

As soon as Yue Zhong gave White Bones the command, he immediately used his type 79 assault rifle and shot madly at a tree.

After emptying the clip, A 1.5m tall mutated monkey fell from the tree. It was filled with holes, and five of the bullets had passed through the head.

Yue Zhong tossed the type 79 assault rifle into the brush. His hand waved, and a new type 79 assault rifle appeared in his hand. He lifted the gun and continuously fired into the trees like a madman.

Among the suppressive fire of Yue Zhong, A black figure bravely jumped down from the tree, and it rushed towards Yue Zhong's group.

“Level 17 monster: Mutated Monkey! These monkeys have an agility type body, sharp claws, and sharp teeth. The most troublesome part is they are grouped creatures.”

Yue Zhong could easily see using his passive ability Night Vision. In the dark of night there were over a dozen mutated creatures rushing out. He emptied a clip and dropped another mutated monkey. Those mutated beasts immediately rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong launched shadow step in the blink of an eye. In a wink, he slashed three times, and three sword slashes shone. Three of the mutated monkeys were chopped in half while soaring through the air, spraying blood everywhere.

In the time that Yue Zhong slashed the three monkeys, the other

monkeys already broke his defensive perimeter. They headed towards the four children, Zhang Nan, and Guo Yu.

Zhang Nan saw the mutated monkey rushing at him, and his face changed. Under the fear, he turned and ran.

# Chapter 108: Slaughtering Monkey Group

---

Two mutated monkeys ran before Zhang Nan extremely quickly. They used their claws with mutated strength to easily pierce and rip through his body. Zhang Nan split open in a mangled mess, blood and intestines flowed out from his body.

Zhang Nan didn't even have enough time to yell before a mutated monkey jumped on his shoulders and twisted his head off. With a snapping sound he turned into a corpse on the ground.

On the other side, seven mutated monkeys were rushing towards Guo Yu and Yao Yao.

White Bones stood before Guo Yu, waiving his large axe like a whirlwind. Two of the monkeys that came too close were split into two halves, and their blood flew everywhere.

Two monkeys took advantage of White Bone's attack range, and they rushed from the flanks at Guo Yu, extending their claws towards her small delicate face.

White Bones slashed with his axe, and he split the head of the monkey on the right into two halves. Red blood and brains sprinkled on the ground.

Guo Yu saw the mutated monkey on her left rush forth. Her eyes flashed with fear, and she couldn't help but retreat several steps.

A sharp bone spike shot out from the waist of White Bones when it saw the monkey wanted to grab Guo Yu. It directly pierced through the monkey, and it continued to extend pushing it back four meters.

White bones took advantage of the opportunity. He waved his axe again and split another rushing monkey in two.

Of the remaining two monkeys, one rushed towards Yao Yao.

Yao Yao's agility was extremely high. Her image flashed. Her

dagger and the mutated monkey became entangled together.

Another extremely mean and ferocious monkey rushed towards the three other small children. Its claw slashed out and cut down a small boy's head.

Seeing that scene, Yao Yao's eyes filled with rage. But she was forced to engage with the other monkey, so she could not protect her friends.

After killing the small boy, the mutated monkey's image flashed. It extended its hand out to the other small girl aiming to slash her throat.

As the monkey was just about to slash the little girl's throat, a gunshot sounded. The skull of the mutated monkey immediately exploded open.

Not far away, Yue Zhong was using his Imitation Tang Sword to slash away at mutated monkeys while paying attention to the surroundings. He was just a step too late when he noticed the mutated monkey break through White Bone's defensive line.

In the moment that Yue Zhong fired a shot, two mutated monkeys ruthlessly took advantage and clawed Yue Zhong's body.

The two mutated monkey's claws only formed two long white scrapes due to the mutated river snake armor's protection. They were unable to penetrate the mutated river snake's scale armor.

But like this, the attack of the two monkeys still shook Yue Zhong's body causing endless pain. Yue Zhong used his sword and slashed off the head of a monkey, and then he used his foot to kick the other monkey, knocking it back seven meters.

Yue Zhong didn't have time to gasp for air. Another four monkeys were rushing towards him.

Yue Zhong's mind was steady. He slightly shifted to the side dodging the attacks of two mutated monkeys. Using a sword, he decapitated a mutated monkey, and then he used his Stinger to fire

at the heads of two monkeys who were within hand's reach.

Following the sound of two gunshots, the skulls of those two monkeys exploded open.

Still without time to gasp for air, another four monkeys rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong focused, not looking at all to the sides. He could only concentrate on the current battle.

White Yue Zhong's spirit concentrated, his speed was brought to its highest level. His image flashed like a ghost among the crowds of monkeys. Sword slashes flashed, and it looked like a field of blood flowers began to bloom. Each Monkey's body was spurting out large amounts of blood.

On the other side, White Bones was waiving his axe and beheading monkeys. His body often shot out sharp bone spikes which pierced through the monkeys. It was like a piece of reef firmly protecting Guo Yu. Any monkey that dared approach the reef was decapitated.

Yao Yao and the other two children also hid behind White Bones at the first moment they could, receiving his protection.

White Bone's guarded everywhere in front of Guo Yu, receiving the attacks of several mutated monkeys. But White Bones had gone through many stages of strengthening his body, and their attacks were only able to leave traces of white scratches. They were completely unable to snap his bones.

The fierce combat continued for a full 30 minutes. Yue Zhong and White Bones killed 23 monkeys combined. There were corpses scattered all around the small forest, causing an extreme stench.

The remaining five monkeys felt they couldn't overcome these two enemies, and they immediately turned tail and ran.

Mutated beasts and zombies aren't the same. They are extremely fierce and violent, and their brutality far exceeds ordinary beasts.



But, they also have intelligence. When they meet people who they cannot compare to, they produce fear, and they choose to run.

If it were an S1 or L1 type zombie they would fight to the death, refusing to flee.

Yue Zhong saw the five mutated monkeys flee, and he relaxed a breath. If another wave of mutated monkeys came, he could only carry Guo Yu and frantically flee.

“Congratulations, you leveled up to 23. You’ve attained two stat points.”

Yue Zhong killed fifteen monkeys on his own. He finally leveled up to 23 with the large amount of experience orbs.

As soon as the five monkeys went back up into the trees, a huge explosion landed on the heads of one of the monkeys. The force of the explosion sent the monkey’s head flying off of it’s body.

The remaining four monkeys were startled, and they fled in all directions.

A leaf floated down from the tree, then a massive black figure jumped down.

“Careful! All of you run away!!” His Sense Danger skill continuously reminded him of this enemy’s terror.

The massive black figure standing before Yue Zhong was over 2.2 meters tall. Its whole body was covered in black needle-like hair, and its eyes held a fierce red light. The black ape’s hands were 20cm long with sword-like claws.

“Level 33 mutated fierce ape: It possesses monstrous superhuman strength and agility skill. A mutated beast with fierce sharp claws.”

Yue Zhong could feel the dreadful murderous intent and unmatched power flow out from the mutated beast’s body as he gazed upon it, The mutated beast coldly looked down upon Yue Zhong’s group as if looking down upon a colony of ants.

Yue Zhong looked at the mutated fierce ape. He raised the Stinger at it and fired two shots.

As Yue Zhong was raising the Stinger, the mutated beast kicked its feet a little, and moved horizontally like a cannon shot. The two Stinger bullets fiercely hit the tree behind its body, exploding it apart.

# Chapter 109: Explosive Killing Mutated Fierce Ape

---

It was like the mutated fierce ape blasted when it moved. It was just a trace slower than the speed type S2 zombie. It avoided Yue Zhong's shot, and it appeared before Yue Zhong like the wind carrying a biting cold fishy smell. The fierce ape ruthlessly clawed, booming towards Yue Zhong's body.

Yue Zhong raised his Imitation Tang Sword to block the path of the fierce ape's fist.

The fierce ape's eyes flashed blood red. Its fist didn't slow, and the ape tightened up its muscles, booming onto Yue Zhong's sword.

The sword and fist clashed. Yue Zhong felt an enormous power that flooded without end from the sword. The Imitation Tang Sword in his right hand was shaken and sent flying into a faraway tree by the fist of the fierce ape.

"So extreme!" At the first moment Yue Zhong activated the skill Shadow Step, and his image suddenly retreated. The numb right hand flipped over, and another Imitation Tang Sword appeared in his hand.

White Bones immediately saw the situation while protecting Guo Yu, and it shot out two extremely sharp bone spikes towards the mutated fierce ape.

The fierce ape used its large hand to grab onto a bone spike shot out from White Bones. Then it put forth its strength to ruthlessly fling White Bones into a large tree.

Yue Zhong's speed was just about as fast as the fierce ape after he started the Shadow Step skill. He took advantage of the fierce ape dealing with White Bones, and he shot forward like an arrow. A sword followed by a cold howl chopped into the waist of the fierce

ape.

The sharp Imitation Tang Sword under the excessive power from Yue Zhong's strengthening chopped open the mutated fierce ape's flesh, tearing a shallow wound.

After the ape was wounded it became even more frantic. Its whole body flexed on the wound, unexpectedly locking Yue Zhong's Imitation Tang Sword in place. Then it took advantage of the opportunity and sent a fist at Yue Zhong.

"Truly a monster!!" Yue Zhong released the sword and suddenly withdrew. He used his left hand and aimed the Stinger up to the mutated beast.

As soon as Yue Zhong aimed the stinger at the mutated fierce ape, the extremely murderous beast felt a sense of intense danger coming. It kicked and moved to the side several meters. Its instincts could feel Yue Zhong's stinger had enough terrifying power to kill it.

"What a cunning animal!" Yue Zhong's brows wrinkled. His right hand flitted about and a type 79 assault rifle appeared. He directly aimed at the mutated fierce ape with the type 79 assault rifle and laid down fire like a madman.

The beast's body was hit by several bullets at such a short distance under concentrated fire. But the bullets were unexpectedly unable to pierce into the body. They only broke into the skin. The fierce ape's muscled could be compared to steel when it flexed its muscles. Were it not for this, Yue Zhong's sword attack just now would have chopped its waist.

The mutated fierce ape became even more frantic after having its skin pierced by the bullets. Its eyes flashed a fierce light, and it rushed through the bullets like a cannon towards Yue Zhong. After a few steps it appeared before Yue Zhong, and it clawed out to grab him.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed a cold light. He extended out a finger. He lightly bent it and aimed the fireball ring right at the rushing mutated fierce ape.

A fireball shot out from the ring towards the mutated fierce ape when it was only two meters away.

The beast wasn't prepared for Yue Zhong's fire ball ring. It could only raise a claw to block in front of its body.

The mutated beast's hand exploded and broke when the tyrannical fireball boomed onto its fist.

White Bone's took advantage of the opportunity and ruthlessly shot out a bone spike into the mutated fierce ape's knee. The beast lost its balance and collapsed to one side.

Seizing the moment, Yue Zhong used his left hand and aimed the Stinger at the beast's body, firing off three shots.

The fierce ape's fighting skill was truly extraordinary. As soon as it stumbled, it rolled to the side, avoiding certain death. Only one Stinger bullet hit near its right chest area making a fist-sized hole

After the ape rolled to the ground, it climbed up and jumped to the side towards a large tree. He already felt the threat of death which gave birth to the idea of fear.

White Bones extended both hands and shot out bone spike after bone spike at the tree the ape escaped to, forming a White Bone's prison.

The mutated fierce ape wildly waved its claws, cutting open the White Bones prison like tofu.

Yue Zhong took advantage of the fierce ape being tied up with White Bones, and he advanced forward while reloading the Stinger. He raised up the stinger and the ape and continuously bombarded from close range.

Each bullet left a fist sized bloody-hole in the ape's body. The six

bullets all landed into the fierce ape, and it powerlessly fell to the ground, completely losing its life.

An experience orb floated out and landed on Yue Zhong.

“Congratulations, you have leveled up to 24.....”

“Congratulations, you have leveled up to 25.....”

Yue Zhong heard two sweet sounding level up noises in his inner conscious as soon as the experience orb entered his body.

“Add everything to stamina!”

Yue Zhong immediately chose.

A light within his body shattered, and it re-nourished his body, making it even more tyrannical.

Yue Zhong quickly took all the dropped skill books and white boxes from the mutated monkeys and fierce ape into his bag. Then he used an Imitation Tang Sword to break open the fierce ape’s skull. Inside he found the thing he wanted to find.

“Found one!” Yue Zhong searched around within the brain of that fierce ape and found a small white bead. He was extremely happy, and he quickly took the white bead and put it inside his storage ring.

Just when Yue Zhong thought to leave, he looked at the two 20cm long paws of the mutated fierce ape. He thought for a moment, and then Yue took the two paws and placed them into his storage ring.

“Quick let’s go!” Yue Zhong finally said to Guo Yu and the other three in a low voice after finishing everything.

The succession of using two shadow step skills in a row, encountering the group of monkeys, and fighting the fierce ape caused Yue Zhong’s stamina to fall to an extremely dangerous level. Yue Zhong would be in danger if he encountered another fierce ape or group of monsters. But, delaying for treasure is a

necessity.

Guo Yu and the others closely followed behind Yue Zhong.

Yao Yao looked at the monkey corpses surrounding the forest and then looked at Yue Zhong. Her eyes flashed a strange light, and she followed behind Yue Zhong.

Along the road they didn't encounter another mutated beast. Yue Zhong's group smoothly returned to the vehicle. Guo Yu started the car and took them back towards Always Bright Village.

# Chapter 110: Attack Stone Horse Village

---

Yue Zhong carefully inspected the equipment dropped by the fierce ape inside the car.

The mutated monkey group and the mutated fierce ape dropped four skill books and eight white treasure boxes all together.

Among the skill books there was a Rank 1 fireball book, a Rank 1 Ice Cone technique book, a Rank 2 High Speed Movement book, and a Rank 3 Enormous Power Solidification book.

“Rank 3 skill: Enormous Power Solidification. This is a passive skill. After studying, you will permanently receive an 8 point increase to Power.”

Yue Zhong immediately learned the Enormous Power Solidification skill book. A flash of light, a new rune formed in his sea of knowledge. As soon as the rune formed, he felt his power increase several points.

In the eight white boxes, he opened a set of strength Clothes, a pair of strength shoes, power gloves, and two Imitation Tang Swords. The rest of the three boxes were all empty.

Yue Zhong directly gave the rank 1 fireball and rank 2 high speed movement skill books over to Guo Yu saying: “Little Yu! This is yours!”

Guo Yu’s big beautiful eyes flashed with joy and excitement as soon as she received the two skill books. She revealed a sweet smile to Yue Zhong saying: “Thank you master!”

Being the person at Yue Zhong’s side, Guo Yu naturally knew the preciousness of a skill book. A skill book had the ability to make one far exceed ordinary evolvers. Her receiving this skill book signifies her receiving Yue Zhong’s trust, becoming one of his people.

“Such a cute little fox.” Yue Zhong’s heart couldn’t help but



slightly sway looking at Guo Yu's cute lolita smile. His vision moved away from Guo Yu's body. If he kept staring at the beautiful Guo Yu, he couldn't guarantee he wouldn't push himself onto this lolita. No matter the time and place, this wouldn't be the least bit decent.

“Hehe, looks like my charm really hasn't gone down.” Guo Yu looked at Yue Zhong who was a little displaced. She thought a moment and revealed a crafty smile, feeling good.

Yue Zhong looked at the little Yao Yao covered in dirt in the rearview mirror. He thought a moment and gave her the other High Speed Movement skill book saying: “This is a High Speed Movement book, can you learn it?”

Yao Yao took the High Speed Skill book tossed to her by Yue Zhong and turned it over left and right. Then she tried to open it to look at the pages, but it wouldn't open. Her brows wrinkled, she asked Yue Zhong using her sweet lolita voice: “How do I open the book?”

Yue Zhong directly said: “Don't open it! You only need to say in your mind I want to study this book. Then you will naturally learn it.”

Yao Yao shut her eyes. A brilliant light flashed, and the skill book in her hands disappeared.

Yue Zhong looked at Yao Yao and curiously asked: “Yao Yao, what level are you in God and Devil World?”

Yay Yao opened her eyes and grabbed the Chocolate Yue Zhong had given her. Eating and speaking at the same time she said: “Level 1!”

Yue Zhong continued to ask: “What level is your agility?”

“20!”

Yue Zhong was a little startled hearing this number. His agility was half of Yao Yao when he was level one in the God and Devil

World system. Her maturity is much larger than Yue Zhong's at that time.

Returning back to Always Bright Village, Yue Zhong took a bath and laid down on the bed. Lu Wen slept on his left hand side, and Guo Yu slept on his left. They traveled through the night to return to Always Bright village, so Guo Yu and Lu Wen both fell asleep as soon as they hit the pillow.

After the two lolitas fell asleep, Yue Zhong finally grabbed the white bead from the mutated fierce ape and swallowed it.

As soon as the white bead entered Yue Zhong's stomach, a heat instantly spread throughout Yue Zhong's body, continuously strengthening him.

“Congratulations, you attained 8 stamina.”

A pleasing announcement sounded in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge after the flowing heat disappeared.

“Awesome!” Yue Zhong heard the announcement sound, and the corners of his mouth slightly lifted revealing a satisfied smile. Finally he went to sleep.

The next day, Chi Yang stayed behind. Yue Zhong brought a large group of people and an IFV towards Stone Horse Village to clear it out.

Although Stone Horse Village has mutated beasts living there, as soon as they kill the beasts, that piece of land will be the best fit for Yue Zhong's group to establish a base.

Furthermore, mutated beasts are a resource. Evolvers who can kill them are able to continually become stronger.

A vast motorcade of Hummers, Jeeps, Dong Feng trucks, and an IFV quickly arrived at Stone Horse Village.

The rumbling sounds of all the vehicles attracted the zombies of Stone Horse Village.

A large amount of zombies attracted by the sound started swaying out of the village.

Wang Shuang's group, Xiao Ming's group, Liu Yan's group, Da Gouzi's group, and Yue Zhong's group all quickly got out of their vehicles. All of the personnel totaled up to eighty men.

Wang Shuang, Xiao Ming, Liu Yan, and Da Gouzi's groups were all companies of twelve men. Yue Zhong's group originally had twenty-four people, but he absorbed the six people from Ji Qingwu's group after she left. There were eighty people when adding on Lu Wen and Guo Yu.

Yue Zhong coldly looked around at all the combat personnel and said: "Each unit prepare for battle. Wait until the zombies reach within one hundred meters. Open fire after receiving my command! The family members of the men who die will be taken care of. They will receive a preliminary team member salary and treatment. Anyone who retreats without the command will be killed on the spot. Their dependents will have their status and benefits cancelled. Is that clear?"

"Clear!" Their hearts shivered with fear after being looked upon by Yue Zhong, and they loudly replied.

"Go prepare!" Yue Zhong commanded. The combat personnel were all brought under the command of their respective units and taken to a concealed location.

After all the combat personnel were in place, Yue Zhong commanded to White Bones who was wrapped in bloody cloth: "Enter the Village, and extract the zombies for us!"

The eyes of White Bones flashed with a spirit flame, and it quickly rushed into the village.

The zombies originally disturbed by the noise of the motorcade immediately swayed out of the village towards white bones as soon as they smelled the bloody human scent.

White Bones rushed into the village, and he waived his axe beheading six zombies. The packed group of zombies followed and circled around White Bones.

# Chapter 111: Fierce Battle

---

Under the temptation of White Bones, the dense pack of zombies were seduced out of the Village.

The amount of zombies were astonishing. Their bodies were rotten, and they wore almost completely tattered and moldy clothing. They lurched around, and some even had maggots crawling around on their bodies.

This astonishingly large amount of zombies gave people a heavy oppressive feeling. An ordinary person facing one or two zombies would not feel anything, but after they formed into a large group, it gave people a feeling of helplessness.

Seeing the zombie crowd extracted by White Bones, everyone apart from Yue Zhong was in a cold sweat. They had encountered small groups of a dozen or so zombies before, but this was the first time they were facing over a thousand zombies. Their fighting force was barely eighty men, furthermore the bullets of several people combined didn't number more than a thousand.

Yue Zhong calmly observed the zombies. Among the zombie group there was one demon figure like an S2 closely pursuing White Bones, and it was quickly closing the distance.

In addition to this, there were thirteen S1 zombies chasing after White Bones.

Among those ordinary zombies, dozen or more S1 zombies were overthrowing the ordinary zombies at the front, trampling those ordinary zombies and going forward.

Without even firing a shot, dozens of zombies had become stepping stones.

Yue Zhong observed the zombie operation from far away and slightly relaxed a breath: "Not bad, there aren't any intelligent zombies commanding."

Having a commander and not having one were two entirely different scenarios. If there was a zombie that could command the others, then mankind would be in danger. After all, the amount of zombies is ten times the amount of humans, and furthermore, they weren't afraid to die. These types of soldiers were the most terrifying.

“Don't open fire without my command!” Yue Zhong commanded. He rushed out from his concealed position towards the S2.

The S2 was like a phantom. Yue Zhong's unit would suffer heavy losses if it entered their position.

Yue Zhong rushed before the S2 with several lightning movements.

The S2's image flashed, abandoning White Bones, it rushed towards Yue Zhong like a ghost.

White Bones shot out countless thin and long sharp bone spikes from his body at nearly the same time. It firmly pierced through the S2 in several places holding it airborne.

Yue Zhong slashed with the Imitation Tang Sword and cut off the head off the S2. A large experience orb sunk into his body.

“Congratulations, You have leveled up to 26 and received two stat points.”

A pleasing announcement appeared in Yue Zhong's ears after killing the S2.

Yue Zhong quickly put the skill book, green treasure box, and two hundred life coins dropped by the zombie into his bag. Then he welcomed the thirteen S1 zombies with White Bones.

The S type zombies were the most problematic for ordinary people. If he didn't take them out, it would create tremendous psychological pressure towards the combat units in a short time.

Yue Zhong's group hadn't even been formed for a month. Their mentality was far away from veteran soldiers. There would soon be deserters even under harsh military law if morale wasn't raised.

The thirteen S1s didn't have the slightest bit of hesitation towards the power gap between them and Yue Zhong and White Bones, and they continued rushing forward.

Yue Zhong dashed into the middle of the thirteen S1 zombies. Slashing his Imitation Tang Sword, a sword flash appeared, and he easily took the head of a S1. White Bones stood at Yue Zhong's side and continuously slaughtered any S1 who tried to approach Yue Zhong. The thirteen S1 zombies were all wiped out within ten seconds under the coordination of the two. Immediately after killing the S type zombies, they ran back to their positions. He and White Bones couldn't attain victory facing this large group of zombies alone.

The morale soared after seeing Yue Zhong and White Bones take out the S1 and S2 zombies, and then safely return to the formation. The leader advancing first in front of the crowd could inflame the subordinate's morale. Of course the group would immediately fall apart if Yue Zhong was killed.

After returning to the group, Yue Zhong silently stared at the far away slow moving zombies.

The five combat units gazed upon the zombies from far away, hands tightly holding their guns. They didn't dare make any strange movement. Every person was nervously looking at the zombies slowly lurching forward.

Upon seeing the zombie group enter within 100 meters, Yue Zhong commanded in a deep voice: "Open fire!"

Yue Zhong knew that letting the zombies come a little closer would be better, but the bodies of the men beside Yue Zhong were all slightly shivering. He was afraid they couldn't handle the pressure if those zombies came any closer.

“Fire!!”

Hearing Yue Zhong’s words, Liu Yan and the other leaders all roared. The roar let off all of the fear in their hearts.

In the blink of an eye, heavy firepower was released. Countless bullets were shot out towards those zombies.

The zombies headed towards Yue Zhong’s group were hit with all kinds of light and heavy firepower. It was like they were knocked down one after another by an invisible wall. Especially those hit by the terrifyingly powerful heavy machine gun bullets. Some of the zombies were hit at the waist and split in half. Some of the heavy machine gun bullets even pierced through four of five zombies.

Yue Zhong’s brows wrinkled, and he commanded: “Cease Fire!!!”

This is the first time Liu Yan and the others had encountered such a large zombie group. They nervously emptied their clips without any aim. But the Zombies were extremely condensed and packed on the highway. As long as one fired in that direction, they couldn’t go wrong. They would always be able to hit an enemy.

Liu Yan and the other finally ceased fire under the command of Yue Zhong, furthermore, they had the rare opportunity to reload ammunition.

In less than a minute, over a thousand bullets had been fired, and Yue Zhong felt a little regret.

Yue Zhong’s group had just ceased fire, and the zombies that had been hit started to crawl back up. Several had bullet holes all over their bodies, yet they still advanced towards Yue Zhong’s group.

They weren’t the same as humans. Only if there was a headshot or the spine was broken would the zombies stop advancing.

“Aim and shoot! Try your best to hit the head!” Yue Zhong commanded and aimed his type 81 rifle at the same time, shooting a zombie.



A faraway zombie's head immediately revealed a bloody hole, and it collapsed to the ground.

Yue Zhong didn't stop training for a single day after attaining the Firearms Control skill. Within a hundred meters, he was seventy percent sure he could hit the target.

Hearing Yue Zhong's command, five heavy machine guns ceased fire. The remaining personnel all used rifles to aim and fire towards the zombies.

The zombies advanced much faster after switching to aiming and shooting. After all, the large majority of personnel didn't have much shooting experience. But several soldiers among Yue Zhong's group exhibited a clear deep shooting skill, clearly aiming and hitting one zombie head after another.

# Chapter 112: Close Combat Unit

---

Seeing the zombies creep closer and closer, a team member's eyes filled with fear. After recklessly emptying his clip, he let out a large scream and turned to flee.

The zombies were only fifty meters from Yue Zhong's group. Several of the team members hearts were filled with fear of the zombies. It was important to know, one wound from a zombie could cause someone to be infected.

Yue Zhong aimed his rifle at the fleeing team member. A bullet pierced through his head and made him powerlessly fall to the ground.

Yue Zhong looked around and let out a mean and ferocious yell: "Whoever dares turn tail, will be immediately shot!"

Seeing the team member be shot by Yue Zhong, the originally unstable morale settled down.

Liu Yan turned to his men with an ashen face and roared: "Don't worry about Yue Zhong's group, if you turn tail and flee, this Boss will be the first to slaughter you!"

The team member who fled just now was one of Liu Yan's subordinates. That member made Liu Yan lose a lot of face.

Yue Zhong saw the distance between them and the zombie had lowered, and he deeply yelled: "Completely open fire!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's command, the sweaty-handed team members finally laid down fire like madmen at the zombies.

Layer after layers of zombies were torn apart by the bullet rain. Especially the heavy machine gun bullets. They only needed to hit a body to split it in two, rendering it unable to move.

A large layer of the zombie group collapsed under the second round of bullet rain.

Yue Zhong commanded: “Cease fire!”

This time everyone ceased fire.

After the bullet rain stopped, the zombies who weren't killed crawled up once again from the ground. But a large amount were all hit by heavy machine gun fire after going through a couple rounds of bullet rain. Only a couple dozen scattered zombies crawled back up. There were still nearly a hundred zombies cut off at the waist that were crawling towards Yue Zhong's group.

“Close combat group, switch to Imitation Tang Swords! Follow me!” Yue Zhong looked at the remaining scattered zombies, and he lead the way rushing out.

Yue Zhong's directly subordinate unit were all brave warriors that he recruited to conduct close combat with zombies. Altogether there were only ten people. Each one held an Imitation Tang Sword, and they wore mutated river snake armor.

These ten people were all under the command of Chi Yang when Yue Zhong wasn't present. They specialized in close combat, and each person was level four or above.

The ten people belonging to the close combat unit closely followed Yue Zhong, rushing into the zombies. They chopped Imitation Tang Swords extremely fiercely, and they cut through zombie skulls like chopping through chives.

Using God and Devil World weapons to strengthen up wasn't a secret in Yue Zhong's group, but those who were brave enough to do close combat with zombies were relatively few. These ten soldiers were the ones brave enough to fight even without wearing the river snake armor. Due to this, Yue Zhong let them use the Imitation Tang Swords and leftover God and Devil World equipment to level up.

Of course all of the God and Devil World equipments were returned to Yue Zhong or Chi Yang after every mission.

The ten men split into three small groups. They worked together with careful coordination to methodically behead zombies after zombies. Yue Zhong and White Bones rushed into the middle of the remaining zombies. Everywhere he went, the zombies were unable to block his casual slashes.

The rest of the soldiers looked with fear and respect upon seeing Yue Zhong and his subordinates slaughtering the zombie crowd. Yue Zhong's group of people was lacking someone experienced with steel manufacturing. Because of this the large majority lacked cold weapons. Yue Zhong couldn't let the others fight zombies in close combat without weapons.

After a short time, all of the remaining zombies were cleared out by Yue Zhong's group. Those few zombies lacking arms and legs were no match for Yue Zhong's subordinates.

After clearing this batch of zombies, Yue Zhong put a fireball skill book and two hundred life coins in his bag. He continued to make White Bones enter the city to attract zombies.

The large majority of zombies in the town were cleared out by Yue Zhong's group after several rounds of this. But they used up a large amount of ammunition and heavy machine gun rounds.

Yue Zhong commanded each unit to advance into the town after clearing out the large majority of zombies.

Each unit advanced into the village under Yue Zhong's Command. Each unit also received two close combat unit members from Yue Zhong's group to deal with difficult zombies.

There were still scattered zombies in the village, and they were often attracted by gunshots.

Yue Zhong strode into the interior of the village.

The main zombie force was wiped out. The remaining scattered zombies basically were no match for the well equipped troops. Zombies after zombies were slaughtered, and the village was

recovered inch by inch.

A large amount of gunfire suddenly erupted near Xiao Ming's group.

Yue Zhong's brows wrinkled, and he immediately brought the remaining two close combat unit evolvers towards Xiao Ming's location.

Yue Zhong quickly arrived at Xiao Ming's location.

He saw in that direction, a nearly three meter tall enormous zombie made of black flesh and muscle was fighting with Xiao Ming's group.

Xiao Ming's group of soldiers continuously laid fire down at the zombie like madmen. The concentrated rifle shots all bounced off of the enormous zombies black lump of flesh. They were completely unable to pierce the enormous zombie's flesh.

“Level 30, type 2, power zombie L2. Possesses enormous power and defense. Has the skill, virus infection. Able to turn living organisms into the infected.”

An announcement immediately sounded in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge as soon as Yue Zhong saw the huge zombie.

The huge zombie's speed was three points faster than an ordinary person's. It was like a tank rushing towards Xiao Ming's group. It grabbed an ordinary team member by the head and pinched, exploding his head.

Xiao Ming's group momentarily collapsed seeing the enormous zombie be so fierce. The large majority of members all tossed their guns and fled in all directions.

“Don't flee!! Keep shooting!! Keep shooting!!” Xiao Ming roared with a scarlet red face, and at the same time he continuously shot at the huge zombie. But not a single person listened to his command. Only the two close combat unit members belonging to Yue Zhong and the three close subordinates next to him, stayed.

They kept firing at that nearly insurmountable zombie.

Shot after shot landed on that large lump of blackness, and they were all sent flying without penetrating its body.

Even though the close combat members belonging to Yue Zhong were completely scared stiff by the enormous zombie, they could only stand there because the order to withdraw had not been given. They absolutely weren't able to advance.

Yue Zhong didn't give a second glance to the fleeing team members. In a few steps, he appeared before the L2. He grasped the Imitation Tang Sword and ruthlessly chopped into the waist of the L2.

# Chapter 113: Fierce L2

---

Following an ear-splitting metal cutting sound, Yue Zhong had used his power on the L2's waist to cut a thin small crack. Even with him adding stats to strength and power and using the sharp Imitation Tang Sword, he could only cut this little bit. The bones weren't even visible.

The exterior of the black keratin membrane was like cutting into steel.

The L2 looked at Yue Zhong like he was just a little insect buzzing in front of his eyes. It ruthlessly slammed its large hand towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's agility far exceeded that of the L2. His body slightly shifted, avoiding the L2's strike, and he used the sword to slash the L2's elbow.

Unexpectedly countless sparks flew out as soon as the Imitation Tang Sword landed on the L2's body, and he was unable to cut through.

The L2 waved a hand to slap Yue Zhong.

As soon as the L2 moved, Yue Zhong side-stepped, and he circled around the L2. He started the skill Devil Flame, and a ball of scarlet-red flame lit up from his right hand.

Yue Zhong used a knife hand to chop into the L2's thigh. The Devil Flame started to madly combust an enormous hole as soon as it landed on the L2's thigh.

Yue Zhong circled around the L2's thigh, and it was immediately cut in two by the Devil Flame.

The L2 lost its balance, and heavily fell on the ground.

Yue Zhong took a large step forward, stepping a foot onto the L2's forehead. A scarlet-red Devil Flame momentarily burst from

his foot, turning the L2's skull into ash.

A large experience orb entered Yue Zhong's body as soon as the L2 died. The L2's corpse also dropped a skill book and a green treasure box.

Yue Zhong quickly put the skill book and green treasure box into his bag.

Finished with the L2, Yue Zhong finally turned and looked with a livid face at those who abandoned their commander Xiao Ming and fled.

Those who had abandoned their weapons and fled were all detained and brought before Yue Zhong by his subordinates.

One of Xiao Ming's subordinates looked at Yue Zhong with fear, and he knelt before Yue Zhong, begging: "I'm sorry! Captain Yue! Spare my life! From today on I will face the enemy without fear!! Please allow me to atone for my sins!"

"Captain Yue!! Release us this one time! We won't commit an offense again after today!"

"I'm begging you to spare our lives! That monster was too strong! We were no match. Staying there was merely being sent to death!!"

The subordinates of Xiao Ming who had fled, knelt before Yue Zhong and started begging.

Xiao Ming looked at those who fled, and then he said to Yue Zhong a little hesitantly: "Captain Yue, we should give them another chance!"

Yue Zhong looked at the eight subordinates of Xiao Ming and coldly said: "It doesn't matter what the reason, all of you committed the offense of fleeing the battlefield. All of you will be shot on site!"

Xiao Ming couldn't help but persuade: "Captain Yue! Training a team member isn't that easy!"



If the eight men of Xiao Ming's group were shot and killed, then he would forfeit his team's combat ability. Although the eight men turned tail and ran, they were all strong young men. Also they understand how to use guns. It would be troublesome to train and recruit new people, and it would take some time to make them combat ready.

Yue Zhong stared at Xiao Ming and coldly said: "Military law is ruthless. What good is military law if it isn't carried out ruthlessly? Get to work!"

Receiving the command of Yue Zhong, his direct subordinates took out their guns and aimed at the heads of the eight men, then pulled the trigger.

Following the sound of eight gunshots, Xiao Ming's eight subordinates were all executed.

Looking at the miserable scene, Xiao Ming couldn't bear to turn his head. The surrounding people who looked at this scene all shivered with fear in their hearts. They now had a much deeper familiarization with military law.

Yue Zhong looked at Xiao Ming and dully said: "Xiao Ming's command is detrimental. Dissolve the fifth team leader captain position. The fifth unit will be absorbed into the second unit. Xiao Ming is demoted to a preliminary team member."

Just now when Xiao Ming discovered the indomitable strength of the L2, he should have given the command to retreat. He didn't give the command to retreat, and this is an unforgivable error.

But Xiao Ming was a qualified soldier. His training was the most regimented, and he possessed an extremely powerful innate shooting ability. He already had a seventy percent bulls-eye rate from within a hundred meters.

Xiao Ming's heart was a little disappointed, he nodded and responded: "Yes!"

Yue Zhong looked at Xiao Ming and said: “Go to the second unit and report, clear out the zombies.”

“Yes!”

Xiao Ming yelled a response and brought his remaining people over to Da Gouzi’s second combat unit.

The second combat unit’s command was temporarily given over to Da Gouzi after Ji Qingwu left. Yue Zhong didn’t have many people he could trust under his command.

The main power in the center of the town was wiped out. The few remaining scattered zombies couldn’t withstand the armed forces.

One of Liu Yan’s team members walked over to Yue Zong and reported: “Captain Yue! We discovered a survivor! They want to meet you!”

Yue Zhong asked: “Who is it?”

The team member said: “They call themselves the mayor of Stone Horse village.”

Yue Zhong thought a moment and then said to the soldier: “Take me to have a look.”

Yue Zhong arrived at a spacious manor house under the guidance of the soldier.

He could see inside the manor that five survivors were being watched over by four soldiers with guns.

A fatty with a belly as if he was nine months pregnant yelled: “I want to meet your leader!!”

The soldiers coldly looked at the survivors without saying a word.

“You want to meet me?” Yue Zhong walked before the man name Wei Cheng and dully said.

Wei Cheng pointed to the young man who had a look of arrogance and said: “I am Wei Cheng, the mayor of Stone Horse Village. This person is the son of the Longhai City secretary. So long as you escort us to the Longhai City survivor base, the secretary certainly won’t forget your act of kindness.”

Yue Zhong looked over at the young man.

The young man’s face was arrogant, and two beautiful twenty-one or twenty-two year old women clung onto him. Their faces unchanged even though they were surrounded by the four soldiers. Looking at Yue Zhong with a slanted eye he proudly said: “You are this army’s chief?” I am Qian Yiming! You only need to escort me to Longhai City survivor base. My father will certainly make you a big official.”

“Idiot!” A word bubbled up in Yue Zhong’s mind while looking at the arrogant face of Qian Yiming.

At this time, two soldiers brought in four malnourished looking women wearing ragged clothes. They were all of different sizes.

Liu Yan looked at one in the group who was rather pretty and said: “This is our leader, Yue! Whatever words you have, say them to our Captain Yue!”

The rather pretty woman burst into tears when she saw Yue Zhong. She knelt down before him and pointed at Qian Yiming, begging: “Mighty Captain Yue! I’m begging you, help me kill that scum!!”

# Chapter 114: Life-Saving Plant

---

Qian Yiming looked at the woman kneeled before Yue Zhong. A fierce light flashed in his eyes, and he snapped: "Shut up! You dare speak out of turn, be careful or I'll kill you!"

The woman shivered from Qian Yiming's words. She pulled a little girl about the same size as Yao Yao over, and she told Yue Zhong: "Captain Yue, this scum not only raped me, he and other people raped my little sister together. Please help me take responsibility!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the little girl who was about the same size as Yao Yao. Her face was full of fear and numbness, her eyes flashed a hint of anger. Looking at Qian Yiming, his eyes also flashed a hint of murderous intent.

Qian Yi Ming noticed Yue Zhong staring at him, and he immediately shouted in fear: "But it is just playing with two women. What are you up to looking at me? Could it be you truly want to kill me? My father is the financial secretary of Long Hai City. You dare touch a hair on my head, and he will refuse to let you go! Send me to Long Hai City. I will give you however many women you want."

A cold light flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes. He pulled out a handgun and pointed it at Qian Yiming's forehead, then pulled the trigger.

A bang sounded, a bloody hole was created between Qian Yiming's eyebrows. His eyes were filled with fear and disbelief as he lifelessly fell to the floor.

"Who else touched your little sister!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with murderous intent as he looked around at the survivors.

The woman's eyes were filled with hatred, one by one pointing out the men of the group. She venomously said: "Them! These people all had a part!"

Wei Cheng was frightened and kneeled before Yue Zhong begging: “Captain Yue!! Don’t kill me!! Qian Yiming forced me!! If I didn’t do her, then he wouldn’t have let me eat! I was forced!!”

Seeing the son of the Long Hai City secretary be killed at the whims of Yue Zhong, Wei Cheng’s cards were all used up. He didn’t dare rely on the skeletons of the old system. He kneeled before Yue Zhong and wagged his tail like a dog for his crimes.

“Captain Yue!! Don’t kill me! I was also forced by Qian Yiming!”

“Captain Yue!! Spare my life!!”

The remaining male survivors also knelt and begged before Yue Zhong

Yue Zhong coldly commanded: “Execute them all!”

Yue Zhong’s direct subordinates pressed the male survivors to the ground. They raised rifles up to their foreheads and pulled the trigger.

Following the sounds of four gunshots, the four survivors were all executed on the spot.

“Don’t kill me!! I’ll do anything!! I’ll do anything!!”

One of the beautiful women next to Qian Yiming knelt before Yue Zhong and begged. The other beautiful woman stood beside Qian Yiming scared stiff. A yellow liquid flowed out from the inside of her thighs. Those two were continuously at Qian Yiming’s side, and they had seen all of the evil things he did. But the sight of so many people executed before them frightened them. The thought of their future caused endless fear.

Yue Zhong looked at the two women, then waived his hand at a subordinate: “Take them away!”

Although these two women were beautiful, neither could compare to Lu Wen and Guo Yu.

The subordinate received Yue Zhong’s command and

immediately force the two women to leave.

“Thank you!!” The woman who accused Qian Yiming expressed thanks to Yue Zhong. She took her younger sister and silently turned to leave.

The woman wasn't far away before she returned to Yue Zhong's side and said: “Captain Yue. I have some information I need to tell you.”

Yue Zhong looked at her and said: “What information?”

The woman looked at Yue Zhong and said: “I discovered a type of plant that has magical healing properties. Please follow me!”

Yue Zhong stared at her a moment and asked: “What is your name?”

She said: “I'm Zhang Yi!”

Yue Zhong commanded: “Lead the way!”

The whole village fell into Yue Zhong's hands not long after. He also wasn't afraid of Zhang Yi playing any tricks.

Zhang Yi didn't say much. She just quietly led Yue Zhong's group through the town.

After seven or eight turns, Zhang Yi led Yue Zhong to a place near the edge of Stone Horse's mountain.

Zhang Yi pointed at a yellow flower blooming out of a human skull with four petals. She said to Yue Zhong: “This is the plant. I saw two monkeys fighting in the past. One of them won, but its stomach was split open. It was covered in wounds from head to toe. It then chewed one of these plants, and spread the juice spread all over the wound on its stomach. It mysteriously healed the monkey's wound in a short time.”

Yue Zhong looked carefully, only saw those small yellow flowers blooming from a plant which had taken root at an already gnawed leftover bones. There wasn't much flesh on that rotting corpse,

above it, seven bizarre flowers had taken root.

Zhang Yi took a glance at Yue Zhong, gritting her teeth, she bit and broke her finger. After that, she tore off a small yellow flower above that skeleton and chewed it to extract its juice. She smeared the juice over her finger, and her bitten and broken finger stretched out before Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong took a careful look, and saw that Zhang Yi's self-inflicted wound rapidly healed up, the healing speed was far beyond that of any known medicines.

Yue Zhong looked at Zhang Yi with an awed look : "Well done! I can provide you and your sister with official team member position. As long as you don't violate my rules, you sisters will be able to have dignity and live nicely within my sphere of power. Nobody can bully you. Only that this matter with the plant should be a highly classified information, if you leak even a word of it, I won't be polite with you and your sister. Is that clear?"

Zhang Yi's heart relaxed, leaning on a huge rock, she expressed her thanks to Yue Zhong : "Many thanks, Captain Yue!"

Zhang Yi told this secret to Yue Zhong because apart from showing gratitude to Yue Zhong, she was also taking careful consideration. She wanted to move about freely with Yue Zhong's influence. At this Z-age, this kind of magical plant for her, was of little use, but to those evolvers, it was of extreme importance.

Yue Zhong faced towards his four direct subordinates as well as Guo Yu, Lu Wen and said : "This plant matter. No one is allowed to speak even a word about it."

"yes!" Yue Zhong's four subordinates all respectfully replied.

Yue Zhong faced Guo Yu and spoke : "Guo'er ! this kind of flowers are called life saving flowers. After recovering the village, you'll bring people to gather information about this life saving flower and report back to me."

Guo Yu faced Yue Zhong and with a sweet smile, said : “Yes! master!”

On the side, Lu wen looked at Yue Zhong and Guo Yu being close. Her small face swelled up.



# Chapter 115: Fishing for Snakes

---

The remaining scattered zombies outside of Stone horse village were killed until nightfall

Yue Zhong found over two hundred survivors in the process of clearing out Stone Horse Village, replenishing their population. Yue Zhong's sphere of influence increased to five hundred survivors. The majority of survivors found were so starved they didn't look human.

Recovering Stone Horse Village, each of Yue Zhong's small squadrons experienced a trial by fire, and they began to change into elite troops.

At night, Yue Zhong took inventory of his goods attained today after taking a bath.

Several equipment dropped by the God and Devil World system was recovered by Yue Zhong, then he started to distribute it.

In the battle of recovering Stone Horse Village, Yue Zhong received six skill books, thirty white treasure boxes, and a green treasure box.

The six skill books were: Rank 1 Fireball skill book, three Rank 1 Acceleration skill books, Rank 2 Language Mastery skill book, and Rank 3 Gravity Control Skillbook.

“Rank 1 skill Acceleration: This skill consumes five points of stamina. After using this skill, one will attain 10 agility for 30 seconds.”

“Rank 2 skill Language Mastery: This is a passive skill. After studying, one will automatically be proficient in three national languages, and proficiently master their written languages.”

“Rank 3 skill Gravity Control: This is an active skill. After using the skill, one can manipulate a single target within two hundred meters, or targets within the surrounding ten meters. The amount

of gravity pressure received by the target depends on the user's level of Spirit, Power, Stamina, and \*level. Releasing the skill consumes 10 points of Stamina and 10 points of Spirit. The skill also consumes 1 Stamina and 1 Spirit each second.”

Yue Zhong looked at the Rank 3 Gravity Control skill book that came from the L2. He contemplated a moment, then placed the book into his storage ring.

Yue Zhong held the Language Mastery skill book and thought a moment. The Skill book turned into a flowing light sinking into his sea of knowledge.

“What three languages would you like to know?”

As soon as the skill book entered Yue Zhong, a voice immediately appeared in Yue Zhong's mind.

“English, Russian, and Japanese!”

Yue Zhong thought a moment, and strands of light interwove in his sea of knowledge, condensing into a mysterious rune.

Yue Zhong felt a huge amount of knowledge rush forth into his brain as soon as the rune formed, then in a moment it rested.

Massaging his head, Yue Zhong opened the treasure boxes, starting with the white boxes. The thirty white treasure boxes were quickly opened. Inside there were four Imitation Tang Swords, a pair of strength shoes, and a pair of power gloves. The rest were all empty.

Yue Zhong looked at the thirty white treasure boxes dropping so few equipment and thought a moment: “Luck is very important when opening white treasure boxes! Fortunately I found four Imitation Tang Swords, so it's not too bad.”

Yue Zhong finally opened the green treasure box. A green light flashed, and a pair of leather boots flashing with a bronze colored light appeared before his eyes.

“Rank 3 item, Green Acceleration Boots: Increases Agility by 10 after equipping.”

“Such a treasure!” Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed with joy as he looked at the Green Acceleration Boots. Putting on the leather boots was like starting up the Rank 1 Acceleration skill.

A good piece of equipment can enormously increase a person’s strength. Yue Zhong is extremely clear about this.

After putting those items into a bag, Yue Zhong finally hugged the savory Guo Yu and went to sleep.

The second day, Yue Zhong dispatched personnel to continue clearing out Stone Horse Village, and he made Chi Yang start to transport survivors from Always Bright Village.

Vehicle after vehicle started transporting Always Bright Village survivors into Stone Horse Village.

Yue Zhong took several subordinates and brought them near the river by Stone Horse Village. He used chicken after chicken to try and entice a mutated river snake.

“Is there nothing?”

After spending a whole day, Yue Zhong ran along the edge of both rivers without catching a single mutated river snake. He was a little disappointed.

Just when he was pulling the cord, and preparing to take people to leave, an enormous mutated river snake surged out from the tranquil waters. Its mouth was opened up towards Yue Zhong’s chicken.

Yue Zhong was overjoyed. He pulled on the cord, and brought the chicken back up onto the shore.

The mutated river snake also rushed out from the water to chase its prey. It chased after the chicken writhing its enormous body back and forth.

Yue Zhong looked at Guo Yu and Lu Wen when the snake swam on shore within one hundred meters, and he said: “Get to work!”

Guo Yu and Lu Wen immediately started casting their two skills. They entered into a spell chanting state, one using ice magic, and the other using fire magic.

Yue Zhong grabbed a type 81 rifle and started firing at the huge mutated river snake.

Bullet after bullet was immediately sent flying off of the snake’s skin, but the bullet’s enormous force still pained the mutated river snake.

The attack enraged the mutated river snake. It is the master of these waters, and was now receiving provocation. Naturally it rushed on towards Yue Zhong in a towering rage.

Yue Zhong fired his type 81 rifle at the mutated river snake, and continually enticed it away from Guo Yu’s and Lu Wen’s position.

The mutated river snake’s speed was enormously fast, and it quickly caught up to Yue Zhong.

At this time, Guo Yu and Lu Wen’s magic spells formed. A ball of fire and an ice cone shot out, heavily exploding onto the mutated river snake’s body.

Magic’s power is extremely enormous. Even though they were two level one skills, they skill created a fist-sized black scorched bloody hole, and a fist-sized bloody hole full of ice crumbles on the snake’s body.

The mutated river snake emitted an enormous wail. It turned its head towards Guo Yu and Lu Wen. Its eyes filled with anger, and it twisted towards the two.

At that time, Yue Zhong activated the skill Shadow Step. His speed suddenly soared. He rushed before the mutated river snake, and used the stinger to fire three shots at it.

Three bullets boomed into the snake's body, blowing open another three fist sized holes.

After eating the pain, it actually turned towards the water to swim away.

Yue Zhong's speed soared, and he appeared before the mutated river snake in a couple of flashes.

It immediately opened its huge mouth to bite at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong slightly shifted and started the skill Devil Flame. A scarlet red magic fire condensed in his hand. He cut into the the huge snake's flank with his right hand. He created an enormous scar on that side of the snake, totally burning everything he touched away.

Yue Zhong rushed along the side of the mutated river snake, completely splitting open that side of the body. A huge amount of blood flowed out from the wound.

Receiving such heavy damage, the mutated river snake painfully struggled, collapsing paralyzed on the ground. A large experience orb sunk into Yue Zhong's body.

"Congratulations, you have leveled up to 26. You have obtained 2 stat points." A pleasing to the ear level up noise immediately appeared in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge.

# Chapter 116: Green Feather Eagle

---

“Strengthen 1 point of agility, 1 point of stamina!” Yue Zhong quickly made a choice, and picked up the skill book and life coins dropped by that mutated snake.

“Rank 3 Skill, Tamer Technique: “This is a Knight active skill. Knights don’t receive skill quantity restrictions for this skill, and they may learn this skill. When attacking and defeating an intelligent creature by only using strength and no weapons, activating this skill will have a certain probability of subduing the target. Launching the skill uses 10 points of stamina and 10 points of spirit force.

Yue Zhong concentrated, and directly learned the Rank 3 skill.

Finished with everything, Yue Zhong opened up the mutated river snake’s body, and he began searching around inside.

“Careful! Big brother (master)!!” Yue Zhong heard Guo Yu’s and Lu Wen’s and anxious cries as soon as he found the red bead.

Yue Zhong’s heart shivered cold with fear. An extremely dangerous feeling bubbled up in his heart. He activated the combined body skill. White Bones turned into rays of light sinking into his body, and it formed into a solid bone armor.

In the sky, an enormous thirty meter wingspan bird with green metal luster feathers dove through the sky at a terrifying speed appearing above Yue Zhong. It’s claws sunk into the mutated river snake’s body. One claw pierced all the way through Yue Zhong’s bone armor, the snake armor, and the rank three defensive cloth into his right chest. It pierced all the way through the mutated river snake’s body.

Yue Zhong felt a burst of severe pain and spit out a mouthful of blood.

“Level 46 mutated green feather eagle. A terrifying beast known

for its speed.”

Yue Zhong saw the piece of information and was instantly lifted up into the air by the green feather eagle.

“Big Brother (Master)!!” Guo Yu and Lu Wen both shouted when they saw Yue Zhong grabbed by the green feather eagle, only they were powerless to rescue him.

The green feather eagle grabbed Yue Zhong, and flapping its wings it quickly took flight.

Yue Zhong felt the ear-piercing wind, he was resisting with great difficulty, the pain, which was running through his body. He tightly held onto the mutated river snake’s body, not daring to make the slightest strange movement. Even though he had leveled up several times, in case that green feather eagle dropped him, he would still die from a couple hundred of meters fall.

The green feather eagle flew Yue Zhong and the mutated river snake corpse to a nest located in the mountains four hundred meters up behind Stone Horse Village. It tossed Yue Zhong and the river snake into the bird’s nest.

There were all kinds of mutated beast bones and corpses in the nest. Inside, there were five mutated river snake corpses that hadn’t yet rotted and a small green feather eagle that still hadn’t become an adult.

“Leven 26 young green feather eagle.”

Yue Zhong took a look at that little eagle, and a piece of information immediately entered into his mind.

After the green feather eagle released Yue Zhong and the mutated river snake into the nest, it once again flapped its wings and flew far away.

The amount of food this high level mutated beast needs to eat every day was astonishing. Because of this, the adult eagle went to go stockpile food whenever it had time to prepare for any

possibility.

Yue Zhong and the snake corpse heavily landed on the ground as they were dropped from up in the sky. A burst of severe pain passed from the wound of the claw. Blood continually flowed out, and the severe pain almost made him faint.

Yue Zhong quickly withdrew a large life saving flower from his storage ring. He put it in his mouth and chewed a moment, and then he spat and rubbed the liquid all over the huge wound.

Finished with everything, Yue Zhong was finally able to take care of the small red bead that was covered in snake blood, and he swallowed down the blood red bead.

As soon as he swallowed the small blood red bead, immediately a heat spread through his body strengthening it.

“You received 7 vitality and 1 strength.”

A notice sounded in his sea of knowledge after the effects wore off.

“The effect weakens?” Yue Zhong’s brows slightly wrinkled as he thought.

At this time, the green feather eagle who didn’t quite have all of its feathers yet waddled over. It took a look at Yue Zhong inside the mutated river snake corpse. Its eyes flashed a fierce light, and it used its beak that could pierce through steel to peck at Yue Zhong.

“Bastard!” A cold light flashed in Yue Zhong’s eyes. His figure flickered, avoiding the certain death poke of the young green feather eagle.

The young green feather eagle easily pierced through the bulletproof skin of the mutated river snake.

Yue Zhong looked at the green feather, and his heart gasped. He directly charged towards the young eagle.

The young green feather eagle had a wingspan approaching five



meters. In a couple quick movements, Yue Zhong jumped onto the back of the young eagle. The right side of the White Bones armor quickly held the eagle in place. Then he took his left fist and pounded on the young green feather eagle's skull.

The strength that far exceeded a normal person exploded downward, and the eagle was knocked dizzy. It started to frantically struggle with one of its immature wings.

Yue Zhong immediately started to feel a violent shaking as soon as the eagle started to struggle. The wound, which hadn't completely healed yet, ripped back open and flowed out blood.

"Damn! It's best not to kill it." Yue Zhong strode on the back of the eagle, and used all his strength to attack the bird's skull. At the same time his heart filled up with traces of murderous intent because the pain from his right chest was severe. Each blow boomed onto the eagle. If he couldn't capture this young eagle, then it would be best to use the stinger and blow a hole in its brains.

Just as Yue Zhong prepared to draw out the stinger, his fist boomed one more time onto the eagle skull. Finally it was knocked senseless, powerlessly collapsing to the ground Yue Zhong finally relaxed a breath, looking at the young eagle collapsed on the ground. He jumped down from its body and launched the tame skill towards the senseless eagle.

A green colored light shot out from between Yue Zhong's brows and landed on the head of the young eagle, condensing into a green colored rune.

As soon as the green rune appeared, the originally knocked out eagle immediately struggled up, and at the same time it opened its eyes and closely stared at Yue Zhong.

"Defeated?" Yue Zhong looked at the young bird that struggled up. His heart clenched. His hand flitted, and a stinger appeared in his right hand.

# Chapter 117: Taming Greenie

---

That green colored seal flashed between the eyebrows of that young green feather eagle. That young green feather eagle's terrifying gaze towards Yue Zhong became gentle. At last, that green colored rune went inside the mind of the young green feather eagle and disappeared. That young eagle's eye revealed complete allegiance to Yue Zhong.

After that green rune entered the young eagle's mind, Yue Zhong issued out an order to that young eagle : "Step aside !"

That Tamer's technique could tame living creatures and those creatures would attach the most importance to the one who used that technique. Receiving Yue Zhong's command, that young eagle stepped aside.

Yue Zhong breathed a sigh of relief. Only now did he relax, he could feel the burning pain in his right chest. Even though the life saving plant was suppressing it, from time to time, blood still flowed out. Just now, the fight with that young eagle had caused his injury to further worsen.

Yue Zhong once again clenched his teeth and took out some pain-killers from within his storage ring and swallowed them. He took out some life saving plants and spit its juice on the wound.

Done all this, Yue Zhong turned his head towards those five mutated snake's corpses, resisting the nausea, from within those five mutated snakes' corpses , he took out five blood essence red small beads.

Yue Zhong took out a bottle of mineral water from his storage ring and washed those five blood essence, clean and then swallowed all of them.

Soon after those five blood essence entered his stomach, they turned into surging flow of energy and merged with Yue Zhong's

body, strengthening the body.

“You have obtained 18 points of vitality, 3 points of strength.”

As soon as the heat disappeared, a sweet prompt arrived in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge.

That prompt had just faded, Yue Zhong felt his right wound chest itching and tingling. His injury, under the help of life saving plant and his own large vitality, began to heal rapidly.

Yue Zhong selected a clean area to sit down, and started panting and gasping while pondering the next course of action.

“This place is not good for staying. must immediately leave, otherwise if that green feather eagle returns, then I will undoubtedly die.”

Yue Zhong rested a moment and looked at that still calm and standing on his side, the young green feather eagle : “From today onward, you shall be called Greenie.”

Because the young green eagle is green colored, Yue Zhong casually decided to name it Greenie. He didn't have many ideas for a name.

The young green eagle expressionlessly stared at Yue Zhong without showing any special opposition.

He rested a moment, and White Bones separated from his body.

White Bones looked at the nest filled with animal bones. A sharp bone spike shot into one of the mutated beast corpses, and it activated Bone Exploitation Skill.

The Bones of the mutated beasts in the nest were completely absorbed into White Bone's body. After absorbing several bones within the nest, White Bone's body immediately condensed piece by piece into an unmatched solid bone armor. At the same time, there was a layer of dull black metal luster like steel.

“Your Summon Special Skeleton bone White Bones strength

degree 20.” The Bone Armor model in Yue Zhong’s sea of knowledge made this type of announcement.

Absorbing the mutated beast bones, White Bones walked over to Yue Zhong’s side. It took its hand and pressed into Yue Zhong’s wound. White Bones activated bone control skill. It forced into and combined with the cracked bone in Yue Zhong’s wound.

Yue Zhong ate a vitality apple, rested a moment, and then went before the six mutated river snake corpses. He activated devil flame and placed all of their skins in his storage ring.

The mutated river snake skin is the best bulletproof material. Yue Zhong tested this in the past. He used rounds below 12.7 millimeters as well as all kinds of guns, and they were all unable to pierce the skin at a range of 20 meters. Only the 12.7 millimeter round heavy machine gun could pierce through it.

The mutated river snake skin didn’t lose out to his level three defensive clothes after being turned into armor. Only it didn’t have the level three defensive clothes’s additional stats.

These six mutated river snake skins were a small fortune to Yue Zhong. He could upgrade his subordinate’s defensive ability several levels after it was turned into armor.

Yue Zhong searched around the nest, but he didn’t find any additional treasure. He finally said to the young green eagle tamed by him: “Let’s go Greenie!”

Yue Zhong turned to White Bones and commanded: “Make a bridge allowing me to go down!”

A spirit flame flashed in the eyes of White Bones. He extended out a hand, and bone spike after bone spike shot out of his right arm. The spikes wounded their way into the mountain below.

Strip after strip of bone spike shot into the mountain from White Bone’s body, and it formed into a bone ladder.

Yue Zhong jumped down from the nest, and he climbed down

moving along the bone spike ladder.

The green eagle tamed by Yue Zhong was also extremely intelligent. It jumped down along the bone bridge made by White Bones.

Yue Zhong and Small Green each descended down the ladder. One of the bone spikes then retracted into the body of White Bones, and then it once again shot out into the cliff wall. They advanced forward like this. Yue Zhong and Small Green were able to descend down the hundred meter high bird nest in a short of amount of time, then they quickly entered into the dense forest running far away.

“Chi Yang!! Yue Zhong was snatched by a huge eagle!! Quickly go find him!!” Lu Wen anxiously said. She had rushed into Stone Horse Village and found Chi Yang in command.

Guo Yu also followed behind Lu Wen. Her big beautiful eyes had anxiety written all over them.

Chi Yang’s brows wrinkled. He said to Lu Wen: “Explain what happened.”

Lu Wen told the whole story of Yue Zhong being snatched away by the eagle to Chi Yang.

She begged Chi Yang: “Chi Yang, quickly take people to rescue Yue Zhong!! I’m begging you!”

Chi Yang who had assumed office and had continuously fought battles is accepted number two evolver under Yue Zhong.

Chi Yang was silent a moment, then slowly said at last: “No! I can’t leave this place!”

Lu Wen’s eyes flashed with disbelief. Both angry and worried she said: “Why? Aren’t you the most sworn follower of Yue Zhong? Why aren’t you going to rescue him??”

Chi Yang coldly said: “Yue Zhong handed this place over to me so

that I could maintain peace and order. If I left at this time then the peace and stability could possibly turn into chaos. Yue Zhong wouldn't wish for me to take people out to search for him. Furthermore, we don't have a clue where he is. Where do you want me to go to find him?"

# Chapter 118: Small village

---

Chi Yang's temper was cool and steady. Yue Zhong being snatched by the green eagle made him anxious, but he could still calmly analyze the situation. He would do anything that was within his power to do.

Lu wen rushed outside worried: "You aren't going to find him. I will go myself!"

Lu Wen is young, and her temper is somewhat impulsive. Yue Zhong is who she recognizes, and she is going to bring people to find her man.

Chi Yang's brows wrinkled. He commanded in a deep voice: "Zhang Zheng and Lei Yi, stop her."

The two security guards at Chi Yang's side went forward to block Lu Wen's path.

Lu Wen stared, and she scolded at the two security guards: "Step out of the way!"

Lu Wen was equivalent to a half mistress in Yue Zhong's group. No one dared be discourteous to her wherever she went. Apart from Yue Zhong and Chi Yang, very few people would dare defy her desires.

Lei Yi didn't know whether to laugh or cry and said to Lu Wen: "Miss Lu, sympathise with us. We are only following orders."

Chi Yang is the direct supervisor of Lei Yi and Zhang Zheng. The two must obey Chi Yang's commands. The only other person who can give them direct orders is Yue Zhong. No one else has direct command authority over them.

Lu Wen turned at looked at Chi Yang. She shouted with her face full of fury: "Chi Yang! What are you doing?"

Chi Yang commanded: "Lu Wen, my mission is to protect Stone

Horse Village, maintain smooth operations, and provide safety for you and Guo Yu. You don't have the strength to protect yourself. You would only die in vain if you went by yourself to seek Yue Zhong! Lei Yi and Zhang Zheng, take Lu Wen and Guo Yu back home to rest. Don't allow them to easily escape without the command of Yue Zhong or myself."

Lei Yi respectfully said to Lu Wen and Guo Yu: "Please young misses."

Guo Yu pulled Lu Wen's clothes and softly advised: "Sister, let's go! Chi Yang is well intentioned. We don't want to make it harder for them."

Lu Wen fumed at Chi Yang, then finally followed Lei Yi and Zhang Zheng out.

Lu Wen understood everything Chi Yang said, but she was still somewhat angry.

Chi Yang sent people to call over Liu Yan after Lu Wen left.

"Chi Yang! What did you seek me for?" Liu Yan asked a little cautiously.

Although Chi Yang is the same rank as other people, he is still the number two man under Yue Zhong. Chi Yang could exercise Yue Zhong's authority whenever he wasn't around.

Chi Yang said: "Take your men to the west and search for Captain Yue Zhong. Take an IFV with you. If you find any news on Captain Yue Zhong, or if there is anything you cannot cope with, then send someone to inform me."

The IFV is the most powerful weapon under the control of Yue Zhong. The zpt90 25 millimeter round cannon is the most powerful gun in Stone Horse Village. The bullet and knife proof mutated river snake armor could be torn apart by the zpt90 cannon.

Liu Yan nodded and left.



Chi Yang rubbed his temples watching Liu Yan leave. He anxiously thought: “Yue Zhong, I hope you are safe and sound.”

Chi Yang also wanted to personally search for Yue Zhong, but he was inseparable from the operations at Stone Horse Village. This was the crucial time for Always Bright Village survivors to enter Stone Horse Village. There could be no disorder.

Chi Yang taking over let Yue Zhong be relieved of various heavy responsibilities. He could take people to resolve the mutated river snake problem of the two rivers outside of Stone Horse Village.

Yue Zhong, White Bones, and Small Green quickly moved along through the dense forest after leaving the bird nest.

The green feather eagle is different from ordinary birds. Because Small Green is a young bird it cannot fly, but it use its two legs to walk along the ground like a penguin.

Yue Zhong strode through the dense forest. Given that the life saving flower juice couldn't completely heal the wound, If he were an ordinary person receiving that kind of wound, they wouldn't be able to walk. It felt as painful as being hit by multiple bullets.

Yue Zhong's vitality far exceeded a normal persons. With the strengthening of his body and the life saving flower juice, his wound was kept within check without worsening. But he felt severe pain in his chest with every step. He could also taste traces of blood in his throat every time he breathed.

Yue Zhong walked and bitterly thought: “Truly bad luck! I finally understand the story of the mermaid princess.”

Suddenly there was a gunshot in the forest. Yue Zhong's heart filled with happiness, and he quickly went in that direction: “There's people!”

Yue Zhong wasn't the least bit familiar with that area of the forest. It was very hard to navigate without someone familiar in the area leading him.

But when Yue Zhong arrived at the location of the gunshot, he only saw five human corpses. Six mutated monkeys were crawling all over their bodies, gorging on their flesh.

Yue Zhong saw the six monkeys gnawing on the corpses, and his eyes flashed with murderous intent. He commanded to White Bones: “Kill! Kill them!”

White Bones shot forward like an arrow, rushing into the group of monkeys.

The eyes of the six monkeys flashed with a fierce light after seeing White Bones, and they rushed towards it.

White Bones waived his axe and split open a monkey's body, chopping hit a the waist.

The five remaining monkeys took the opportunity to attack the flank of White Bones. They used their sharp claws to slash at White Bones, but they were unable to make a scratch.

During the time the monkeys attacked at White Bones, its body began to shoot out bone spike after bone spike that pierced through the five monkeys.

The five monkeys had extreme vitality. They still didn't die even though they were pierced through by White Bones. They actually struggled for their lives on the spikes of White Bones.

Greenie stood beside Yue Zhong watching the situation. It then flapped its wings and rushed over to the five monkeys. Greenie pecked like lightning at the heads of the mutated monkeys. Their skulls were pierced through one by one, then it quickly began to feast.

The six monkeys dropped a white treasure box and a couple dozen life coins. Apart from this there were no other drops.

The white treasure box ended up being empty.

Yue Zhong shook his head and then carefully looked around a

moment. He found a little trail of blood and and walked that direction.

White Bones and Greenie closely followed behind.

Following the blood trail, Yue Zhong and his companions found a little village nested in the mountains.

“Halt! Who are you?” Yue Zhong and the others had just approached a little village. Two survivors, one holding a homemade crossbow, and the other holding a large knife appeared before Yue Zhong.

# Chapter 119: Old Family Village

---

Yue Zhong looked at the villager holding the large knife and the villager holding the home-made crossbow, and he said in a deep voice: “I came to ask directions! Bring out the leader of your village!”

Everyone is extremely wary in Z-Age. Yue Zhong also knew his presence would make the people guarded.

The villager holding the home-made crossbow looked at Small Green standing beside Yue Zhong. He hesitantly said: “You aren’t welcome here, please leave!”

If it wasn’t for Small Green standing beside Yue Zhong, that villager might not be so nice. He would simply tell Yue Zhong to scram.

The other villager holding the large knife curiously sized up Yue Zhong. His vision fell onto Small Green, and he couldn’t look away. He had never seen a person able to tame a monster of such unmatched strength.

Yue Zhong looked at the two survivors, his brows wrinkled. He didn’t wish to argue with the villagers. He commanded to White Bones: “Grab them up!”

The spirit flames ignited in the eyes of white bones, and he galloped over to the two villagers.

Seeing White Bones rush over, the villager holding the crossbow became startled. He turned and pulled the trigger at White Bones, and the bolt darted towards White Bones like lightning.

White Bones gazed upon the incoming bolt, and it easily stopped it with the axe, knocking the bolt flying.

“How severe!” Seeing White Bones knock away the flying arrow, the eyes of villager holding the crossbow flashed with fear. He tossed aside the crossbow and pulled out a machete from his back.

White Bones quickly rushed into the two survivors. He appeared before the crossbow survivor like a demon shadow. A knife-hand chopped at the survivor's neck, knocking him out.

The villager holding the large knife chopped at White Bones. White Bones waived his axe, knocking against the villager's knife. The knife was easily sent flying, then a fist boomed into the side of the villager, making the villager curl up into a ball on the ground.

The sounds alarmed the survivors inside the village. Quickly over twenty male villagers holding knives, guns, clubs, and other weapons rushed forth from the village and faced off against Yue Zhong from far away.

Under the watch of the twenty plus male survivors, Yue Zhong brought Small Green into the village. With an overwhelming imposing manner he looked at the survivors and said: "Who is the leader of this village. Make him come out and see me!"

The twenty plus men were intimidated by Yue Zhong's mighty presence, unexpectedly not a single person dared speak.

There was a man with several white hairs on his head and a large mole on his right cheek. He was a little old man, and he split apart the crowd and walked directly to Yue Zhong. He said slightly respectfully: "I am Village Chief Chen Ning. I am the person who handles matters for the village. May I ask who are you? Why have you come to our village?"

Chen Ning already saw Small Green standing by Yue Zhong's side as he was walking out of the crowd. He knew the person before him wasn't someone this small village could provoke.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Ning and directly asked: "I came to ask directions. What is this place? I want to go to Stone Horse Village and Always Bright Village. How do I get to these places?"

"So long as you send a person to guide me to Stone Horse Village, this bag of rice will be that person's reward." Yue Zhong pulled a

bag from his backpack and opened it up revealing the rice inside. He then threw it on the ground.

The greatest treasure to ordinary people in Z-Age isn't gold or diamonds, but rather food that can fill one's stomach. Seeing the bag of white rice on the ground, the eyes of the villagers all turned green. They could almost not live on due to the food problem, and they didn't dare brave death hunting in the mountains.

"I know how to go to Stone Horse Village! I will guide you!"

"I know! Let me guide you!"

"....."

The villagers immediately began to compete with each other upon seeing the bag of rice. The bag had approximately 10kg of rice. If eaten frugally and used for gruel, that bag of rice could let a small family live for one month.

Seeing the villagers one by one fight with each other, Chen Ning's face sank, and he yelled: "Give me some quiet!"

Chen Ning had the respect of the villagers. The villagers all temporarily quieted down, but they all still fervently stared at Chen Ning. They all wanted to obtain the job of guiding Yue Zhong.

Chen Ning looked at Yue Zhong and invited: "it is getting late. Brother Yue Zhong, it would be better to rest a bit in our village. Tomorrow i will make people guide you.'

"That is bothersome!"

Yue Zhong wasn't polite. He directly brought White Bones and Small Green into the village.

This village certainly wasn't big, and it wasn't as lively as Always Bright Village. There were barely forty households, and the large majority were old brick houses.

After calling off the alarm, the woman and the children of the

village finally came out of their houses. They curiously looked at Yue Zhong and the companions at his side.

After White Bones had the Feign skill, if it didn't shoot bone spikes, ordinary people just thought it resembled a silent weird human.

Yet Small Green attracted a large amount of attention from the men and women. Even if it was just a young green eagle, it already revealed a fierce attitude. None of the people dared lightly draw near.

Yue Zhong looked around. He discovered the women and children didn't show any signs of mistreatment, and he couldn't help but have a much more favorable opinion towards Chen Ning.

One should know much of the darkness hidden in mankind's heart exploded out after Z-Age. Chen Ning is kind to the women and children which is a rarity in Z-Age.

Chen Ning is the village chief, and the place he lived in wasn't bad. It was a spacious courtyard of five small buildings.

There was a large bowl of gruel, a dish of fried peanuts, and four sweet potatoes placed on a table in the building. On the table in the courtyard there was also a large bowl of gruel, but the consistency wasn't as thick as the gruel in the house.

Yue Zhong and Chen Ning's two sons, Chen Sheng and Chen Wang, sat at the large table in the house. Eight young and old women sat around the large table in the courtyard.

Chen Ning said to Yue Zhong: "We only have this food here. I'm a bad host, please forgive me. Eat as you please, don't be polite."

Yue Zhong looked at the dishes on the table. He grabbed two cans of beef from his backpack and opened them. He placed them on the table and laughed: "Come, eat as you please."

Chen Sheng and Chen Wang saw the two cans of beef, and their eyes both were a little green. They hadn't eaten meat for several

weeks. They couldn't handle the sight. They reached out their chopsticks, and they were ready to risk their lives stuffing their mouths.



# Chapter 120: Probe

---

Chen Ning looked at his two sons wolf down the food. His brows wrinkled: “Two little bastards, eat slower.”

The eyes of the women surrounding the large table in the courtyard all fell upon the two cans of beef. Things to replenish nutrients were completely given to the men in order to fight and hunt. They could only eat some gruel and scratch out a meager existence. They already hadn't eaten meat for a long time.

But the Chen family women and children knew, some of the families in the village don't even have gruel to eat. They have started to eat grass and tree bark. Some even ask their daughter-in-laws to sleep with men for some food. The Chen family women didn't have too many complaints because of this. To be able to eat maize gruel in Z-Age is not bad.

The land in the Chen family village is poor and barren. Several families are hunters. The main income is poaching wild animals in the mountain, and then selling them privately. Each family doesn't have much food storage. One third of the people changed to zombies after the world changed. But the villagers rallied under the command of Chen Ning. They completely wiped out the mutated villagers and buried them.

Yue Zhong ate several mouthfuls of maize gruel and fried peanuts to show his gratitude, and then he laid down his chopsticks. He had a large amount of all kinds of food in his storage ring. He was completely uninterested in filling his stomach with the maize gruel.

Chen Ning saw Yue Zhong stop eating after eating several pieces of beef. He also set down his chopsticks and slowly said to Yue Zhong: “Little brother Yue Zhong! To get from our village to Stone Horse Village, one must pass through the Zhang Family Village and the Mudfish Ravine. Zhang Family Village isn't like our village.

There are man-eating demons everywhere there. It isn't a good place to cross."

Yue Zhong downplayed the situation: "No problem! Your people only needs to guide. I will take care of the man-eating demons in Zhang Family Village."

The number of zombies that have died at Yue Zhong's hand is nearly one thousand. Furthermore Yue Zhong has already decided to only rely on his own strength to cut a path into the world. He carries a prestigious position that holds the lives of hundreds of people in his hands, and his words carry formidable confidence. Chen Ning looked at Yue Zhong and couldn't help but believe his words.

Chen Ning hesitated a moment. He asked a little expectantly: "Little brother Yue Zhong, why are you in such a rush to return to Stone Horse Village?"

Yue Zhong intentionally or otherwise said: "I established a survivor base in Stone Horse Village. I have hundreds of people there. I naturally can't be away for too long."

There were over twenty capable men here in Chen Family Village. If he could absorb them, then Yue Zhong's power could increase a large amount. But if you don't have the muscle, other people won't rely on you.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Chen Ning looked at Yue Zhong and his view changed: "So Yue Zhong is the boss of a base. Truly a young hero. Amazing! Truly amazing."

Yue Zhong plainly said: "Oh you are flattering me."

From then on, Chen Ning started beating around the bush on the Stone Horse Village survivor base situation and policies.

Yue Zhong started to explain the situation and policies in Stone Horse Village one by one.

Chen Ning thought a moment, and he asked a probing question:

“Brother Yue Zhong, if I brought all my villagers to seek refuge, how would you treat me?”

The food quantity was already extremely tight in the Chen Family Village. Chen Ning could only eat maize gruel as the village chief. don't even think about others.

Chen Family village is close to the mountain, but that mountain has too many mutated beasts. Ordinary people without firepower are extremely weak in front of those mutated beasts. Today they organized a group of twelve men to brave the mountain, but unfortunately they ran into mutated monkeys. Five of the twelve died, and two were seriously injured, crippling the small population of this village.

The dangers of these mutated beasts to the hunters is very clear. They had encountered these terrifyingly powerful mutated beasts when hunting once in the past. If it wasn't for having no other choice, the Chen Family Villagers wouldn't think to go hunting in the mountains.

It would be a problem for the Chen Family Village's food supply to last for another week. Chen Ning's food supply could last another two weeks for his family if they conservatively ate even less. Chen Ning already didn't have any options and thought to rely on Yue Zhong. They are cornered in reality.

The villagers wouldn't look upon the food Yue Zhong had with green eyes if the village had food, and they wouldn't fight over each other to be Yue Zhong's guide.

Yue Zhong duly said; “If you can bring the whole village into my group, and organize a small fighting unit, I will make you and your two sons preliminary team members. If you achieve merits in battle, you can promote into an official team member. Your wives and children can enjoy outside member benefits. I can guarantee none of the villagers will starve to death. If they want to achieve any kind of treatment, then their performance will need to be

looked at.”

The fact that Yue Zhong wasn't too fervent, and he didn't promise Chen Ning an extremely high position made Chen Ning even more relaxed. Chen Ning would be suspicious if Yue Zhong promised him an extremely high position.

A young fellow rushed into the courtyard at this time. He said to Chen Ning with a face of sorrow: “Uncle! Uncle quick come look. Uncle Shitou cannot stand up. Do you have medicine?”

Chen Ning isn't only the Mayor, he also knows a little bit about ancient medicine, so he is also the village doctor.

Chen Ning apologized to Yue Zhong seeing the youngster rush in: “Sorry, I need to go take a look.”

“I will go with you.”

Yue Zhong followed Chen Ning out.

Inside a crude brick house, a middle-aged man was lying in the bed. He was struggling in endless pain. On his stomach there was a long gash, and blood continuously flowed out of the enormous wound.

A good looking young woman was whispering in a low voice and using a towel to wipe the sweat of the man. A beautiful young fourteen or fifteen year old girl stood to the side at a loss, looking at her father on the bed.

The man on the bed used his broad shoulders and powerful hands to be the best hunter in the village. He used his hands and shoulders to protect his wife and daughter. He let them be much better off than the others in the village. If the man on the bed died, his wife and daughter truly didn't know how they would be able to continue living in the cruel Z-Age.

The beautiful young girl looked at Yue Zhong and Chen Ning walk into the room. She kneeled before Chen Ning, begging with huge tears in her eyes: “Uncle! I beg you. I'm begging you save

Shitou! I'm begging you!! I will do anything if only you save him!"

# Chapter 121: Attendant

---

Chen Ning looked at the beautiful young woman kneeling before him and said: “Zhang Su! Get up. I want to take a look at Shitou’s status. Being on your knees isn’t helping.”

Zhang Su immediately stood up hearing Chen Ning’s words, and she awaited Chen Ning.

Chen Ning walked over to Shitou before the eyes of everyone. His brows tightly wrinkled after carefully looking over Shitou’s body. He hesitated a moment and then slowly shook his head: “His wound is too serious. The opening is too deep. If there was a specialized doctor that could perform an operation perhaps he could live. Otherwise his only road is death. You can only grieve.”

Zhang Su’s eyes flashed with desperation. Again she kneeled before Chen Ning and painfully begged: “Not possible! Shitou can’t die! I’m begging you! Uncle, I’m begging you to save Shitou!! I’m begging you to save Shitou! I will do anything!”

The young girl standing beside Zhang Su also kneeled before Chen Ning and begged: “Mayor! I’m begging you, save my dad!”

“I’m sorry! His wound, I don’t have the ability.” Chen Ning shook his head. Even before Z-Age Chen Ning would have no way to cure Shitou’s wound. Don’t even mention the lack of medicine after Z-Age started.

Zhang Su and her daughter Chen Miao heard what was said, and couldn’t help but let the tears come out. The house filled with a hopeless atmosphere.

For this family, their backbone dying means the family is faced with ruin. Zhang Su and Chen Miao are the two beauties of the village. Several men covet them, but they are protected by the number one hunter Shitou, making those men not dare cause trouble. If Shitou dies, there well absolutely be several men who

come around. Even if they don't use force, in order to keep living, Zhang Su and Chen Miao can only give up their bodies.

“Let me try.”

A voice passed over from the side, and it attracted everyone's vision.

Zhang Su and Chen Miao both looked upon Yue Zhong. They saw a thread of hope in their despair.

Yue Zhong walked over and carefully inspected Shitou while being watched by the hopeful eyes of Zhang Su and Chen Miao. He discovered Shitou only had a fatal wound on his stomach. The other wounds weren't too serious.

Zhang Su and Chen Miao both walked over to Yue Zhong's side and nervously looked at Yue Zhong's expression.

Yue Zhong said to Chen Miao: “Go grab a bowl of warm water that has been boiled.”

Chen Miao immediately went to the kitchen without saying a word.

Zhang Su asked a little worriedly: “Doctor, is my husband saveable?”

Yue Zhong turned and duly said: “I don't know. I only have a fifty percent certainty! But if I don't try and save him, he will certainly die. If you don't want me to try, or you don't trust me, then say something now.”

Zhang Su bit her lip and said: “Save him! I'm begging you save him!! So long as you save Shitou, however you want me, I promise to you.”

Zhang Su's house was already out of food. The only thing she has is her slender graceful body. In order to save her husband, she truly would do anything.

She is willing to offer her body if Yue Zhong wants it. Her

husband just has to be able to survive.

Yue Zhong looked at Zhang Su without taking notice to her and promised: “Yes.”

Zhang Su is truly a beautiful and graceful young woman. But there is still a large gap between her and the grand beauties like Lu Wen, Chen Yao, Ji Qingwu, and Guo Yu. Yue Zhong has twenty beauties under his sphere of influence that can compare with Zhang Su, actually even above Zhang Su. Yue Zhong didn't have any strange ideas towards her.

Zhang Su's heart slightly relaxed a bit seeing that Yue Zhong paid no notice to her promise. And at the same time he didn't do anything strange. After all, The large majority of men in the village wouldn't be able to resist her charm.

Chen Miao quickly brought a bowl of water over.

Yue Zhong grabbed three life saving flowers from his bag. After breaking them down, he finally mixed it in with the water to make liquid medicine, and then he spread the medicine over the wound. He also took two painkillers and antibiotics pills and forced Shitou to swallow them.

Under the effects of the life-saving flower, Shitou's wound started to slowly heal while everyone watched. It no longer flowed blood.

The original in a unconscious and struggling Shitou slowly recovered and settled down from the medicine.

“Good! I can only do to this level. Living or dying will depend on his willpower! Tomorrow I will come give more medicine and. Let's go mayor Chen. I'm tired.” Finished with everything, Yue Zhong stood up and walked over to Chen Ning. There was nothing else he could do. He would do no use staying here.

Chen Ning looked at Yue Zhong at this time. His eyes filled with amazement. He never thought Yue Zhong could have carried such



a magical medicine, and it added another layer of respect and fear.

The complicated eyes of Zhang Su and Chen Miao watched as Yue Zhong and Chen Ning returned to the mayor's house.

As soon as Yue Zhong arrived at the villa, he fell into a deep sleep. He battled the whole day, and it used up a lot. And he also suffered an extremely serious injury. He was only able to persist on due to being much stronger than ordinary people, consuming a large amount of blood-red beads, and the life saving flower medicine.

White Bones and Greenie were placed in a room not far from Yue Zhong. They could hurry over in the first instance if there were any disturbances.

Yue Zhong didn't sleep long. The door to his room was softly pushed open, and a figure walked over to Yue Zhong's bed. There was a rustling sound of clothes falling down, followed by a fragrant treasure entering into his bedding.

He was startled awake as soon as that tender and soft body entered into his bedding. He snapped out of reflex, grabbed the throat of the soft body, and coldly said: "Who are you?"

"I am Chen Miao! The mayor found me to lie down and attend on you." Chen Miao's soft body somewhat quivered in fear as she spoke to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong finally relaxed his grip on Chen Miao's throat. He carefully sized up this bare naked \*\* girl before him in his bed.

She was wearing pigtails. Her skin was white and tender, full of elasticity, and she had a beautiful delicate little face. Although her body wasn't as good as Lu Wen and Guo Yu, her development wasn't bad. Her two small buns filled with youthful elasticity. She is yet a tender and beautiful little miss.

Yue Zhong looked at this young miss full of youth and energy, and his heart slightly shook: "Do you know what lie down and

attend means?”

“I know! it.....it is to accompany you and do.” Her cheeks blushed, she hesitated a moment then bravely looked directly at Yue Zhong.

## Chapter 122: Man Eating Monster

---

Yue Zhong hesitated a moment and slowly said: “But I already have a woman.”

Although Chen Miao is very pretty and full of life, but she wasn't charming enough to make Yue Zhong go crazy. He also didn't want to get her pregnant and make her regret for a lifetime.

Chen Miao heard Yue Zhong's words, and her eyes slightly darkened. But she still stared at Yue Zhong and slowly said: “No problem. Today I am voluntarily coming here to repay you, thanking you for saving my father. You saved him, so you saved our family. I don't have anything to repay you with. I only have this pure body. I want you to take it. After tonight, if you like, I will follow you and be your lover. If you don't want me then no problem. I will quietly leave.”

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Miao, the beautiful young girl's words full of energy. His heart was slightly moved. This beautiful and pure young girl set his heart racing. He brought Chen Miao into his embrace, and that healthy young girl's fragrance sunk into his nose.

Today Yue Zhong was able to save the person named Chen Shitou's life. Chen Shitou is the village's greatest hunter. After Z-Age, Chen Shitou and Chen Ning both took charge in clearing out the zombies in the village. If it wasn't for Chen Shitou, the Chen Family Village wouldn't have that many survivors.

Chen Miao's face immediately became red in the embrace of Yue Zhong. Although she talked big, as the time came she was a little afraid and anticipating.

Yue Zhong wanted to move a little, only with the slight movement, his right chest burst in pain. His body still hadn't completely recovered.

Yue Zhong softly kissed Chen Miao's forehead, then he placed her to his right side. He closed his eyes and went to sleep: "Sleep! I'm tired today."

"Yes!" Chen Miao's heart slightly relaxed, and she was somewhat disappointed as she quietly lay beside Yue Zhong.

Early in the morning the second day, Yue Zhong brought Chen Miao to Chen Ning's living room.

Chen Ning's family members looked at Chen Miao standing beside Yue Zhong. Their eyes all carried a strange light.

Chen Miao stood a little bashfully beside Yue Zhong. In her heart, she had already slept in the same bed as Yue Zhong, so she is Yue Zhong's woman.

Yue Zhong pulled out two boxes of milk from his backpack, two pieces of cake, and then gave Chen Miao half under the envious and admiring eyes of Chen Ning's family.

Milk and cake were already extravagant things in Z-Age. No one in the whole Chen Family Village had these things.

Chen Miao drank the milk and nibbled on the cake, her face written with joy. In this type of world, being able to eat until one is full is already a desperate hope. Chen Miao had personally seen her classmates sell off their first night for a piece of corn cake. Her being able to currently eat this good food, she doesn't know how many times happier she is than others.

"What about the guides?" Finished eating, Yue Zhong directly asked Chen Ning. Stone Horse Village is his base. He didn't know if the Long Hai City Survivor base were friends or enemies to the south, glaring upon them with envious eyes. He was extremely worried about the safety of Stone Horse Village.

"These are the guides! Yue Zhong, let me give you an introduction! This is my son Chen Wang! These other four are Chen Nian, Niuchao, Zhaoxing, and Sunye." Chen Ning called over

five people and introduced them.

Chen Wang and the others are all strong young men of the Chen Family Village. They all carried large machetes, spears, crossbows, and other cold-weapons on their backs.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Ning and said: “I know. I want you to look over Chen Miao’s family! I will quickly send people to pick you up.”

Chen Ning called Yue Zhong Captain Yue, naturally giving birth to the idea of placing himself into the hands of Yue Zhong. If Yue Zhong can return to Stone Horse Village and send people back, he will bring his people to join in with Yue Zhong.

Chen Ning said: “Yes!”

Yue Zhong didn’t have any hesitation, he took Chen Wang and the others in the direction of the Zhang Family Village. The ever silent White Bones and Greenie followed at Yue Zhong’s side.

Chen Miao looked at the back image of Yue Zhong leaving. Her lips moved, yet nothing came out. Her father was still here recovering in bed. She couldn’t follow together with Yue Zhong.

“Captain Yue. That is Zhang Family Village!” Chen Wang pointed at a tiled building. It looked to be a little bit more thriving than Chen Family Village to Yue Zhong.

Chen Wang looked at Zhang Family Village with a little fear and said: “Zhang Family Village and our village aren’t the same. Their village is a large one with over three hundred people. After Z-Age, the large majority of three hundred people turned into man eating monsters. Among the man eating monsters were some extremely fast ones, they could compare with the wild wolves in the mountains.”

The Chen Family Village is a small one, relatively closed off. They had never heard of movies and games like Resident Evil. Because of this they called the zombies man eating monsters.

After running out of food, the Chen Family Village already thought of plundering Zhang Family Village. Only, they were utterly defeated by the evolved S1 zombie. If the S1 didn't stop to eat a fresh meal, no one from the search party would have escaped.

“Follow me!” Yue Zhong looked at the Zhang Family Village, and plainly spoke. He brought along White Bones and Greenie towards the village. Three hundred zombies were already beneath them, even if his body is injured.

“Go!”

Seeing Yue Zhong stab towards the Zhang Family Village, Chen Wang and the other young men filled up with a manly spirit, and they closely followed behind Yue Zhong.

Arriving at the village entrance, Yue Zhong reached in his bag and felt for a type 54 pistol, and he opened fire at the village.

A gunshot boomed, the motionless zombies all turned their heads, and they began to wobble over towards their location.

There were three S1 agility type zombies rushing out of the village towards Yue Zhong.

Chen Wang saw the three S1 zombies running out of the village, and his expression became extremely pale. His body slightly quivered, and he said to Yue Zhong: “Captain Yue!! Those are the quick man eating monsters!!”

Chen Wang was a member of the original search party. He had personally seen the S1 kill three of his team members. One person was eaten on the spot, and two others were slashed. They were infected and became zombies. The wailing sound of the man being eaten still haunted Chen Wang.

The complexions of Chen Nian, Niuchao, Zhaoxing, and Sunye all changed upon seeing the S1. They practically wanted to turn around and flee.

“Take them out White Bones!” Yue Zhong saw the three S1

zombies rush over, and he commanded to White Bones. At the present level of White Bones, he could easily drop three S1s.

# Chapter 123: Respect and Fear

---

Receiving Yue Zhong's command, White Bones's eyes flashed with a devil flame. Speeding forward, he rushed like a general carrying the battle flag towards the three S1s.

White Bones shot out his power from a range of one hundred meters, rushing over in a few seconds. It slashed the axe, cutting the S1 at the waist. The black intestines, organs, and dirty blood splattered out onto the ground.

Without stopping to rest, White Bones continued rushing forward. He dashed to the remaining two S1s and waived his axe, like a whirlwind it sent the heads of the remaining two S1s flying.

Chen Wang and the others watched the massacre of the S1s by White Bones in a daze. Their eyes filled with shock and disbelief. The search party was ruined by the man eating monsters, yet they were easily slaughtered like little chicks in the hands of White Bones. This was something they momentarily couldn't take in.

Chen Wang looked at White Bones a little excited and asked Yue Zhong: "Captain Yue. Who is that person? So severe!!"

Chen Wang already knew White Bones was severe from when it took out the two guards of Chen Family Village, but he didn't think it was that awesome.

"Its name is White Bones. Let's go!" Yue Zhong dully said. He picked up the life coins and a white treasure box dropped by the three S1s, then he took large strides into Zhang Family Village.

The drops from the the lower level zombies became more and more rare over time.

Chen Wang and the rest watched Yue Zhong from behind even though it was somewhat terrifying, but they still followed behind.

The zombies in Zhang Family Village all started to bubble out at this time, and they formed into a group of several hundred



zombies.

“So many man eating monsters!” Chen Wang and the other young men momentarily passionately followed Yue Zhong. But seeing hundreds of zombies, their expressions became unbelievably pale, and they couldn’t control their legs from quivering.

The oppressive power between one zombie and hundreds is completely different. That many zombies could completely tear apart Chen Family Village, don’t even mention that there are only six of them.

Yue Zhong looked towards the zombie group approaching them. He raised his gun, and the head of zombie about seventy meters away recieved several bloody holes, then it powerlessly fell to the ground.

White Bones turned into a fierce Slaughter God. It shot into several zombies and continuously waived its axe like a whirlwind. All of the zombies engulfed by the whirlwind had their heads sent flying, or their bodies were chopped into two pieces. The path it rushed along gave rise to a terrifying rainfall of heads and limbs.

Yue Zhong followed behind White Bones, both his eyes undisturbed. He held a type 54 pistol and casually fired, headshotting the zombies that wandered over one by one.

Greenie’s eyes flashed with a fierce light as it looked at the zombies. It flapped its wings and stomped with both legs, rushing forward. As soon as it reached the zombie group, its sharp beak pecked like lightning, easily cracking open the skull of a zombie.

The zombies circled around. Greenie flapped its wings, and immediately sent them flying. Although Greenie was only a young bird, but it is a mutated beast, and its fierceness is unmatched. The zombies couldn’t even slash through its outer feathers.

Yue Zhong, White Bones, and Greenie were truly a ferocious

group without peer. The zombies were cleared out by them as soon as they blocked the road circled around. Yue Zhong brought Chen Wang and the others through the pile of corpses. They easily cleared out the zombies blocking the path, and they easily started to move their way out of Zhang Family Village.

The expressions of Chen Wang and the others were excited and in a trance after leaving the Zhang Family Village. How could they dare believe the town defended by hundreds of zombies could be so easily pierced through by Yue Zhong and his companions.

“So severe!!” Chen Wang looked at Yue Zhong from behind, and his eyes flashed with worship and respect. This is the first time he had seen a fierce person like Yue Zhong. He at first didn’t accept being thrown to Yue Zhong by his father, but now, all of the disobedience completely disappeared.

Yue Zhong only pierced through the village. He didn’t completely clear it out. There were still several zombies left in the village after he left. Those zombies could act as a natural protective screen, making outsiders unable to enter the Chen Family Village.

There were thirty young and strong hunters among the dozens of people in Chen Family Village. After going through a little training and actual combat, they could become elite soldiers.

Under the guidance of Chen Wang, Yue Zhong passed through Mudfish ravine. They passed through several small roads until they finally arrived at a cement road.

Walking along, Yue Zhong asked Chen Wang at his side: “How far to reach Stone Horse Village!”

“There should still be five kilometers!” Chen Wang approximated then said to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong inspected his surroundings and then continued forward.

At this time, a gunshot came from a side road. Yue Zhong’s brow

wrinkled. He looked in that direction and asked: “What is over there?”

Chen Wang looked and said: “That side is Big Cliff Village! Stone Horse Village isn’t far past Big Cliff Village.”

“Let’s take a look!” Yue Zhong immediately walked towards the direction of the gunshot.

Yue Zhong saw a bus, a hummer, and a jeep struggling forward among a crowd of hundreds of zombies at the entrance to Big Cliff Village.

Busses, Hummers, and Jeeps are vehicles that can easily send zombies flying. But the zombie crowd was too large. The three large vehicles were caught up in the swarm, and they couldn’t move. There was a pile of zombies steamrolled behind them, but a large amount of zombies were still circled around flapping their arms at the doors. The vehicles started to sway from being hit by the bodies, and their movement speed became very slow.

If no one assisted, the survivors in those three vehicles would end up surrounded, ripped apart, and then chewed up.

Yue Zhong saw the sight, then he said to Chen Wang and the others: “You guys wait here. I’ll go save them.”

Chen Wang and the five others looked at each other, and then nodded. Rushing into the zombies with their strength would only be a path to death.

Yue Zhong strode towards the zombie swarm. He raised a gun after arriving within one hundred meters, and then he placed a bullet between the eyebrows of a zombie.

Hearing the gunshot, they sensed a person. The group surrounding the three vehicles immediately started to wobble towards Yue Zhong.

“Take them out!” Yue Zhong commanded to White Bones and Greenie at his side.

White Bones and Greenie received the command, and they immediately rushed towards the crowd of zombies.

# Chapter 124

---

White Bones and Greenie rushed into the zombie group, immediately creating a bloody flesh storm. No zombie could stop the axe of White Bones and the peck of Greenie. The slow moving ordinary zombies were massacred under the cooperation of the two.

The group of zombies surrounding the three vehicles immediately started towards White Bones and Greenie after sensing the activity. The pressure on the vehicles alleviated quite a lot.

The three vehicles got a little wiggle room, and they immediately used the max horsepower to rush out of the zombie crowd, sending the zombies flying one after another.

The three vehicles rushed forward without any reduction in speed. Along the way, they ruthlessly struck dozens of zombies in the process of fighting White Bones.

White Bones holding his axe also couldn't stop the bus. He was sent flying along with six other zombies to the side.

The hummer also ruthlessly struck into Greenie fighting on the highway.

Greenie let out a cry as it was hit by the truck, and it was sent flying to the side.

“Greenie!!” Seeing the sight, Yue Zhong's eyes both became red, and he let out a roar. Yue Zhong never thought the people he was saving would be so ruthless. In order to flee a little faster, they unexpectedly struck and sent flying the people saving them.

They didn't stop after sending Greenie and White Bones flying. The three vehicles hastily fled on the road, and at the same time they ruthlessly struck out towards the center of the road where Yue Zhong was standing.

“A group of scum!” Yue Zhong enraged in his heart. He raised a finger and pointed. A magic spell started, and a fireball boomed into a wheel on the bus.

There was a loud explosion. The bus was knocked to the side in flames, colliding to the side of the road.

The other two vehicles even more fiercely charged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed with a cold light. He started moving using his high level speed, slightly shifting his body, he passed the two vehicles like a demon.

Just in the instance those two vehicles approached, Yue Zhong started his skill Art of Fear. An enormous awe-inspiring spirit enshrouded everything within ten meters. The Hummer and Jeep were absorbed in the Art of Fear skill, and the drivers inside lost their sense of perception out of fear, crashing into the two sides of the road.

Yue Zhong didn’t stop to look at the survivors in the vehicles. He hastily dashed towards the direction of Greenie.

Three zombies wandered in front of Yue Zhong blocking his path. He pulled out an Imitation Tang Sword, and slash by slash he easily decapitated them.

Yue Zhong came to Greenie’s side, only seeing the eyes of the young green eagle revealing a trace of pain. Greenie flapped its wings and struggled, but it couldn’t stand up.

The Green Feather Eagle is an overlord of the skies. On the ground it can only bully ordinary zombies. Greenie is also a young eagle. Its body already suffered heavy damage after being hit by the Hummer.

Yue Zhong had already leveled up to 26, but if he was hit by a Hummer, he would also receive serious injuries.

Yue Zhong grabbed the life saving flower and water mixture from

his bag and made Greenie drink it.

Greenie finally calmed down after swallowing the life saving flower medicine, but he still didn't stand up. Obviously he suffered serious injury.

On the other side, White Bones stood up from the place he flew towards like nothing happened. White Bones resumed slaughtering the surrounding zombies without the slightest bit of change. It is an organism that cannot die unless his skull is destroyed. The spirit flame within its skull has to be destroyed, otherwise it practically cannot die.

Although White Bones is fierce, and it continuously beheaded zombies, by losing Greenie's important combat ability, it was still encircled by the remaining hundred plus zombies.

In addition another zombie crowd of over a hundred made their way towards Yue Zhong.

"Looks like I will have fight for my life today!" Yue Zhong held an Imitation Tang Sword, and his brows slightly wrinkled. Dodging the two high speed vehicles just now advanced his condition. Yue Zhong's wound had a faint pain. It is hard to say how much pain high level fighting would cause. But at the last moment, he didn't wish to abandon Greenie. After Greenie grows up, it absolutely would become a trump card for Yue Zhong.

Chen Wang and the others watched Yue Zhong walk towards the zombie crowd. They looked at each other in disbelief. If it were dozens of zombies they would rush to Yue Zhong's side and fight. But the stench coming off of the rotting corpses from the hundred plus zombies brought a terrifying power that made the men too afraid to move.

A strong young man about twenty-six or twenty-seven rushed towards Chen Wang and asked: "Chen Wang, what do we do?"

Chen Wang looked at Yue Zhong holding an Imitation Tang

Sword facing a hundred zombies and hesitated a moment. Although he held some respect for Yue Zhong, he couldn't go into a crowd of zombies and risk his life for Yue Zhong.

At this time, there was a rumble of engines. An IFV and a military jeep came over to their direction.

Liu Yan saw Yue Zhong from far away from within the IFV. He excitedly yelled out: "Captain Yue! That is Captain Yue!! Quick go!! Quickly drive over!"

Under the urgings of Liu Yan, that IFV and military jeep formed a small motorcade and rapidly sped towards Yue Zhong. The type 86, 7.62 millimeter machine gun madly opened fire. It formed a bullet screen that cut down zombies like a wheat harvest. Some of the bullets hit the zombies directly in the head, sending their skulls flying.

Five of Yue Zhong's direct evolver subordinates jumped out of the IFV. They held Imitation Tang Swords and went after the zombies shot to the ground. As soon as they entered the zombie crowd, they fought risking their lives to chop at the ordinary zombies.

In addition to the five direct evolver subordinates, five trained soldiers that Yue Zhong had absorbed from Long Hai City also came forward.

Those professional soldiers weren't the same as Yue Zhong's evolver subordinates. They skillfully held their rifles and continuously made headshots, exploding the skulls of zombie after zombie.

Those five subordinates and the five professional soldiers were the elites of the zombie killers. Adding on the combat unit to White Bones, those ordinary zombies didn't stand a chance. They were completely wiped out in a short amount of time.

When the fighting finished, Liu Yan came to Yue Zhong's side,



and his eyes filled with joy: “Captain Yue! As expected you are fine!”

Yue Zhong pointed at the three vehicles and commanded to Liu Yan in a deep voice: “Grab those guys and bring them to me!”

“Yes!” Liu Yan responded. He took men over to the three vehicles and grabbed all of them out.

# Chapter 125: Behead

---

The survivors in the three vehicles were quickly pulled out, detained, and brought before Yue Zhong by Liu Yan.

Yue Zhong forcefully suppressed the rage inside. He carefully examined the detained survivors who bit the hand that feeds.

There were a total of twenty-five detained survivors, fourteen males and eleven females.

Among the women there was one age twenty-one or twenty-two. She wore a white dress. Her figure was well developed, with a beautiful pair of legs, and an outstandingly delicate appearance. At the same time she carried a self confident and graceful temperament that was beautiful and moving to the extreme.

Yue Zhong's subordinates all often stole glances at her. Given before Z-Age, this type of woman would have been a top class beauty. After Z-Age, several beautiful women had been ruined by men. Their temperaments had been broken and scattered. This type of woman with self confidence and grace is an extremely rare sight.

"Fuck, what type of people are you? Actually doing that to me. Do you know who I am?" A young man wearing all international name brand clothes stared at the members who detained him and scolded.

Yue Zhong walked over to the young man and said ice-cold: "Oh! I want to know, who are you?"

A middle-aged man wearing glasses who had the air of a government official walked over to Yue Zhong. He bureaucratically said: "Young comrade. Who is your leader? Let him come meet me. I am the Long Hai City deputy mayor Li Yuan. This person is Ma Ming, the son of Minister Ma of the National Development and Reform Commission."

Li Yuan saw Yue Zhong's group had an IFV. Only the military could have this type of weapon. In addition Yue Zhong was short on goods and supplies. Those soldiers also all wore military clothes, so he wanted to find Yue Zhong's leader.

Ma Ming looked at Yue Zhong and put on airs saying: "Do you know who I am? Since you know, make your people protect me and go to Long Hai City Base."

Yue Zhong stared at Ma Ming, this second-generation of the rich. He looked at the group of survivors and coldly said word by word: "Who just gave to order to hit my person and pet?"

Those survivors touched by Yue Zhong's gaze all lowered their heads, not daring to look at him.

Li Yuan heard Yue Zhong's manner of speaking and became upset. His brow wrinkled, and he shouted: "Little comrade, make your leader come see me."

Liu Yan disdainfully cast Li Yuan a glance, and he pridefully said to Liu Yan: "Our leader is standing right before you. This person——Yue Zhong, the head Captain Yue."

All of the survivors eyes fell upon Yue Zhong. The graceful high class beauty also curiously looked upon Yue Zhong.

"Grab the drivers."

Yue Zhong commanded, and two of the team members pulled the three drivers over.

Yue Zhong swept across the three. He spoke extremely ice-cold: "Who made you drive the car and hit my people?"

The three drivers all lowered their heads and remained silent. Our country's traditions are leniency for confessors, keep our heads down, resist being oppressed, and return home for new years. Whoever resists the actions of the government is looking for death. Furthermore, behind the drivers stood stood a representative of the government, deputy mayor Li Yuan, and the

even more impressive son of the minister. Naturally they couldn't publicly sell off their counterparts.

Ma Ming coldly smiled watching the three silent drivers. He then defiantly looked at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong pointed at a driver, he said with extreme coldness: "Very good! You are extremely loyal, you truly have morals and integrity. Xu Wen! Bring me his head. I don't need these ungrateful bastards!"

Two of Yue Zhong's direct subordinate evolvers advanced forward. They dragged the driver out and pressed him to the ground.

The evolver Xu Wen advanced. With cold eyes he held an Imitation Tang Sword and chopped the driver's head off. Blood burst out of the driver's neck. His head filled with astonishment with extremely large eyes rolled on the ground.

"Aaah!!"

Seeing a living person beheaded before them, several survivors let out a shriek, especially the women.

Ma Ming, that second generation rich kid saw the driver getting beheaded and was scared pale. A yellow liquid dripped from his jeans onto the ground.

The well tempered elegant beautiful woman was also scared and lost her color.

A middle-aged man beside Ma Ming had a cold light flash in his eyes. He suddenly rushed towards Yue Zhong. He was a bodyguard found by minister Ma to protect his idiot son, and a retired special forces soldier. He was extremely strong, and at least twenty people had died in his hands.

Yue Zhong calmly stood still, only coldly staring at the middle-aged man.

White Bones eyes flashed with a spirit flame as it stood beside Yue Zhong. It waved an axe like a whirlwind and chopped that nimble soldier at the waist.

The middle-aged man's upper and lower half separated. Blood and organs sprinkled out from the upper half. He still hadn't died, and the upper half painfully struggled in a pool of blood.

Yue Zhong raised a gun and shot a bullet through the brains of the special forces soldier, ending his pain.

Yue Zhong stared at the remaining two survivors and coldly asked: "Who made you drive into my people?"

One driver was scared to incontinence, and pointed at Ma Ming. He knelt before Yue Zhong and repeatedly stuck his head against the ground saying: "It was him!! He made us drive into your people! He said he would take the responsibility after hitting the people. He is the son of a high ranking official. We cannot disobey his commands. Don't kill me! I'm begging you, don't kill me!! I only listened to commands!"

Ma Ming's face turned white, and he scolded: "Fuck! You dare sell me out! Do you believe I won't kill you!"

The other driver's body quivered as he knelt before Yue Zhong. He cried out with a big voice: "Deputy Mayor Li Yuan made me hit the people! I was only listening to commands. I'm begging you don't kill me! Don't kill me!"

The color of Li Yuan's face changed, and he shouted: "Zhang Cheng, don't spit out slander!"

Li Yuan couldn't change too much at this life and death juncture.

Driver Zhang Cheng wept and pointed at a frail man and said to Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong, Captain Yue Zhong it is truly what Mayor Li said! When I was driving I asked him, he said all of the responsibility would be his. If you don't believe you can ask Lei Jian. Lei Jian also heard."

Yue Zhong stared at the thin and weak man, and he coldly said: “Is it true? If you don’t speak the truth with me, then you will die together.”

Under the threat of death, Lei Jian’s body shivered, he and said with a quivering voice: “It’s true! Zhang Chen isn’t lying. It was Mayor Li’s command! I heard!”

Li Yuan’s breath trembled. He stared at his advisors and scolded: “Lei Jian! You ungrateful thing. Do you forget who helped you become promoted to director?”

# Chapter 126: Military Camp Information

---

Yue Zhong coldly said: “Drag those two out!”

Four team members walked over and dragged Ma Ming and Li Yuan out like dogs.

Li Yuan’s face was appalled, and he angrily growled: “This is treason!! Counterrevolutionary!! You are abusing the death penalty, opposing the government, and committing crimes against humanity. You are an enemy to the communist party, the government, and the people. You cannot have a good ending if you continue like this.”

Ma Ming’s expression turned pale. Not repeating his previous arrogance, he cried out: “Don’t kill me!! My father won’t let you go!! My father won’t let you go!!”

Li Yuan and Ma Ming were brought forward by the four personnel and pressed to the ground.

Looking at Li Yuan and Ma Ming being pulled out. That beautiful and graceful woman couldn’t help but glance over at an ordinary looking middle-age man to her side. The man’s eyes constantly flashed with a light like electricity.

Seeing the vision of the beautiful woman, the middle aged man slightly and inaudibly shook his head. Even if he were elite special forces, he couldn’t save Ma Ming being surrounded by so many experts. White Bones, standing at Yue Zhong’s side, made him even more unbelievably scared. Given that he wasn’t certain of the power of White Bones’s axe.

Yue Zhong turned his head and looked at Chen Wang and the others. He tossed the type 54 pistol in his hand over to Chen Wang. He pointed to Ma Ming and commanded: “Execute him!”

Chen Wang grabbed the type 54 pistol. His face turned green, and his white hand couldn’t stop shaking. He had killed zombies, but

he had never killed a person.

Yue Zhong stared at Chen Wang and coldly said: “If you don’t want to, I won’t force you. In the past I promised your father. If he throws all of his villagers in with me, I will let him form a unit. But the combat units under my command must completely follow my orders. Don’t follow my command, and you cannot be combat unit members. You can be laborers.”

Chen Wang’s heart shivered, and his hand continuously trembled.

At this time, Zhaoxing shot forth like an arrow from the side. He grabbed the pistol from Chen Wang and directly pointed it at Ma Ming’s head, then pulled the trigger.

“Don’t kill me.....”

Boom! That arrogant second generation wealth Ma Ming got a bullet between his eyebrows, and he lifelessly fell to the ground.

Zhaoxing looked at Chen Wang and yelled: “Brother Chen! What are you hesitating for? These scum are all ungrateful shameless bastards. If it wasn’t for Captain Yue Zhong, they would all be food for the man eating monsters. Yue Zhong saved them, and they still wanted to kill Captain Yue. These type of people are fine to kill!”

Yue Zhong carefully looked at Zhaoxing. He discovered this was the person who came to Chen Ning’s household in the past to ask for help saving Chen Shitou. He walked over to Zhaoxing and clapped his shoulder: “Very good! You strictly executed my command. From now on, you are the team leader of the seventh small unit.”

Zhaoxing straightened out his chest. Even if he didn’t know the weight of the seventh small team leader, but he felt extremely honored to acquire Yue Zhong’s praise.

Along the road, Zhaoxing was already completely impressed by Yue Zhong’s manner. Young and impulsive, he was also extremely



angry at Ma Ming's group of survivor's ungrateful behavior.

Yue Zhong took the pistol from Zhaoxing's hand and walked over to Li Yuan.

Li Yuan looked at Yue Zhong and begged: "Don't kill me!! I'm begging you, don't kill me! You are committing a crime!!"

"Go die!" Yue Zhong's vision cold, he placed the gun on top of Li Yuan's brow, and opened up a bloody hole.

Li Yuan's eyes were full of regret and fear. His corpse powerlessly collapsed to the ground.

After dropping Li Yuan, Yue Zhong walked over to the twenty plus survivors and coldly said: "I am Yue Zhong. From now on, you are my spoils of war. The men will do hard labor. The women will wait for their arrangements."

Although Yue Zhong killed the primary evil, but he didn't have any good feelings towards these survivors that he rescued. He needs to set up a survivor base in Stone Horse City, and that requires a large amount of hard labor. He planned to make these men become laborers.

One driver beheaded, one person chopped at the waist, and two people executed by the gun. All of the survivors coldly shivered under these terrifying sights. They looked upon Yue Zhong with eyes full of fear, and they didn't dare say anything.

At this time, the elegant beautiful woman with a pleasant temperament said in a soft voice: "Wait a moment!"

Yue Zhong's brow wrinkled. He looked at that woman and coldly said: "Do you have a problem? Don't speak rubbish."

The woman although refined, graceful, and uncommonly beautiful. Yue Zhong had extreme loathing towards this group of ungrateful survivors, carrying over to not having any good feelings towards her.

Xia Yue directly looked at Yue Zhong and slowly said: “Hello, I am Xia Yue. Hitting you and your companions had nothing to do with us. It was all Li Yuan and Ma Ming. Could you please give us our freedom?”

Yue Zhong stared at Xia Yue and coldly laughed: “No! You are my spoils of war. If you want freedom, give me your goods in exchange. I can let you freely depart if you give me enough guns, ammunition, food, and medicine. Otherwise you must honestly listen and obey my arrangements.”

Xia Ming and these survivors didn’t know the cruelty of the outside world. They wholeheartedly wanted to separate from the control of a boss like Yue Zhong. They didn’t suffer the Long Hai City survivor Z-Age torment.

Xia Yue pointed at her bodyguard and said: “I know the location of a military camp nearby. There should certainly be several weapons there. Can we exchange the location of that military camp for our freedom?”

Yue Zhong looked at Xia Yue, and he mockingly laughed: “You may! But that camp must be nearby. If it is the military base near Qingyuan county, then don’t even mention it.”

The outside world is extremely cruel. Even the Long Hai City survivor base controlled by the government is short on goods and supplies, and people are as cheap as ants. A beautiful woman like Xia Yue going to Long Hai City survivor base is like a sheep going into the mouth of a tiger. But since the counterpart wished to use a military base as exchange, Yue Zhong wished to let them leave. As far as his power goes, the importance of guns, ammunition, and military equipment far exceeds the that of a beautiful woman.

The addresses of various military posts are secret. They are classified military secrets. They are only discovered accidentally when local people pass by. Apart from this, only high level military members or related personnel know their locations. Yue Zhong, an

ordinary city resident, basically had no clue as to the addresses of these military locations. Otherwise, he would have taken people there earlier to capture it.

Each military base represented a large amount of guns and ammunition. Yue Zhongs military power could change overnight upon capturing one.

Xia Yue pointed to the west and said to Yue Zhong: “There is a military base ten miles west. There was an infantry battalion stationed there in the past.....”

## Chapter 127: Long Hai City Base Guests

---

Yue Zhong cut off Xia Yue's words: "Don't say anymore! First come back with us. Wait for us to find the base, and we will release you two. We will guarantee your safety and property until this happens, and we will provide the minimum living guarantees."

Yue Zhong was currently seriously hurt. Even if his body far exceeded a normal person's, he couldn't lead this group of soldiers to recover a military base. The current priority is to recover his condition. He could slowly kill hundreds of ordinary zombies if he could recover to his peak fighting strength.

With the cooperation of White Bones and five evolvers, Greenie was able to be moved on top of a Hummer.

The bus without a wheel was emptied of oil and abandoned. Apart from Xia Yue and her bodyguard, all of the survivors could only walk under the observation of the IFV. They headed in the direction of Stone Horse Village.

With a face full of worry, Lu Wen rushed into Yue Zhong's embrace as soon as he returned to the villa. With happy tears she sobbed: "Big brother Yue Zhong, you are okay!"

Guo Yu watched Yue Zhong embrace Lu Wen with envy. She also wanted to rush into Yue Zhong's embrace at the first moment, but her reason suppressed her impulses.

"I'm okay! Wen Wen, come with me!" Yue Zhong lightly patted Lu Wen's back, and he lead Lu Wen out of the villa.

Yue Zhong pointed at the injured Greenie who had no vitality and said to Lu Wen: "Quickly use the Minor Injury Healing skill to help it recover."

Lu Wen curiously looked at Greenie and walked over to it.

The green feather eagle is still a type of fierce violent overbearing flesh eating mutated beast. Yue Zhong couldn't have tamed

Greenie if it wasn't a young bird. Greenie was only close with Yue Zhong. Its eyes flashed with a fierce light as soon as Lu Wen approached it. Its beak immediately pecked towards Lu Wen.

Yue Zhong keenly felt Greenie's murderous intent, and he hastily shouted: "Stop! This is one of your female masters. You must not harm her!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's command, the murderous intent in Greenie's eyes departed, and it didn't start any attacks towards Lu Wen.

Lu Wen cautiously walked towards Greenie's side. She started the skill Minor Injury Healing and helped Greenie recover from its injuries.

The injuries that Greenie suffered all started to quickly recover under the Minor Injury Healing skill of Lu Wen. Its vision towards Lu Wen became softer. Although mutated beasts couldn't speak, their intelligence was ten times greater than animals before Z-Age. It could differentiate who was good and bad.

The natural healing ability of Greenie was originally strong due to being a mutated beast. In addition Yue Zhong used life saving flower medicine on its wounds right after being injured. After using the Minor Injury Healing Skill, it quickly recovered the greater half. Greenie flapped its wings and stood up.

Lu Wen looked at Greenie. She caressed its bright and clean tail feathers and asked Yue Zhong: "Big brother Yue Zhong! What is this big bird's name?"

Lu Wen really liked this mighty appearing young green feather eagle. This made her think of the big bird of prey in The Return of the Condor Heroes. Although they were two different animals, but she didn't know how much mightier the green feather eagle is than the one on tv.

Yue Zhong smiled: "It is named Greenie!"

“Why is it called Greenie?”

“I saw its tail feathers were green so I decided to call it Greenie.”

“Big brother Yue Zhong, you really have no standards for your names!”

“Haha! Cough cough!”

Yue Zhong laughed, and suddenly his brows wrinkled, coughing due to the wound in his right chest.

“Big brother Yue Zhong, why are you? Are your wounds still not good? Quick go back and rest!” Lu Wen looked at Yue Zhong, and her face changed. She hastily walked to Yue Zhong’s side deeply troubled. She remember Yue Zhong being pierced through and grabbed by the green feather eagle.

Guo Yu also walked over, her big beautiful eyes looked at Yue Zhong with tenderness overflowing.

Yue Zhong looked at Guo Yu. He reached out a hand and stroked her hair. He then returned to his room and rested.

Yue Zhong returned to presiding over Stone Horse Village. Chi Yang took two elite small combat units and an IFV and slaughtered his way to Chen Family Village. He rescued the survivors there and brought them all back.

Stone Horse Village is a small town. The town didn’t have any heavy manufacturing, yet it had several blacksmith shops. Yue Zhong rescued three blacksmith survivors when he recaptured Stone Horse Village. Yue Zhong made those blacksmiths take on apprentices, and they started manufacturing cold weapons like large knives, shields, and crossbows.

Stone Horse Village held several thousands of people before Z-Age. The small town held a large amount of foodstuffs and non-staple foods. Although Yue Zhong’s pressure to find food was still there, it decreased a lot after finding the foodstuffs.

After recovering a large amount of staple and non-staple foods, Yue Zhong increased the treatment and rewards for his incorporated personnel. The ordinary survivors also received a steamed bun in addition to three bowls of diluted gruel each day.

Yue Zhong's policy is don't labor don't eat. Providing relief food didn't let the survivors starve to death, but it also didn't let them eat until they were satisfied.

There was also a small scale coal power plant in the little town. A large amount of coal had been accumulated inside. They could provide power to the whole village for two months if they used it to maximum capacity.

A hundred men used the steel and cement materials in the village to build a crude city wall at the front of the village. The city wall didn't have the least bit of usefulness in modern warfare, but it was extremely useful for dealing with zombies.

Not every man has the guts to go to the front line and kill zombies with Yue Zhong. The majority of those that didn't wish to go to the front lines and fight zombies helped build the city wall. Each person could eat to their full and receive a steamed bun as wages when they worked on building the wall. This type of wages already made the survivors who were so hungry that they didn't look human extremely satisfied.

A large amount of men and women began to organize and fish in the two Lei river tributaries. They were able to obtain a large amount of freshwater fish each day. There were also some men and women who went to the base of the mountain behind the village and foraged for edible plants.

Yue Zhong didn't kill the two drivers that tried to hit him. He used them as lab rats to test if the wild plants in the mountains were poisonous. After eating two dozen various plants, the two drivers finally died from poison. But their sacrifice allowed them to create a diagram for tens of edible plants. This allowed Yue

Zhong and his team members to eat fresh vegetables.

Yue Zhong's injuries completely recovered under the constant treatment of Lu Wen after two days.

An unexpected guest was brought before Yue Zhong by his team members during the time he was getting ready to go capture the military base.

An extremely refined thirty year plus year old middle aged man wearing glasses reasonably looked at Yue Zhong and said: "You are Yue Zhong! I am Kong Tao of the Long Hai City government! I have come here to represent the Long Hai City government and negotiate with you!"



# Chapter 128: H1

---

Kong Tao looked slightly haughty at Yue Zong and boldly said: “The Long Hai City government can give you amnesty for murdering policemen and the surprise attack of the base at that time. But you must comply with the following points. First, you must return the IFVs and give all types of weapons obtained through various channels to Long Hai City government. Second, dissolve your illegal military and completely integrate into the army. Third, bring all of the survivors, and goods and materials to Long Hai City survivor base.

So long as you do these three things, the Long Hai City government will provide amnesty for your offenses. You may also retain your personal property, and you and your family members may live in the specialty region. You will be provided as a Deputy Cadre in the specialty region.”

Yue Zhong is only a bandit leader in Kong Tao’s eyes. Furthermore, they surveyed the survivors who came in contact with Yue Zhong at Long Hai City, and they inferred Yue Zhong had an idea to join Long Hai City government. They decided to use this method to recruit him. Without expending a single soldier they could disarm Yue Zhong and bring him under their command.

Yue Zhong coldly looked at Kong Tao. A matchless spirit bubbled out from his body with mighty pressure. Kong Tao, pressured, was practically unable to breathe and slightly lowered his head.

Yue Zhong directly gave Kong Tao a notice to leave: “Go back and tell your leaders. I cannot accept a single condition. If you want to grab me, then send people to come and grab me! Please return!”

Kong Tao’s face changed, and he shouted: “Yue Zhong, do you know the nature of your current behavior? Behavior that opposes the government and society. You are an enemy of the communist

party and the people. You are a bandit. If you insist, then you will ultimately go down in history as a disgrace.”

Yue Zhong looked at the political official Kong Tao acting like this a little perplexed: “Scram! Expel him!”

Two personnel members grabbed Kong Tao according to Yue Zhong’s command.

Yue Zhong suddenly changed his idea and said: “Wait a moment. Lock him up. Send two people to guard him. Do not permit him to take one step outside the room.”

Kong Tao’s face changed. He shouted while being dragged by the two men: “Yue Zhong, what are you thinking? Right now you are opposing the People’s.....”

Chi Yang asked from the side: “What are you planning to do?”

Yue Zhong said in a deep voice: “I’m afraid this situation can’t be good. We must enter the field with them. We must obtain stronger power and then act. I will take people to capture the armory. Chi Yang, you make Xiao Ming lead people to watch over Long Hai City survivor base. Have them come back and report if they even disturb a blade of grass.”

Yue Zhong found sixty motorcycles in Stone Horse Village. The large majority of those motorcycles were given to the army and Chi Yang’s small group, Liu Yan’s armored unit, and Da Gouzi small group. Although Xiao Ming wasn’t outstanding when they captured Stone Horse Village, but he is an extremely capable soldier.

Chi Yang nodded, then turned and left.

———

“Over there is the military base I talked about.”

Xia Yue pointed at a far away military base and spoke to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked towards the place Xia Yue pointed. There was indeed a lonely military camp set up on the outskirts. Zombie after zombie wearing military clothes stood nearby wandering around.

Yue Zhong stared at the distant military camp, and he said to subordinates: "I will go first. You all stay here and await orders!"

Yue Zhong and White Bones strode towards the military camp.

Yue Zhong broke open a bag of blood and sprinkled it on White Bones's body.

White Bones rushed like an arrow towards the military camp filled with blood. It rushed into the middle of the group in a few flashes. Like entering unmanned territory, it beheaded those zombies wearing military clothes.

The zombies of the whole camp started to circle around, attracted by the bloody body of White Bones.

Yue Zhong strode behind White Bones. He held a type 03 rifle and frequently took shots, headshotting zombie after zombie. Fighting in close combat uses up an extremely large amount of stamina. Yue Zhong must conserve his stamina when he faces tens or even hundreds of zombies and use a gun to fight. Furthermore, his enemies were not only zombies, but men as well. Because of this he never stopped training his shooting skills.

Those slow moving zombies were the best target practice for Yue Zhong. His gun technique could continuously improve as long as he constantly used live ammunition .

There were more and more zombies. White Bones beheaded zombies with his axe and retreated backwards at the same time. Those zombies couldn't stop an attack from White Bones, but the amount was too large. White Bones could be completely surrounded unable to move if it became encircled.

Zombie after zombie continuously fell to the ground with crisp gunshots. Zombie head after head was sent flying as soon as they

entered within the attack range of White Bones. In a short moment over fifty zombies were killed with their combined power.

Xia Yue watched Yue Zhong and White Bones easily hunt those zombies from far away. Her heart filled full of fearful thoughts: “How severe!”

Suddenly, a green colored S2 jumped high into the sky from the crowd of zombies, rushing towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong immediately raised a gun to the green S2 and continuously shot.

The S2 set off a danger response as soon as Yue Zhong raised his gun to aim at it. It kicked a little, and moved like the wind to the side, making Yue Zhong’s bullets completely miss.

The S2’s speed was quick like a blast. In a few flashes it dashed before Yue Zhong. It fiercely clawed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed a cold light. He slashed towards the S2 with a sword in his right hand. A cold light flickered, and the rushing S2’s head tumbled to the ground. A large experience orb sunk into his body.

Easily disposing of the S2, Yue Zhong’s type 03 rifle started taking out the heads of the ordinary zombies. At this level, using ordinary zombies to level up is difficult. It is better to use the zombie crowd for moving targets to increase his shooting ability.

As Yue Zhong and White bones were hunting the ordinary zombies, a red colored zombie on top of a large building opened its mouth wide. A fireball boomed out towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong felt a dangerous sensation as soon as the the red zombie opened its mouth. He immediately rolled away. The fireball exploded at his original location, creating a fist sized pit into the ground.

Yue Zhong stood up with his body covered in dust. He made irregular movement while looking at the large building at the same

time. The data for the red zombie immediately entered into his mind.

“Level 30 Flame Infected H1. Possesses the ability to shoot fireballs.”

## Chapter 129: Crash Job

---

“Zombies possess a long distance attack branch?” Yue Zhong’s mind became hazy as he looked upon the flame zombie H1 on top of the large building. The S type zombies were already too much trouble for people. Now there are H type zombies that can attack from long range suddenly appearing. The future for mankind battling zombies became even more difficult.

“I must fully learn its firing rate.” Yue Zhong raised his head and watched the H1 occupying the large building in the military camp. He longer moving irregularly and raised his gun at the camp entrance, fighting the ordinary zombies together with White Bones.

The flame type H1 zombie honestly laid down on its stomach and watched Yue Zhong from the roof of the high building. It only had attack instinct, not the slightest bit of hidden consciousness. This is the greatest weakness of the zombies.

Yue Zhong and White Bones fought and moved backwards at the same time. There were over a hundred corpses on the street of the military camp after fifteen minutes. Only the whole camp had over eight hundred zombies. Yue Zhong and White Bones killed so many zombies, but the amount of zombies didn’t seem to lessen. The stamina of Yue Zhong and White Bones started to continuously drop.

White Bones also has stamina restrictions. It can no longer continue fighting if its stamina is used up. Moreover, the zombies stamina is never ending and daunting.

Yue Zhong felt a warning in his mind fifteen minutes after the flame zombie shot the first fireball. He immediately used all of his strength to move to the side.

“The firing rate is one every fifteen minutes! Not bad!” Yue Zhong calmly analyzed the flame zombie’s firing rate and slightly

relaxed a breath. If that flame zombie's firing rate was too frequent, then tens of flame zombies could form a terrifying small sized artillery unit.

After testing out the flame zombie shooting rate, Yue Zhong raised his rifle into the sky and gave the three shot attack signal.

Two IFVs, three hummers, and a Humvee mounted with a heavy machine gun formed a motorcade along the road and traveled over from far away.

[TL: The Humvee is actually named the "Dong Feng Ferocious Warrior" It is an off road military vehicle made by the Dong Feng off-road limited liability company. This is the same company that makes the Dong Feng truck. As such, I will just start calling the Dong Feng trucks semi-trucks or large trucks depending on the context. They appear to just be semi-trucks made by the Dong Feng Company. I wasn't sure what a "Dong Feng" truck was earlier or else I would have just changed it a long time ago.]

Personel from the rapidly approaching motorcade carried all types of guns and madly spread fire at the large amount of zombies that had been coerced to leave the camp.

The two IFVs with the two type 86, 7.62 millimeter machine guns and the mounted type 67 heavy machine gun on the Humvee madly breathed flames.

The interwoven fire created a terrifying bullet screen. They zombies enshrouded in the screen of bullets were totally torn apart.

There were tens of L1s in the crowd of zombies. Those evolved L1 zombies couldn't stop the bullet screen, and they were torn apart one by one.

"Cease fire! Close combat unit approach!" Yue Zhong gave the command after seeing a large slice of zombies being taken out by the bullets.

It is hard to completely wipe out zombies relying only on bullets. After being baptised in the bullets, some zombies still didn't die. Their bodies ragged, the combat ability quickly descended, and they are unable to form a zombie crowd state. They are basically no match for the close combat unit wearing the snake skin armor.

After a battle cry, ten close combat unit members charged into the crowd of zombies while holding Imitation Tang Swords. They madly slashed at those zombies who had fallen to the ground and were attempting to climb back up. Those close combat unit member had killed a large amount of zombies. They had all leveled up to about level 7. They mainly leveled up power and stamina. Using the Imitation Tang Swords, they cut through those zombies as easily as chopping leeks.

A large of amount of zombies fell in the hands of those ten close combat unit members.

Yue Zhong and White Bones rushed together into the depths of the military camp. The H1 is a target they must take out. The precious close combat unit could suffer casualties if the H1 fires another shot.

Yue Zhong moved with all his strength. His speed surpassed the hundred meter dash champion before Z-Age. He and White Bones stabbed into the depths of the military camp like a sharp sword.

Those zombies blocking Yue Zhong's path were beheaded, completely unable to hinder him.

White Bones extremely violently slashed its axe on the other side, sending the heads of the zombies blocking the road flying one by one. A large amount of zombie heads flew into the sky along the way, an extremely bloody sight.

A L2 appeared before their eyes as soon as Yue Zhong and White Bones dashed into the large military building. A huge fist ruthlessly attacked towards Yue Zhong.



Yue Zhong's body slightly shifted, drilling past the side of the L2.

The L2's fist heavily exploded onto White Bone's body sending it flying several meters away.

Yue Zhong circled around the rear of the L2. He activated the skill Devil Flame. A devil flame rose from his right hand, and he slashed at the L2's large thigh. The scarlet red devil flame turned the right thigh into ash as soon as Yue Zhong made contact, splitting it into two sections.

The L2 lost its balance for a moment after losing the right leg and dropped towards the ground.

Yue Zhong chopped at the back of the L2 with a sword, making sure the L2 dropped all the way to the ground.

He seized the opportunity, and used a foot to ruthlessly step on the L2's skull. The devil flame activated and burned the L2 into a crisp.

"Congratulations, you leveled up to level 27. You have attained two stat points."

A large experience orb sunk into Yue Zhong as soon as the L2 died. He leveled up once again.

"Increase stamina and agility!"

Yue Zhong made his choice. Speed and Stamina is the current direction of his evolution choice.

Yue Zhong placed the drops of the L2 into his storage ring. He quickly rushed towards the roof.

Yue Zhong finally rushed to the roof after killing eight ordinary zombies and three L1s along the way.

A lonely red body stood there on the roof. The H1 zombie's head was twice as big as a normal person's head. It had a small body with four bulky limbs.

Sensing Yue Zhong's arrival, the H1s four limbs began to act, and

it rushed towards Yue Zhong.

“The speed is somewhat faster than an ordinary person’s.” Yue Zhong calmly evaluated as he watched the H1 rush over.

The H1 zoomed to Yue Zhong’s side. I immediately opened its devouring mouth and bit towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong’s speed had been leveled up several times. The H1 basically couldn’t compare. His body slightly shifted and avoided the charge attack of the H1. He pressed onto the H1 without much difficulty and firmly stopped its assault.

“Only has a biting close combat attack. The assault power is only at the level of an ordinary adult! In other words, apart from being able to shoot extremely dangerous fireballs from long range, its close combat ability is weak.” Yue Zhong quickly made an evaluation, and then he slashed at the head of the H1.

With a flash of the sword, the H1 was easily beheaded by Yue Zhong. It was even weaker than the body of an S1.

# Chapter 130: Capturing the Military Base

---

The H1's body fell to the ground. A large experience orb sunk into Yue Zhong's body. A skill book, a green treasure box, and 100 life coins dropped from its body.

Yue Zhong immediately rushed downstairs after putting those things into the storage ring. The battle still hadn't finished, and he must return to the fight right away.

Yue Zhong rushed downstairs. White Bones followed behind, and they quickly killed twenty zombies along the way as they rush to the camp entrance.

Yue Zhong saw the ten close combat unit members working in groups of two. They provided mutual support and deftly waived the Imitation Tang Swords, beheading zombie after zombie.

Behind the close combat unit, ten of Yue Zhong's expert marksmen aimed and shot at the zombies from far away. Zombie after zombie was headshot and dropped under their precision fire.

The two IFVs and the Humvee brought up the rear without firing. Ammo is an extremely precious thing for Yue Zhong's power. He didn't have the ability to recover bullets. Before he can manufacture bullets, it is better to conserve artillery fire and ammo. Yue Zhong wasn't willing to use the heavy ammunition unless they came across a zombie crowd. That would be a waste.

The young bird Greenie also took part in the battle. It rushed into the zombie crowd. It cracked open zombie skulls with each peck, then it it pecked and gobbled up the zombies. It has an enormous immunity to the zombies carrying the infection. It even somewhat likes eating zombies.

There were still twenty ordinary team members that used rifles to continuously fire into the mass of zombies.

Yue Zhong quickly cut towards the zombies blocking the road

and combined with the close combat unit after joining the battle. They formed a mad beheading unit that cut apart the zombies blocking the road.

The fierce battle continued for more than an hour. The large portion of zombies was finally cleared out by Yue Zhong and the men he brought.

Group after group filled into the buildings. They started to clear out the scattered zombies in the camp.

“Score! This time we scored! Yue Zhong entered into the camp. He saw ten Humvees mounted with type 86, 7.62 millimeter machine guns lined up. His heart immediately filled with joy.

There were two IFVs and two machine gun vehicles mounted with dual 14.5 millimeter anti-aircraft machine guns parked there apart from the ten Humvees.

[A 14.5 millimeter anti-aircraft machine gun vehicle looks something like this.]

As soon as the armored vehicles entered Yue Zhong’s hand, his troop flexibility and and firepower both received an enormous increase.

Liu Yan, who was in charge of acquisitions, rushed out of a storehouse. He excitedly yelled to Yue Zhong: “Captain Yue!! Captain Yue!! This time we scored!! We scored! Come quick!”

Yue Zhong heard Liu Yan’s words, and he zoomed over towards Liu Yan. He quickly entered that storehouse.

“Score!! A huge score!!” Yue Zhong saw the storehouse weapons and equipment as soon as he entered the storehouse, and he became endlessly excited.

A type 95 rifle with 5.8mm rounds, mortars, multipurpose bayonets, grenade launchers, type 95 machine guns with 5.8mm rounds, type 89 heavy machine guns with 12.7mm rounds, 35mm type 87 automatic grenade launchers, two dual mounted 14.5mm

anti-aircraft machine guns, and type 40 type 8 rocket launchers.

A large amount of standard PLA weapons were in the storehouse, causing the onlookers to be dazzled, pulling at their hearts. The equipment here was enough for Yue Zhong's to arm a Battalion.

There was a large amount of ammunition, explosive artillery shells, grenades, hand grenades, and nine Red Arrow guided anti-tank missiles.

Yue Zhong's army could replace their bird shotguns with cannons using this type of equipment. Their combat ability multiplied, transformed into a regular standing PLA army.

Modern warfare weaponry is extremely important. With these war tools, Yue Zhong doesn't have a trace of fear towards the Long Hai City survivor base military.

Yue Zhong was a little melancholy obtaining these weapons. He didn't have any specialized soldiers to operate this modern weaponry.

Yue Zhong placed the distractions behind him, and he strode out of the military camp: "One step at a time, one step at a time."

Yue Zhong's personnel worked like a bee hive entering into the weapons storehouse and loading everything up on the Semi-trucks for transport. Every team member's face was full of joy. They could become even stronger with weapons and ammunition. Weapons are a must when it comes to dealing with zombies or other people.

Xia Yue and her bodyguard Gao Ying walked over to Yue Zhong's side.

Yue Zhong looked at Xia Yue and dully said: "According to our agreement, from now on you are free. Miss Xia Yue."

Yue Zhong is a person serious about promises. He couldn't eat his words since he promised Xia Yue her freedom.

Xia Yue looked at Yue Zhong and slowly said: “Can I wait a short period of time in Stone Horse Village?”

Stone Horse Village continuously received survivors under Yue Zhong. They already slowly recovered their population. Yue Zhong is also not harsh at all towards survivors. So long as they are willing to work, they can eat their fill. Crime rate in the village was also very low under the patrols of the team members. Once a crime was committed, offenders were sent to the hard labor camps and forced to build the wall. Xia Yue and her bodyguard Gao Ying also planned to stay here a short time. There wouldn't be a problem with safety so long as they stayed.

Yue Zhong looked at Xia Yue and plainly said: “You may, but you aren't a person in our system. You can only receive disaster relief rations. You must solve additional food problems yourself.”

Yue Zhong wouldn't force Xia Yue and Gao Ying to be a part of his system if they didn't want to be, but he couldn't give a large amount of food to these two idle people.

The faces of Xia Yue and Gao Ying changed. They didn't have much food. They were able to eat white rice, fish, and vegetables while they followed Yue Zhong. Those two couldn't bear it if they had to eat that diluted disaster relief gruel.

Xia Yue gnashed her teeth and said to Yue Zhong: “Could you give us a vehicle! Let us go to Long Hai City survivor base on our own?”

Yue Zhong pondered a moment and said: “You may! I will give you a vehicle after we return. I will let you all go to the Long Hai City survivor base on your own.”

Full of the camp's equipment, the armored unit majestically headed towards Stone Horse Village.

The whole Stone Horse Village stirred and boiled as soon as the armored vehicle unit returned. This armored vehicle united

represented formidable power. It could easily tear apart a thousand zombies. It also represented the ability to provide safety, making them even more relaxed.

Yue Zhong gave Xia Yue, Gao Ying, and Kong Tao a Jeep and let them leave Stone Horse Village after returning.

# Chapter 131: Long Hai City Reaction

---

“What? Yue Zhong’s group took over a camp’s worth of equipment? Is this true?” Lei Cheng’s face was ashen as he looked at Kong Tao inside of Long Hai City survivor base.

Kong Tao said: “Absolutely true.”

“Fuck!” Lei Cheng dropped his voice and scolded. His complexion became unsteady.

Lei Cheng had only captured an infantry military base. Those ten IFVs were only left in the camp there for a special reason.

Lei Cheng used up a large amount of ammunition after capturing Qingyuan County. Even though Qinyuan county had an armory and a police station, it wasn’t enough to make up for the large amount of ammunition lost in its capture.

Lei Cheng originally planned to take troops and extinguish Yue Zhong if he refused. At this time he heard Yue Zhong captured a military camp and obtained a Battalion’s worth of equipment, and his idea immediately began to waver. Although he still believed he could take out a bandit like Yue Zhong, but there was a complicated power structure in Qingyuan County. He didn’t want to risk the troops loyal to him in a rash action.

Long Tao said; “Chief Lei Cheng, I still need to go to Mayor Chen and report. I will be leaving.”

Long Tao is one of Lei Cheng’s people in the government. After Z-Age, following the break in commands from the central government, the military leader Lei Cheng began to concoct schemes. He started to permeate his influence into the government. Several government officials were loyal to Lei Cheng. After all, guns exhibit power. Lei Cheng had a battalion of soldiers in his command, and a battalion’s worth of equipment. He is the greatest military power in Qingyuan County.



Qingyuan County also had other large and small power groups, but there was not a group that had the power to contend with Lei Cheng. But if all of the power groups in Qingyuan County combined, then Lei Cheng couldn't oppose them. Several of the troops in his battalion were only ordinary people. He could only trust in the core group that made up two platoons of professional soldiers.

Lei Cheng plainly said: "Go!"

Kong Tao left. Lei Cheng turned to his think tank member Fang Wen and asked: "How do you see it?"

Fang Wen laughed: "Give this matter over to Chen Jianfeng and let him have a headache."

Lei Cheng said with wrinkled brows: "How do we respond if he makes us go circle and destroy Yue Zhong? Cleaning out rebels is a fundamental responsibility of our military."

Fang Wen smiled and said: "Our unit still hasn't finished training. We still need a minimum of two months to finish training. Furthermore, we need a large amount of goods and materials to train. It will be a good time to make Chen Jianfeng give our military more supplies."

Apart from the government and the military working together to capture Qingyuan county, following a long period without any word from the central government, Lei Cheng gave birth to scheming. But the government seized a large amount of goods and materials during this time. Although the military had their own small warehouse, they didn't have as much as the government.

The government was in charge of the armed police and the regular police force, these two martial powers. They also had a large amount of supplies. Relying on their power and supplies, the government could somewhat check and balance the military.

Lei Cheng relaxed his brow and revealed a smile: "Yes!"

---

In the lavishly decorated grand government building in Qingyuan County, a delicate appearing middle aged man with the aura of a scholar looked at Kong Tao with wrinkled brows. He asked in a deep voice: “What? He refused our conditions?”

“Correct!” Kong Tao hesitated a moment, then grit his teeth and said: “Yue Zhong is without order. There is not the slightest bit of the communist party or government over there. It is said he publicly killed government officials. A central party leadership’s son also died at his hands.”

“Impossible. He isn’t like that!” At this time, an unordinarily beautiful woman full of youth standing beside Chen Jianfeng couldn’t help but speak out.

Kong Tao pointed at Xia Yue and Gao Ying beside him, then said to Chen Jianfeng: “Miss Chen Yao, this is what I personally saw and heard. Furthermore, this time two other people who came back with me are these two!”

Xia Yue revealed an elegant and graceful smile to Chen Jianfeng: “Hello uncle Chen! We haven’t seen each other in a long time have we?”

Chen Jianfeng carefully looked at Xia Yue a moment. His face changed saying: “You are Xia Lao’s granddaughter, Xia Yue!”

Xia Lao was one of China’s earliest revolutionaries. The Xia family has enormous influence in China. Chen Jianfeng once paid respects to Xia Lao in the past during New Years. Xia Yue would be like a princess if it were before Z-Age.

Because of this, Xia Yue let out a captivating smile that was bright and extraordinary: “Many thanks for still remembering me uncle.”

Chen Yao couldn’t help but interfere and ask: “Did Yue Zhong truly publicly murdered government officials?”

“You are?” Xia Yue carefully sized up Chen Yao for a moment. Due to her arrogance, she didn’t acknowledge the extremely remarkable beauty standing before her that could rival herself. Furthermore, standing beside Chen Yao, there was a beautiful, valiant looking, and handsome woman with shoulder length black hair, snow white skin, delicate features, and a pair of sharp eyes.

“This is my niece Chen Yao. This is Ji Qingwu!” Chen Jianfeng gave Xia Yue an introduction.

“Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu are both extreme evolvers with level three skills. In addition, Ji Qingwu already broke through level ten. There are only a few evolvers within Long Hai City survivor base whose mastery of skills have become this strong.”

Xia Yue smiled at Chen Yao and directly said: “Chen Yao, Yue Zhong really killed a government official. He also killed the central government Minister Ma’s son.”

Chen Yao’s face turned white hearing these words. Z-Age hadn’t even been around for a year, and the large majority of people still believed in the government. Yue Zhong killing a government official is a large crime, and killing a central government minister’s son is an unpardonable offense.

Xia Yue continued: “Correct. Yue Zhong brought people to capture Stone Horse Village and a military base. At present he should have enough equipment to outfit a battalion.”

Chen Jianfeng’s brows began to wrinkle after hearing Yue Zhong captured Stone Horse Village and a military camp. Like that, Yue Zhong’s combat ability changed into something that couldn’t be ignored. He originally planned to use scare tactics to immediately break apart Yue Zhong’s power. Afterall, the large majority of the military recruits in Long Hai City are a newly enlisted mob, and they hadn’t gone through standard military training.

Chen Jianfeng pondered a moment, then he commanded to Kong Tao: “Kong Tao, take miss Xia Yue and her bodyguard away. Help

her with a specially appointed observer status, and arrange for her to live in the specialty region.”

Original order turned to chaos after Z-Age. Xia Yue was one of the highest grade princesses of the communist party before Z-Age. Chen Jianfeng wanted to deliberately treat her well. Chen Jianfeng arranged for Xia Yue to enter the specialty region to pay respects to his previous relationships, and the other part was to have good karma. After all, the influence of the Xia family wasn't small, who knows what could come of it in the future.

# Chapter 132: Chen Jianfeng

---

Chen Jianfeng immediately massaged his temples in pain after Xia Yue left.

The situation in Long Hai City survivor base was extremely complicated. A large amount of government officials turned into zombies after Z-Age. Li Jianfeng had just gained a steady foothold after establishing the survivor base in Qingyuan County when government official after official came out of the woodwork to try and receive the benefits of victory. Z-Age hadn't been around for a while, and Li Jianfeng could only bite the bullet and accept those officials. After all, they were all government appointed officials. Those officials couldn't fight zombies. Gangs and intrigue began to come into play. The Long Hai City government became extremely fragmented, shaping into small groups.

In addition to the government, the largest power, the military, wasn't as clean and honest as it was right before Z-Age started. Acting as the chief, Lei Cheng expelled dissidents while expanding his forces. Chen Jianfeng already practically had no authority over the military.

There were all kinds of large and small spheres of power among the common folk, and they fought among themselves for goods. There would still be repeated incidents even if they gathered up and severely punished the rapists, murderers, thieves, robbers and such.

Apart from this, a gathering of people is an enormous problem. That is the food problem. They had already increased to over five thousand survivors, and the amount of diluted gruel and goods they consumed was extremely enormous. The soldiers and government works must be guaranteed enough food to eat, and the foodstuffs were freely provided in the specialty region. Under these conditions, the food stores in Long Hai City could only last the next four months at most. This is only if the population doesn't

increase. One should know, every day ten or tens of people would rush over from the nearby villages and join Long Hai City survivor base.

Right before Z-Age started, ordinary people believed in the government more than they believed in themselves.

And now a power hostile to the Long Hai City survivor base appeared nearby Qingyuan County, and that made Chen Jianfeng have an even greater headache.

Chen Jianfeng isn't that type of honest and clean, spotless government official. But he is yet a government official who wishes to do the honest thing if he has the ability. The whole of Long Hai City government is managed and supported through him. He not only had to preside over the government, but he also had to balance out the interests of each side. The enormous pressure made his hair start to turn gray early.

Chen Yao looked at the exhausted Chen Jianfeng. She couldn't help but ask: "Second uncle, let me go have a talk with Yue Zhong! He isn't bad. He escorted me here. Ji Qingwu and I wouldn't be able to meet you if it wasn't for him."

"Yao Yao! People can change! Perhaps he was a good person before. Perhaps he was truly a person who had a heart to join in with the government like you say. But now I'm afraid he already doesn't have those intentions." Chen Jianfeng frowned and slowly spoke.

Chen Jianfeng already knew about Yue Zhong from the mouth of Chen Yao. He had worked in the government for many years and had an extreme understanding towards people.

He conjectured that Yue Zhong really did have a heart to join the Long Hai City survivor base since he hastily arrived to the base after capturing Always Bright Village. But after Yue Zhong captured Stone Horse village, he guessed Yue Zhong already abolished any notion of returning to Long Hai City survivor base.

“I still want to go persuade him! Second uncle, let me go persuade him! If he can join our base, then he certainly will become a good helper.” Chen Yao resolutely spoke. She also didn’t want to see Yue Zhong and her second uncle become enemies.

Chen Jianfeng stared at Chen Yao for a moment. His brow relaxed, and he teased: “Looks like my family’s Yao Yao is already at that age of love.”

Chen Yao’s face reddened, and she became distraught. She couldn’t help but yell out and justify: “Second uncle! What are you saying. I don’t like Yue Zhong! He has a cold nature, and he is boring. He isn’t the slightest bit of a gentleman. How could I like him? I don’t like him in the slightest! Moreover he already has a fifteen year old girlfriend. How could I possibly like that lolicon!”

“Looks like she really likes Yue Zhong.” Chen Jianfeng looked at the flustered Chen Yao. His brows wrinkled and he lightly tapped his ten fingers on the desk. He originally only wanted to make a joke, but he never thought he would expose his niece’s feelings.

Chen Jianfeng highly valued a good match. He absolutely would put a stop to an ordinary college student like Yue Zhong marrying Chen Yao before Z-Age. But right now Yue Zhong had already become a tyrannically strong evolver. He also had an armed force that exceeded a hundred men. To become this level of politician, one needs to attach importance to their partners.

Chen Jianfeng thought for a moment, then hesitantly said to Chen Yao: “Fine! You and Ji Qingwu go together to persuade him. If he wished to come over and join our base, then I will let him and his people establish the fourth special police brigade, and he will be the Captain for that fourth unit.”

After knowing Yue Zhong’s attitude and his power, Chen Jianfeng completely abandoned the idea of completely removing Yue Zhong’s munitions. He will use his official government seal to recruit Yue Zhong under his banner. The special police squadron is

the martial force still under direct control of Chen Jianfeng. The treatment they received was the best. Every ordinary person in the base was envious of them. It doesn't need to be said that the captain of the special police squadrons were objects that would draw attention from everyone.

Chen Yao's eyes lit up: "Deal!"

Chen Jianfeng slightly laughed: "Deal!"

"Ji Qingwu and I will go back to prepare." Chen Yao pulled Ji Qingwu towards the exit of the office and stopped to speak, then they left the office.

Chen Yao lived in the floor residence of a garden plot in the specialty region.

As soon as Chen Yao returned home, Cai Xiao greeted her: "Chen Yao, you returned! Quick eat some food."

Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu entered into the house.

There were five women in the house: Cai Xiao, Zhang Li, Lin Qi, Wang Fang, and Chen Qing.

There was a large bowl of diluted gruel, seven steamed buns, and seven small pieces of lunch meat all neatly arranged. This was their lunch.

Among the seven, only Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu had the specialty status to be able to obtain the government provided food. The rest of the five women didn't have official work. They could only stay in the house and rely on Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu's help to survive.

Things became a little tight after the excess supplies given to two people by the government were spread out among seven. Of course with the relationships that Chen Yao has with Chen Jianfeng, she only needs to open her mouth to be provided with more. But Chen Yao didn't do that because she doesn't have a princess complex. Furthermore, their current supplies far exceeded those provided to ordinary people.



# Chapter 133: Yao Yao

---

Chen Yao took a large bite from a steamed bun after sitting down and asked: “Zhang Li, how is the job hunt going?”

Chen Yao didn't even look at food like big white steam buns before Z-Age. But she had already changed a lot after Z-Age. This big white steamed bun and slice of lunch meat already made this former little princess extremely satisfied.

Hesitating a moment, Zhang Li slowly said: ‘I haven't found suitable work.’

Zhang Li and the rest were only ordinary college freshmen. They hadn't graduated, and they didn't have any work experience. There was a lot of highly educated elite talent among the outside survivors. Right now in order to be a street sweeper in the specialty region, if one didn't have connections, at least a master's degree was required.

Of course for Zhang Li and the other beautiful women, it would be very easy if they wanted to enter into a special kind of industry. But Zhang Li and the others still hadn't entered into a state of destitute. Naturally they didn't consider joining that special type of profession to make money.

Cai Xiao drank a bit of watered down gruel, hesitated a moment, and then said: “Yesterday I went out and saw sister Zhao. She begged to borrow a half kg of rice from us. Can we lend it to her, Chen Yao?”

Chen Yao silently hesitated a moment and said: “Raising a child isn't easy! Next time you meet her bring her over and give her a quarter kg of rice.”

Chen Yao felt the difficulties of managing expenses after taking over the household affairs. Just feeding the seven of them required a lot of food every day. Adding on their compassionate hearts, they

often helped the other women who came together with them to Long Hai City survivor base. The days became tight.

Finished eating a steamed bun, Chen Yao hesitated a moment and said: "I'm preparing to go see Yue Zhong. Who wants to come with me?"

"I want to go!"

"I also want to go!"

The girl's eyes brightened, and they responded one by one. Here they were like rice worms mixed in with food waiting to die. They didn't dare go anywhere outside of the specialty region.

Zhang Li and the other also didn't dare casually move about in the specialty region. The law and order in the specialty region wasn't bad, but they didn't have any effect on the sons and daughters of higher ranking officials. They once saw a pretty housekeeper that didn't have any kind of a background walking alone along the street. She was dragged into a luxuriously decorated building by several young men.

Several police circled the building after receiving the report. After one entered into the building, he emerged humiliated, then the unit was forced to leave.

Before Z-Age, given that there is control over information on the networks, there were several people who dared openly rape their lower subordinate office workers. Privileged sons and daughters killed people and walk away. Don't even mentioned the collapsed order after Z-Age, a time when morals perished. The law is severe and cruel inside of the Long Hai City survivor base, but it is only directed at the common people. There isn't any restrictive power on the sons and daughters of high ranking officials.

Seeing that sight, Zhang Li and the rest were afraid to go out and work. They completely lost their trust in the base, and they didn't dare become nannies. They only knew how lucky they were at Yue

Zhong's side after they departed. It is very difficult for a woman without any power to continue surviving in this cruel world.

Chen Yao looked a little complex at the five other women and said: "Then we will go together!"

Early morning at the Stone Horse Village shooting range, Yue Zhong held a type 03 rifle and took ten shots at a target over a hundred meters away.

The target had eight holes in the bullseye after the ten shots. The other two bullets were placed in the outside ninth and eighth ring.

A delicate thin lolita with short black hair stood beside Yue Zhong. It was the little lolita that Yue Zhong found outside of Stone Horse Village, Yao Yao. Yao Yao watched Yue Zhong fire off successive shots, and those pair of bright black eyes attentively stared at the rifle in Yue Zhong's hands.

Seeing Yue Zhong set down the type 03 rifle, Yao Yao ran over to his side. She extended both hand and used a cute little lolita voice to say to Yue Zhong: "Let me play!"

Yue Zhong looked at Yao Yao, the little lolita who had just turned ten years old. He handed her the type 03 rifle: "Be careful of the recoil!"

Yao Yao is only a ten year old lolita, but after she evolved, her body characteristics completely increased. Her Power and Strength had reached level 8. It was comparable to a grown man. Handling a type 03 rifle wasn't a problem.

Yao Yao held and admired for a moment after receiving the type 03 rifle. She finally aimed at the target over a hundred meters away.

A lolita only one meter and thirty-six centimeter tall carrying a ten centimeter tall rifle gave people a strange uncomfortable feeling.

Yao Yao pulled the trigger, a gunshot sounded, the bullet flew

out, completely off target!

Yao Yao bit her lip, she repeatedly pulled the trigger, emptying the entire clip. In the end the target over a hundred meters away had several bullet holes.

“Bullets!” Yao Yao’s eyes flashed a trace of excitement after completely emptying the clip. She extended out a little hand and asked for more bullets.

Yue Zhong snatched the type 03 automatic rifle out of Yao Yao’s hands and said: “Good! Today we stop here! Now quick go to class!”

Children are mankind’s future. Yue Zhong hired ten teachers to start instruct the children of the survivors on various topics after taking over Stone Horse Village. In the wake of ample supplies, the food served to the children at the cafeteria was improved. They didn’t eat gruel but actual meals.

Yao Yao frowned: “Class is boring. Moreover studying those things doesn’t have the least bit of use!”

Children often used guns on the battlefield in regions of constant disorder before Z-Age. The temperaments of several children became wild after Z-Age. They didn’t want to study even more than before. They were more interested in picking wild vegetables and catching fish to provide food for the family than studying. It would have been difficult for the schools to attract children if he didn’t enact the rule of children won’t be provided food if they don’t come to school.

Yue Zhong looked at Yao Yao and said: “Go or don’t go. Don’t go and I’ll spank you!”

Yao Yao retreated several steps, her hands clutching her little bottom. She resisted and glared at Yue Zhong. Finally she gave up under Yue Zhong’s abuse of authority and ran away like a wisp of smoke. She once didn’t listen to Yue Zhong’s words, and she was

grabbed up by him and given a good spanking. This finally made her well behaved.

Looking like a innocent and cute little woman Chen Miao walked over wearing a white blouse, a pale yellow skirt, white cotton socks, and little boots, and she gave Yue Zhong a towel.

Yue Zhong grabbed the towel, wiped the sweat off his body, and asked: “How are you? Used to living here?”

Not long ago, Yue Zhong had just conducted a 150kg weighted run individual exercise. He then started target practice after finishing the run. He continuously trained his body every day.

# Chapter 134: Military Training

---

Chen Miao spoke her inner feelings: “It is very good here. Much better than Chen Family Village.”

The adult males from Chen Family Village all entered into Yue Zhong’s ranks after arriving at Stone Horse Village. They become soldiers under Yue Zhong’s banner. The Chen Family Villagers not only were hunters, but they also had experience fighting with zombies using cold weapons. Yue Zhong rather looked forward to their performance.

The Males from Chen Family Village could eat their fill of rice as well as some fish and vegetables after they entered into Yue Zhong’s ranks. They were extremely satisfied compared to being nested up in Chen Family Village, where they didn’t have enough rice to eat their full.

Yue Zhong commanded: “Go make your father prepare. We are going to dispatch troops and clear out zombies today. Make your father bring a squadron to the public square and wait.”

Stone Horse Village had not been captured long. Yue Zhong arranged various work, but the clearing of the zombies in the surrounding area hadn’t yet come to a stop. Yue Zhong and Chi Yang alternated every day, taking a group to clear out the the zombies in the surrounding villages, and they searched for survivors to enter under their banner. Yue Zhong’s Stone Horse Village already had a population of over eight hundred. There were already over one hundred and fifty combat personnel.

Chen Miao nodded and left according to Yue Zhong’s commands.

Yue Zhong’s direct small subordinate group and the two small groups formed of the Chen Family Villagers rapidly gathered at the town square.

The two small groups team leaders of the Chen Family Village

force were lead by Chen Shitou and Zhao Xing. Zhao Xing's group also had a vice captain. It was the former chief of Chen Family Village, Chen Ning. Chen Wang's failure to completely follow Yue Zhong's orders made him disappointed. Because of this, Yue Zhong gave Chen Ning a captain position according to his promise, but it was a vice captain position.

“These are those who want to fight zombies?”

“But how can we only use shields and large knives? Why no guns?”

“.....”

The distinct thing of Yue Zhong and the small units is that the fighters in these two units only had shields and large knives. This made them slightly uneasy, and they whispered in private. Only Yue Zhong's direct subordinate unit stood there silently.

Under the eyes of everyone, Yue Zhong walked onto a high platform.

The discussions below stopped as soon as Yue Zhong walked onto the high platform.

“I am Yue Zhong! Today is the day you will go out and fight zombies. It is not a mistake. Today your equipment is a shield and large knife. This equipment is more suited to fighting zombies than guns. From today on all of the combat units will undertake close combat training. You will use steel shields and large knives to fight. You will receive close combat training and shooting training at the same time. The only people who do not need to use shields and large knives are those that have a seventy percent shooting rate inside of a hundred yards, heavy machine gun operators, or armored vehicle operators.

“Of course the dangers are indeed very high to use shields and large knives to fight zombies. Those that don't wish to fight may step out. I will not force you!”

There was an immediate uproar in the two Chen Family Village combat units after hearing Yue Zhong's words.

A villager from Zhao Xing's group hesitated a moment, then took a large step out: "I withdraw!"

"I withdraw!"

The villager's withdraw set off like a fire in the state of minds of the others. Another eight people selected to withdraw from combat.

Yue Zhong looked at the nine people and coldly said: "People that stepped out. Your incorporation and special treatment are cancelled. Go work on building the walls."

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, the faces were brushed with a incomparably pale complexion. The treatment of the men who build the walls is far less than that of outside personnel. They must work hard labor every day, and they can only eat their fill without any additional non staple foods. There is also no additional wages.

The people in Yue Zhong's group, if they are outside personnel, they can eat and drink their fill every day, and they can have some non staple foods. Outside personnel can also receive a reward if they find goods and materials while out fighting. They were better off than office workers before Z-Age and received the envy of other survivors.

Among the nine, one regretfully said all of the sudden: "Captain Yue!! I wish to fight! Don't send me to build the wall!"

"I also wish to fight!! I don't want to build the wall!!"

"....."

There were three people with regret among the nine. Going to work on the wall is equivalent to being punished with hard labor. They must bitterly work the whole day. They could also use the goods found while fighting to find a woman for a good time. Stone Horse Village strictly prohibits rape, but a can a food in Stone



Horse Village is enough to find a good looking woman for the night.

Moreover several women wished to stick to them and become their women after becoming outside personnel.

Yue Zhong didn't look at those people anymore and coldly said: "Take them all away!"

Two personnel carrying rifles walked over and made the nine men go over towards the city wall.

Yue Zhong looked around at the remaining men in the two small units and said in a deep voice: "is there anyone else who wants to withdraw?"

Yue Zhong continued to say: "If you want a good life, you must take your life and risk it. Those who don't wish to take a risk are only as good as laborers. I guarantee those who build walls and repair structures will continue living. But don't be jealous when others taste the sweetness and drink in the goodness. That is what others used their own power and took risks to achieve!"

Yue Zhong finished his speech. It was silent below. No one spoke wanting to leave. They had just gotten a life that made others envious. Who wished to easily give that up?

"Set out!" Yue Zhong commanded. The people in the square all piled into vehicles one by one, and they rushed out.

Southeast Village was a distance of seven and a half kilometers from Stone Horse Village. Yue Zhong's motorcade stopped before the village. The personnel all jumped out of the vehicles carrying the large knives and shields They looked at the quite small ghost town from far away.

An IFV brought up the rear of the motorcade. An IFV uses up too much bullets and oil when fighting. Because of this Yue Zhong only brings one each time just in case.

Yue Zhong sprinkles a blood pouch full of human blood on White

Bones after everyone got out of the vehicles. He made White Bones rush into the village.

The Southeast village zombies immediately started to hobble out of the center of the village after smelling the blood.

Southeast village had a population of several hundred. The hundreds of zombies immediately formed into a chilling zombie group.

An S2 and several S1s quickly scrambled over the masses like demons towards White Bones from within the zombie group.

Yue Zhong took the lead holding a Replica Tang Sword towards the incoming S2 and S1.

The S2 smelled Yue Zhong's human scent. It immediately abandoned White Bones and charged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong welcomed the S2. A cold light flashed as the two crossed paths. The S2 was immediately decapitated in one sword slash. A large experience orb sunk into his body.

# Chapter 135: Poplar Tree Village

---

White Bones also slashed his axe, violently rushing into the S1 group. In one swoop the large axe beheaded several S1s.

Yue Zhong and White Bones took everything dropped into a bag and quickly retreated after taking care of the S type zombies.

The dense group of zombies still trended towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong grabbed out a rifle after retreating to position. He calmly aimed at the zombies and constantly headshot zombie after zombie.

“So strong!! Truly too awesome!!”

This is the first time the Chen Family Villagers had seen Yue Zhong fight. The eyes of each one filled with fright. They had already heard of Yue Zhong’s bravery, but this is the first time seeing Yue Zhong display his skill.

Chen Shitou looked at Yue Zhong and his eyes gleamed. He slowly thought: “So extreme! Even without a gun I am not his match.”

Chen Shitou is the strongest hunter in Chen Family Village, and he is the strongest man. He has never submitted to anyone in his whole life. The first time seeing Yue Zhong’s skill is genuinely convincing.

Yue Zhong immediately withdrew the rifle after dropping six zombies and commanded: “Cover with machine gun fire!”

The small group directly subordinate to Yue Zhong operated two heavy machine guns and spread fire at the zombie group.

Covered under heavy machine gun fire, the zombies were like wheat blown over by a large wind.

“Cease fire! Close combat unit, the seventh small unit, and the eight small unit follow me!” Yue Zhong watched the zombies get

covered in firepower and finally shouted a command. Then White Bones and Greenie rushed together towards the remaining zombies.

“Everyone charge with me!” Chen Shitou is of an aggressive and violent breed. At one time he single handedly killed four zombies at Chen Family Village. He didn’t have any fear towards those slow moving zombies.

The team members under Chen Shitou’s leadership filled with courage. They let out a battle cry, and they charged holding their swords and shields towards the zombies. They destroyed the slow moving ordinary zombies like slaughtering chickens and dogs.

“Men charge with me!” Zhao Xing didn’t dare appear weak. He roared to his personnel and took the lead holding sword and shield.

Chen Ning watched Zhao Xing, and his eyes flashed a complicated look. He brought his people and followed Zhao Xing in the charge, chopping those zombies.

The Chen Family Villagers originally had zombie hunting experience. They had an ability to deal with the mental pressure from the zombies that was far greater than other personnel. The zombies had already undergone a round of heavy firepower. As long as they were careful around the zombies that hadn’t yet died, the villagers could overcome their fear and easily deal with the zombies.

The two groups joined in with Yue Zhong’s close combat unit and entered the zombie fray. They easily decapitated the remaining zombies.

After resolving the zombies outside the village, the high morale close combat unit and two small units under Chen Shitou and Zhao Xing lead massacred their way into the small village.

Yue Zhong knew this is the true start of the training for the two

small units. Although the large majority of zombies were drawn out by the noise and blood of white bones, but inside there village there were still several zombies and small zombie groups. Chen Shitou and Zhao Xing's small groups could quickly become an elite force if they could completely clear out the remainder of the village.

“Group formation!” Chen Shitou bellowed the command as soon as they entered the village.

Three personnel immediately formed into a small triangle formation using their shields, and they carefully entered into the village. They didn't have Yue Zhong's ability to easily kill zombies, so naturally they were carefully.

Chen Shitou's group encountered three scattered zombies not long after entering the village.

After the three members holding their shields skillfully dropped the three zombies, they resumed the group formation and carefully advanced. They extremely efficiently cleared the zombies in the village.

“Not bad work.” Yue Zhong followed behind Chen Shitou's group and watched, his eyes flashed with praise.

In the past when capturing Stone Horse Village, they mainly relied on weapons fire to clear out a large amount of the zombie force. Then they used elite soldiers wearing snake scale armor to clean out the scattered zombies. The above cold weapons tactics couldn't compare to Chen Shitou.

Zhao Xing's group on the other side learned Chen Shitou's triangle formation. They entered the village step by step, methodically beheading zombies.

In the midst of continuously killing zombies, they established confidence in overcoming them.

The Southeast village zombies were completely purged after a

fierce three hour battle.

In the process, two members among Chen Shitou and Zhao Xing's group were careless, and they were scratched and infected.

Yue Zhong walked over to the two team members and said in a deep voice: "Do you have any last words?"

People infected must die, Yue Zhong didn't have any way to save them.

A team member said with tears in his eyes: "I wish Captain Yue could take care of my family."

Yue Zhong said in a deep voice: "Don't worry! You are both martyrs! Your family members will receive the best treatment."

That team member bitterly laughed: "Then I have no regrets! Come, give me peace. I don't want to change into that thing."

Yue Zhong waved his hand and two members came over. They raised their guns at the two infected members and pulled the trigger, shooting them dead.

Captain Yue, we discovered something new." Two of Yue Zhong's direct subordinates found something while they were searching for supplies in Southeast Village. They brought forward two malnourished pretty looking women with multiple torture marks on their bodies.

"Who are they?" Yue Zhong looked at the two women and asked a team member among them.

The team member looked at one of the women and said somewhat viciously: "Captain Yue, they are survivors who fled from Poplar Tree Village to the west. Poplar Tree Village is already being occupied by a person named Steel King. That guy has several hundred survivors in his hands. Zhang Hong, this is our boss Captain Yue. Can you slowly tell him the intel on Poplar Tree Village?"

“I’ll speak! I’ll speak. I’ll tell everything to this mighty person. Don’t hit me!! I will say everything. I will do anything. I’m begging you don’t torture me!” Zhang Hong knelt on the ground. She wept and begged to Yue Zhong. She told her experience and everything she knew about Poplar Tree Village.

# Chapter 136: Xue Kaishan

---

Zhang Hong was a pretty white collar business woman before Z-Age. After Z-Age, she was fortunately able to drive and flee out of the city, then she fled into Poplar Tree Village.

Poplar Tree Village was captured by a group of fleeing policemen and other survivors that escaped there. These policemen defended the refugee survivors who fled from all directions, and they maintained the order in Poplar Tree Village. They protected females and didn't endure violations. Only suddenly one day the self proclaimed Steel King, Xue Kaishan, murdered all of the policemen. He brought people to occupy the whole Poplar Tree Village.

Xue Kaishan spent the whole day thinking of ways to play with women after taking over Poplar Tree Village. He invented ways to torture the women in his control. Zhang Hong is a sufferer of Xue Kaishan's torture. She fled with another beautiful woman under the cover of night.

Yue Zhong continued and asked: "What skills does Xue Kaishan have?"

According to Yue Zhong's speculations, Xue Kaishan couldn't be an evolver, but rather some kind of mutant possessing some kind of ability. Otherwise he couldn't have killed armed policemen.

Zhang Hong thought a moment then said: "He is invulnerable to bullets and knives. Bullets cannot pierce his body."

"What other abilities does he have?"

"I don't know!"

"How many people do they have? How many guns?"

"It's not too clear.....but they should exceed ten people."

Zhang Hong didn't know anything. Yue Zhong quickly let them



leave.

They fully loaded supplies and found twenty survivors in Southeast Village, then Yue Zhong's group quickly returned to Stone Horse Village.

As soon as Yue Zhong's group returned to Stone Horse Village, specialized logistics personnel came to the vehicles and began unloading everything. Then they sorted everything by type and loaded it into the warehouse.

Those combat participants were also each awarded a prize. Also several Chen Family Villagers were promoted to preliminary team members. It made them extremely happy. They walked the streets standing tall.

In addition to official team members, preliminary team members were the objects of respect and envy in Stone Horse Village. Several women wished to become the partners of preliminary or official team members. Because they all had stable goods and supplies. If they went out and fought they could also obtain extra rewards.

"Go get Da Gouzi and Wang Shuang. Make them gather a squad!" Yue Zhong immediately commanded to a member as soon as he returned to the village.

"Yes! Captain Yue!" That team member responded and ran out.

Chen Shitou walked over to Yue Zhong and asked: "Yue Zhong, are you going to Poplar Tree Village?"

"Correct!"

"Let me go with you!"

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Shitou and said: "You aren't going to rest?"

Today Yue Zhong brought people to clear out Southeast Village. Chen Shitou already killed eight zombies. Ordinary people who

haven't leveled up consume a lot of stamina killing eight zombies.

Chen Shitou said in a deep voice: "Correct!"

"Good!" Yue Zhong agreed to Chen Shitou's request.

Da Gouzi and Wang Shuang quickly finished gathering their small units. Three Humvees, two IFVs, two trucks, two Hummers, and three Jeeps formed a motorcade that rapidly sped towards Poplar Tree Village.

In a small western style house in Poplar Tree Village, a medium stature, bald head, and shirtless man with a long scar on his ugly chest sat on a sofa. In front of him were two completely naked women with their heads in his crotch constantly moving. This man with the long scar on his chest is the ruler of Poplar Tree Village, Xue Kaishan.

Xue Kaishan suddenly grabbed a pretty woman's head and twisted, then he kicked the woman, slammed her to the floor, and ferociously said: "Fuck! Stinky prostitute crying! Do you not like the boss! Fuck, you women are cheap! Come here!"

Xue Kaishan roared, four strong men came from the side. Their eyes gleamed with lewdness, and they stared at the beautiful woman kicked to the ground.

Xue Kaishan pointed at the woman and the ground and ferociously laughed: "I'm giving this cheap person to play with you all. But I don't wish this cheap woman to see the light of tomorrow."

The woman's face became inhumanly white, and she screamed: "No!! Master!! I'm begging you no! I can serve you well. I can serve you well!! You don't need to discard me!!"

The women given over to the subordinates of Xue Kaishan after he was done playing with them were ultimately on a road to death. That woman still didn't want to die.

The other woman saw the sight, and her body shivered with cold,

but she didn't say a word. She also wanted to live.

“Thank You for the reward boss!” The four men were overjoyed, and they pulled the woman out. Although it is a woman Xue Kaishan had used up, but she didn't look too bad. They could have a little fun.

“Slave Yun come over!” Xue Kaishan looked at another woman, and he stretched out his smelly foot.

The woman called slave Yun crawled to Xue Kaishan like a dog. Although it was disgusting, she licked his entire sweaty stinky foot.

Xue Kaishan looked at slave Yun, his eyes flashed with pleasure and a twisted excitement. Women looked down on him before Z-Age because he was ugly. After Z-Age he obtained some power. He wantonly used his power to kill the policemen protecting Poplar Tree Village, and then he started to abuse Poplar Tree's women.

“Boss! Not good! Boss!!” A young man wearing a t-shirt and pants entered the villa and yelled while Xue Kaishan was tormenting the women.

Xue Kaishan somewhat impatiently asked: “What is it? Tan Zhen!”

Tan Chen's face was terrified as he said: “An unknown armed force is on their way! The opponent has guns and cannons. They also have armored vehicles!! It looks like army troops!!”

“What, the army troops? Quick lead me there!” Xue Kaishan's face changed. He pushed the women aside and followed Tan Chen out of the village.

Two, four meter tall temporary watchtowers were built in Poplar Tree Village. One could see the situation from several kilometers out on that watchtower.

Xue Kaishan quickly climbed up the watchtower. He took a telescope from a pale looking subordinate and looked far out. He saw the motorcade with IFVs and his face became a little ugly.

Xue Kaishan's eyes turned blood red. He ferociously roared: "Quickly gather the troops! I will fight them to the death. No man can flee my grasp and leave Poplar Tree Village!!"

On the watchtower, a subordinate of Xue Kaishan hesitated a moment and said: "Boss! But there are armored vehicles. We should surrender!"

A murderous intent flashed through Xue Kaishan's eyes. His voice became cold beyond compare: "The things you all have done, you yourself know. Do you think you will live if they know?"

# Chapter 137: Mob

---

Xue Kaishan ferociously said: “Our Poplar Tree Village can gather over a hundred brothers. They aren’t even a couple dozen. They want to devour us, it won’t be that easy!”

Hearing these words, Xue Kaishan’s brothers didn’t any anything else. They immediately descended the tower and gathered manpower. Xue Kaishan is domineering in Poplar Tree Village. His brothers had done many wicked things. Xue Kaishan used these methods and his own personal power to maintain this group.

“Is this Poplar Tree Village?” Yue Zhong walked out of the motorcade and looked at Poplar Tree Village from far away.

He saw two tall watchtowers erected in the village made out of cement, sandbags, wood, and other various materials. Brother after brother of Xue Kaishan held guns and climbed into that simple and crude cover. Hearts trembling in fear, they watched the baleful aura of Yue Zhong’s subordinates as they left their vehicles.

Wang Shuang and Da Gouzi’s small groups went on missions to search for goods and materials every day, and they received strict training, so all of the men carried a spirit of self confidence. They already had a fighter spirit and self confidence.

“Go make them surrender!” Yue Zhong roared.

Da Gouze stepped forward, he held a large bullhorn and shouted from far away: “People of Poplar Tree Village. You are already surrounded. Drop your weapons and immediately surrender, it is your only road. Otherwise you will regret it later! Surrender right now. Our Captain Yue promises everyone will be spared apart from Xue Kaishan!”

The thoughts of Xue Kaishan’s subordinates floated after hearing Yue Zhong’s terms of surrender. The original weak will to fight started collapsing. They were originally only a mob. The large

majority lost the will to resist after seeing the two IFVs. After all, regular infantry forces against armored vehicle forces is basically death. But they didn't dare immediately surrender under Xue Kaishan's despotic power.

Yue Zhong saw Poplar Tree Village didn't respond, and he immediately commanded: "Mortar team open fire!"

They had already prepared the mortar team to start shooting earlier. Mortar after mortar exploded everywhere in the entrance of Poplar Tree Village.

Following a gorgeous blooming sparkle, shrapnel flew out, and smoke sprang up everywhere. The twelve men taking cover at the crude village entrance were killed or wounded.

The shells dismembered a portion of their bodies. The men pierced by shrapnel were on the ground letting out painful screams. It was a great blow to the morale of the armed forces in Poplar Tree Village.

The brothers of Xue Kaishan were ordinary people in the past. They grew up in a peaceful generation. They had no combat experience. The sound of the mortar explosion completely removed their last trace of will to resist.

"I surrender! Don't kill me!!" One of Xue Kaishan's men threw down his weapon, and he hurriedly rushed to Yue Zhong.

"I surrender! Don't kill me!!"

The one man fleeing set off a chain reaction. The gathered men of Xue Kaishan dispersed. They dropped their weapons and fled to Yue Zhong.

Xue Kaishan watched the first subordinate that ran, and his eyes flashed with killing intent. He raised a rifle at him and took aim. He ruthlessly shot the brother that betrayed him first. He never thought his operation would be completely dismantled by one round of mortar fire.

Xue Kaishan quickly put down his gun, and his eyes gleamed. He grabbed some dirt from the ground and rubbed his face, then he raised both hands and ran towards Yue Zhong.

The master fleeing, the remaining men didn't have any fighting confidence. Everything collapsed. They threw their guns or quietly snuck out the back of the village. Some fled towards Yue Zhong.

"Truly a mob." Yue Zhong saw the Poplar Tree Village immediately collapse with a couple mortars and quietly thought. He didn't think it would be so simple to destroy the fighting spirit of Xue Kaishan's men.

Xue Kaishan was detained along with his brothers by Yue Zhong's men. He crouched to the side with his head in his hands.

Xue Kaishan. None of his brothers dared point him out as Xue Kaishan.

Yue Zhong walked before the gathered captives.

A team member walked over and courteously said to Yue Zhong: "Captain Yue!"

"Careful Captain Yue! He is Xue Kaishan!!" Zhang Hong standing beside Yue Zhong saw Xue Kaishan squatting on the ground and immediately let out a shriek. She was tortured half dead by Xue Kaishan. Even though Xue Kaishan was covered in dirt she could recognise him.

Xue Kaishan immediately shot out from the ground and charged at Yue Zhong as soon as Zhang Hong yelled.

Xue Kaishan didn't wish to give up the inheritance of Poplar Tree Village. He chose to implement a beheading plan.

The men holding guns and observing to the side didn't hesitate in the slightest. They pulled the trigger as soon as Xue Kaishan moved. Concentrated bullet fire completely covered the area Xue Kaishan was at. Three captives next to Xue Kaishan were shot into sieves. Their bodies were filled with bloody holes, and they

powerlessly fell to the ground becoming corpses. The bullets that hit Xue Kaishan were all sent flying, unable to injure a single hair on Xue Kaishan.

Xue Kaishan braved a hail of bullets. He charged towards Yue Zhong like an arrow. His speed was extremely fast, comparable to an S1, appearing before Yue Zhong in an instant.

All of the team members ceased fire, scared of injuring Yue Zhong.

It happened suddenly, Only Chen Shitou at Yue Zhong's side reacted in time. A heavy fist like a mountain shot out at Xue Kaishan. Chen Shitou's ancestors passed on some martial arts to him. Although it didn't make him able to fly above the earth, but he was more than a match for ordinary special forces soldiers.

"Get lost!" Xue Kaishan snarled. A light flashed from the silver colored necklace on his neck. A small hurricane erupted from his body. It blew away Chen Shitou and the advancing Liu Yan and Da Gouzi about six or seven meters away, leaving only him and Yue Zhong.

Seeing Yue Zhong was almost within reach, Xue Kaishan's eyes flashed with delight. He stretched out a hand towards Yue Zhong's neck.

"Trash! You rely on that type of ability thinking you can harm me?" Yue Zhong looked at Xue Kaishan, eyes ice cold. Xue Kaishan's speed looked like he could be compared with elite special forces, but that wasn't enough in Yue Zhong's eyes. Right before Xue Kaishan grabbed his neck, he took a step left, easily avoiding Xue Kaishan's attack. He pulled out a Replica Tang Sword and chopped at Xue Kaishan's waist.

The Replica Tang Sword hit Xue Kaishan's waist in an instant. Yue Zhong felt a bizarre toughness emerge from the place he struck. It was like a thin pliable membrane blocked.



Eating Yue Zhong's sword, Xue Kaishan was sent flying. His eyes filled with fear. He had never been attacked so easily after gaining his abilities.

# Chapter 138: Beheading Xue Kaishan

---

Yue Zhong shot forward. His highly leveled speed easily caught up to Xue Kaishan.

Xue Kaishan was startled, and he clawed at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's image flashed, easily avoiding Xue Kaishan's slash. He started the skill Devil Flame. A round scarlet red devil flame emerged from his hand. He softly slapped at Xue Kaishan's waist. The scarlet red devil flame burst out, creating a large hole in the thin defensive layer. The frantic blaze burned a large hole in Xue Kaishan's waist.

Xue Kaishan let out a shrill cry. His hands didn't have any way to act against Yue Zhong. He couldn't even brush against Yue Zhong's clothes.

Yue Zhong's image flashed and circled around behind Xue Kaishan. A hand clapped onto Xue Kaishan's spine. A wild flame erupted that completely burned through Xue Kaishan's defense membrane, torching a large hole in Xue Kaishan.

White Bones moved forward like an arrow from the side. A large axe hacked away at Xue Kaishan's head. His head abruptly twisted to the side, and he became a corpse, powerlessly falling to the ground.

"Too extreme!!" Chen Shitou watched Yue Zhong easily behead the bullet proof and mysterious ability user Xue Kaishan. His eyes flashed with fear. He practiced martial arts, but he couldn't even connect a blow on Xue Kaishan. Furthermore Yue Zhong took out Xue Kaishan like he was slaughtering a chicken.

Yue Zhong walked over to Xue Kaishan. He carefully inspected, confirming Xue Kaishan's status: "He is an evolver!"

There was all kinds of God and Devil World equipment on Xue Kaishan's body. Yue Zhong had the majority of equipment already,

only that silver colored necklace on his chest drew the interest of Yue Zhong. He extended a hand and grabbed the necklace from Xue Kaichan's body.

“Rank 3 rare treasure Hurricane Necklace: 5 Agility when equipped. The necklace grants the skill Hurricane Wind. It can release a portion of hurricane wind and send nearby enemies flying. The hurricane's power is determined by the user's level of Spirit.”

“Good item!” Yue Zhong saw the Hurricane necklace, and his eyes brightened. This necklace has a 5 Agility increase and a skill on top. It is an extremely useful treasure.

Xue Kai Shan was also wearing Rank 1 shoes, Rank 1 defensive clothing, and some other trash equipment to Yue Zhong. Wearing multiples of the same kind of equipment didn't give any overlapping effect.

Those captives watched the battle god Xue Kaishan die before their eyes. They all kneeled on the ground and shivered in fear, looking at Yue Zhong full of fear and terror.

The resistance of Poplar Tree Village completely collapsed as soon as Xue Kaishan died. Yue Zhong's armed forces smoothly advanced into Poplar Tree Village. They preserved stability and received the population and supplies of the village.

Each man that raped and robbed people was pulled to the side and executed by firing squad. Under that type of strict military law, the villagers in Poplar Tree Village all behaved sitting on the ground, hands on their heads, or they hid in their houses not daring to come out.

“Xue Kaishan is truly an idiot.” Yue Zhong's brows wrinkled and thought after he walked into Poplar Tree Village and saw the sight.

Yue Zhong saw malnourished survivors after walking into the village. The survivors all smelled, and their eyes didn't have a

trace of spirit. Feces and urine could be seen all over the streets. Everyone could smell the sick fumes as they walked down the street.

Obviously Xue Kaishan didn't give the slightest thought about governing Poplar Tree Village. He wouldn't have even been worth dogshit if he didn't have that strange ability. A person with unmatched strength is not necessarily a qualified ruler.

Yue Zhong's team members used guns and searched out the survivors from each corner of the village. Each survivor was given a piece of cornbread and then were taken out of the village. Stone Horse Village had a complete set of facilities. It could easily house thousands of people, but they were currently short on population.

Yue Zhong's team members watched the survivors in the unbearably difficult situation devour the small pieces of cornbread, and their eyes let loose a wave of compassion and superiority. They could currently eat their fill of rice each day, and they often ate fish, snake, and vegetables. They didn't know how many times better off they were than those survivors.

Da Gouzi welcome and flattered Yue Zhong as soon as he entered Xue Kaishan's building: "Captain Yue look!"

"So many women! How can there be so many women here?" Yue Zhong looked in the direction Da Gouzi pointed, only seeing a large amount of all kinds of women densely packed standing there. The quantity probably exceeded over one hundred and fifty. That many woman squeezed in a small courtyard was somewhat spectacular.

Da Gouzi explained to Yue Zhong: "These are all the women collected by Xue Kaishan. He grabbed all of decent looking women no matter how young or old to serve himself after he killed the policemen. This seven story building and the two small buildings to the side were for his women.

Yue Zhong saw saw Xue Kaishan's spectacular crowd and slightly sighed: "He truly has everyone!"

Da Gouzi gave a strange smile to Yue Zhong that every man understands. Two team members brought four women over: “Captain Yue, I’ve selected several for you. They are all virgins Xue Kaishan hasn’t touched yet. They are all tender and full of life, you will certainly like them.”

Among the four there was a twenty three or four year old woman wearing a nurse outfit. She was delicate and exquisite, and she had a pair of beautiful eyes. One was wearing black socks and an office suit with skirt. She was refined with shoulder length hair. A white collar woman with white skin and a pretty face. Another wore jeans and a t-shirt. She had an extremely mature figure, dyed blonde hair, and pierced ears. She looked a little punk. The last had her black hair in a ponytail. Her body was very mature and she had a quiet and gentle character.

These four women were the prettiest and the best tempered women in Xue Kaishan’s group. The punk looking girl and the black haired gentle girl both looked extremely similar.

Original world order started to collapse after Z-Age. The large majority of official team members from Always Bright Village had two or more women. Yue Zhong also had Lu Wen and Guo Yu, the two young and older beauties. Da Gouzi had always cautiously observed Yue Zhong. After seeing Yue Zhong wasn’t a saint that didn’t like women, he went ahead and picked out some pretty women to give him.

“Not bad! Arrange them to be my maids.” Yue Zhong looked at the four beautiful women and plainly said. As long as he said it, Da Gouzi would take care of everything. He didn’t need to waste any brain power.

# Chapter 139: Scum Battalion

---

Da Gouzi revealed a trace of a smile after receiving Yue Zhong's support. He commanded to those team members: "Bring them all!"

Those team members immediately took those women away.

Before departing, the woman with dyed blonde hair and the punk sex appeal deeply stared at Yue Zhong, then she finally followed and left with the group.

Liu Yan walked over to Yue Zhong with a somber face and said in a deep voice: "Captian Yue! Come over and look!!"

"What is it?" Yue Zhong's brow raised and followed Liu Yan.

"Those animals!! Simply don't have the least bit of humanity. Look!" Liu Yan pulled open the door to a warehouse with a look of fury.

A nauseating fishy stench came out as soon as the door was pulled open. Inside the warehouse was a sight like hell.

There was one woman after another powerlessly collapsed on the ground. There were scars everywhere on their bodies. There was a stinky yellow liquid all over their bodies as well. Several of the women's breasts were cut off. Some had their hands cut off and were bound together. Each one was tortured until their last breath, their eyes empty. The sight was ten times more miserable than the women at the Henhouse.

Yue Zhong saw the hellish sight, and his eyes flashed with rage. His voice became cold beyond compare: "Who did this?"

Liu Yan suppressed his own rage and said: "Xue Kaishan and his brothers! Xue Kaishan gave these women to his men to torture after he was tired of playing with them. Furthermore he designated that the women had to be tortured to death within three days.

Liu Yan wasn't that good of a person. Originally when he was under Tiger's command, he had also visited the women in the Henhouse. But this type of cruel torturous actions crossed his bottom line.

Yue Zhong suppressed his rage and commanded to Liu Yan: "Those scum! Liu Yan, grab them and execute them all!"

"Yes! Captain Yue!" Liu Yan heard and turned to leave.

Da Gouzi saw Yue Zhong's complexion as he stood on the side and cautiously said: "Slow down! Captain Yue, please calm down. Listen to my short argument. If you feel these words are wrong, then let me go."

Yue Zhong looked at Da Gouzi. Forcefully suppressing his anger, he said in a deep voice: "Speak!"

Although Da Gouzi was afraid to die, was shallow, and liked to brown nose, but he was completely loyal to Yue Zhong. And he never committed a blunder. Yue Zhong thought him as relatively important, so even in anger he could listen to Da Gouzi's words.

Da Gouzi said: "Captain Yue, you already promised the surrenderers wouldn't die. How will others look upon you if you immediately eat your words? If word gets out and we encounter enemies after today, the enemies could have some scruples and wouldn't surrender to you. It would be better to make them do hard labor and treat them like oxen. Make them have the most bitter life and only let them eat until they are full is enough."

Right now Stone Horse Village is building a city wall. Da Gouzi thought of two aspects. One being Yue Zhong's reputation and the other aspect is to strengthen the labor force to build the wall.

Yue Zhong sunk into a deep thought hearing Yue Zhong's words. Just like Da Gouzi said, killing the prisoners would make him happy. But the word would certainly spread out. If he encountered enemies after today, they wouldn't surrender. They would die

fighting to the end. He would also have several losses exterminating the opposition.

Yue Zhong thought of establishing an organization called the Scum Battalion for these men: “From now on, the Scum Battalion is established. If today’s prisoners are found to be related to this warehouse, then they will enter the Scum Battalion. Each prisoner in the Scum Battalion must kill forty zombies to become a regular citizen. Da Gouzi, you can arbitrarily use the Scum Battalion for the most bitter, most serious, and most dangerous work.”

Da Gouzi slapped his chest and pledged: “Yes! Captain Yue! Don’t worry, I will certainly use them well!”

Poplar Tree Village had over five hundred survivors. Stone Horse Village’s population suddenly broke through one thousand after everyone was transported to Stone Horse Village.

The large amount of people coming in were allocated by Guo Yu, Li Manni and Da Gouzi. The various factories in Stone Horse Village recruited people and started working.

Each small search party continuously brought in a large amount of goods from the outside. The goods and supplies in Stone Horse Village became relatively plenty. All kinds of order started to slowly reinstate. Suicides became less, and the people’s eyes were no longer without hope like walking corpses.

The Scum Battalion prisoners were driven on like dogs by Da Gouzi, and they were forced to do the most intense work. The progress on building the wall became much faster.

————

“Is there any way to swallow the Long Hai City survivor base?”

Yue Zhong soaked in a public bath after a busy day of clearing out four villages. Despite the hot water sinking into his body, he closed his eyes and thought.

Long Hai City survivor base was a constant thorn in Yue Zhong’s



side. The Long Hai City survivor base not only used a righteous name, but they blocked Yue Zhong's path to the southeast. Not only this, but it also tied up a portion of Yue Zhong's military. Yue Zhong was forced to leave behind soldiers to defend and observe the Long Hai City survivor base. Yue Zhong also couldn't freely expand his power.

Long Hai City survivor base had a population of several thousand. It also had the police, armed police, professional soldiers, seven IFVs, and official PLA army equipment from before Z-Age. Yue Zhong didn't have the power to attack and completely destroy Long Hai City survivor base. He could only capture the surrounding small villages, amass survivors, train troops, and await for the right timing.

While Yue Zhong soaked in the bath, the large doors opened. A maiden wearing a bathrobe gracefully walked through the steam towards Yue Zhong, and she stepped into the bath.

Yue Zhong already knew someone entered into the house, only he didn't feel any murderous intent or sense any danger.

"Guo'er? Sure enough let me kiss you!" Yue Zhong closed his eyes and extended a hand. He brought that woman into his embrace, he wantonly rubbed her smooth and tender big white rabbits.

"Who are you?" Yue Zhong immediately felt something wrong as soon as he pinched her big white rabbit. This woman's body is also delicate, smooth, and full, but compared to Guo Yu's huge breasts, they were a rather inferior. He opened his eyes and discovered the girl with dyed blonde hair and pierced ears. It was the extremely punk girl Zhang Jingqiao.

A large majority of Zhang Jingqiao's snow white skin \*\* in the public bath before Yue Zhong's eyes. The b cup big white rabbits had a pair of pink cherries. It was extremely enticing under the bathroom lighting.

"Master, your slave has come to serve you. This is slave's first

time. Please be tender master.”

# Chapter 140: Rebel Girl Zhang Jingqiao

---

Receiving that kind of special service from Zhang Jingqiao, Yue Zhong's blood started to rise.

Zhang Jingqiao sunk her head under water for twenty seconds and came back up, gasping for air. A large amount of water droplets flowed down from her beautiful face to her chest.

Zhang Jingqiao opened her eyes and gave a coquettish glance to Yue Zhong. She extended a hand grabbing little Yue Zhong, \*\* sat down.

A trace of bright red started ripple up in the bath. Her brows wrinkled, and after a moment she rolled off.

“Slave boldly offends, please punish master!” Zhang Jingqiao skillfully extended \*\* little \*\* and lightly licked Yue Zhong's ear. She blew into his ear and teased.

Yue Zhong wrapped the tempting little fox up in his arms. He wantonly enjoyed her body full of charm and youth.

Despite it being this little fox's first time, her mouth continuously shouted out astonishing noises that could cause someone to blush, feeling excited like an extremely easy slut.

Yue Zhong was also extremely excited, finally resting after she begged to stop.

Zhang Jingqiao was in Yue Zhong's embrace resting after sex. She exhaustedly said: “Master, you are truly strong.”

Yue Zhong softly laughed. He began to massage her delicate and soft body. Her body was covered in beads of sweat. It was warm and slippery like lukewarm jade. Yue Zhong never thought he would eat up one of his maids before the young Guo Yu.

Yue Zhong massaged Zhang Jingqiao's beautiful pair of white rabbits. Feeling the elastic and warm soft sensation he slowly

asked: “Why did you come seduce me?”

Yue Zhong wasn't so handsome as to make a beautiful woman like Zhang Jingqiao fall in love at first sight.

Zhang Jingqiao turned and directly looked into Yue Zhong's eyes: “Because master is strong enough. I want to drink milk and eat bread. I want to wear makeup, sexy lingere, be taken care of, and have attention. These things only master can give me. The most important thing is after becoming your woman, you gave me a feeling of safety.”

Yue Zhong watched Zhang Jingqiao speak the truth. He lightly laughed and embraced her saying: “You are realistic. No problem. You can eat with us at the table from now on. I will also make you a preliminary team member. Do you want to study or start working? I can help arrange it for you.”

In the past Zhang Jingqiao and the other women were maids for Yue Zhong, Guo Yu an Lu Wen. Naturally they didn't have the qualifications to eat at the same table. The four women were incorporated as outside personnel. They could eat their fill and have some non staple foods. But naturally it couldn't compare with Yue Zhong's food.

Zhang Jingqiao sweetly smiled. She used her sweet cherry lips to kiss Yue Zhong: “Thank you master!”

Zhang Jingqiao hugged Yue Zhong. She used her delicate and soft \*\* to rub against Yue Zhongs arms and said: “I don't want to study or work. I want to stay at master's side and serve master. May I?”

Zhang Jingqiao was a rebellious girl before Z-Age. She had no mind to study. She didn't want to study even more after Z-Age.

Yue Zhong didn't care and said: “You may!”

It wasn't a problem to provide for a beautiful woman like Zhang Jingqiao with Stone Horse Village's current supplies. Yue Zhong didn't care if she wanted to be an ignorant and incompetent vase.

Yue Zhong looked at Zhang Jingqiao and plainly said: “But, since you are following me, you are my person. If you run off to another man, don’t blame my ruthlessness.”

Zhang Jingqiao showed too much debauchery just now. Yue Zhong liked her strong passion, but he didn’t want her to have an affair.

Zhang Jingqiao smiled and flattered Yue Zhong: “Don’t worry master. Slave certainly won’t do that kind of thing.”

Zhang Jingqiao has some brains even though she is someone rebellious. She isn’t an idiot. All order collapsed after Z-Age. People would break up or get divorced before Z-Age once an affair was discovered. After Z-Age, if she had an affair, she could end up in a living death.

Xue Kaishan destroyed their will to resist. He once made them go look at the women who had been tortured. Zhang Jingqiao already saw a beautiful woman tortured to death. She had always been bold and unruly, but she was scared into behaving.

Zhang Jingqiao leaned into Yue Zhong like a docile kitten. She softly said: “Master, what do you think of my older sister?”

Yue Zhong thought of the girl in the ponytail with a calm temperament. The polite and bookish girl named Zhang Jingwei, then he said: “Not bad! She looks like a gentle and quiet woman.”

Zhang Jingqiao revealed a strange smile and said: “Master, also bring her into the house, how about it? Us two will attend on you together. A sister’s threesome, wouldn’t it be happy?”

Yue Zhong was slightly dumbfounded. He looked at Zhang Jingqiao in his embrace. He never thought this rebel girl would unexpectedly throw her own sister into his embrace. She actually said the words sister’s threesome.

“But she is your sister.” Yue Zhong hesitated a moment and said. He couldn’t help but think, the somewhat sinister thing Zhang Jingqiao proposed, \*\* something in the depths of his heart.

“I am thinking of my sister. She will be one of yours sooner or later. Later is not as good as sooner. Furthermore, my sister isn’t like me. She was a famous top student in school, the well known flower of the whole school. She was a dream girl of several wimpy kids.” Zhang Jingqiao continued to stimulate Yue Zhong.

Zhang Jingqiao had her own thoughts. As soon as she saw the outstanding and beautiful princess Guo Yu with her hot body, she knew that she couldn’t win over Guo Yu. She planned to pull her sister into Yue Zhong’s embrace. They could to fight for Yue Zhong’s attention. Their lives can become better if Yue Zhong dotes on them.

Yue Zhong lightly slapped Zhang Jingqiao’s little butt: “Let it go!”

Yue Zhong is the dictator of Stone Horse Village. So long as he wished, sleeping together with dozens of women wouldn’t be difficult. But he didn’t have that type of inclination. Everything comes naturally. After all he still faced the big enemy Long Hai City survivor base. He didn’t have any idea to wantonly seek pleasure.

Zhang Jingqiao’s lips quivered after seeing Yue Zhong be noncommittal, and she didn’t say anything else. She just quietly leaned into Yue Zhong’s embrace, enjoying the rare peace. Zhang Jingqiao didn’t sleep easy a single day in Xue Kaishan’s hands.

The next day early morning, Yue Zhong brought Zhang Jingqiao, Guo Yu, and Lu Wen to the table.

An extremely sumptuous feast was on the table. There was soy milk, donuts, milk, bread, eggs, and ham.

## Chapter 141: Meet Again

---

There were six maids standing around the table wearing black and white lacy uniforms. They were young and old, but the one common factor is they were all beautiful.

Zhang Jingqiao's sister Zhang Jingwei also stood there.

Zhang Jingwei saw her sister at the table and her eyes appeared shocked: "Jingqiao! How is she at the table?"

"That is Zhang Jingqiao. How is she at the table?"

This six maids saw Zhang Jingqiao at the table. Their eyes flashed with shock and suspicion.

"Fox!" Lu Wen looked at Zhang Jingqiao at the table, and her little mouth snapped in a low voice.

Guo Yu looked at Zhang Jingqiao, and her eyes flashed strangely. She was always closely watched by Lu Wen. She rarely had an opportunity alone with Yue Zhong. She never thought another sister would leap ahead of her into Yue Zhong's bed. Guo Yu didn't say anything although she felt strange in her heart.

"Brother Yue, Can I have another portion of milk and bread?" Zhang Jingqiao tactfully asked Yue Zhong after breakfast.

Zhang Jingqiao could only use her own distributed goods if she was a real preliminary team member. Ordinary preliminary team members would have to go search or trade for milk and bread. Or they could get some as a reward for searching when searching for goods and materials.

Yue Zhong didn't care and said: "As you wish! If you want to eat something make someone prepare it for you."

Yue Zhong naturally couldn't be mean to his women. Those goods and materials were taken from back in Lei Jiang City. He didn't place them in his eye back then, let alone the present.

Yue Zhong left the table with Guo Yu and Lu Wen after breakfast. He did target practice, a long run, and took a squadron to clear out zombies every day. He was a busy mess. Because it had been too busy, he didn't have time to eat the sweet fruit Guo Yu,

"Sister, eat!" Zhang Jingqiao quickly made people bring some milk and bread. She smiled and handed it to Zhang Jingwei. From a child until now, this is the first time he had taken care of her older sister.

"Thank you!" Zhang Jingwei hesitated a moment then took the milk and bread. She really couldn't resist the temptation of the milk and bread.

Goods and materials were strained with Xue Kaishan. Zhang Jingwei and the other women could only eat rice until they were half satisfied. Only Xue Kaishan and his best buddies could eat and drink things like milk and bread. They could eat their fill as well as a little vegetables and fish after becoming Yue Zhong's maids. But they didn't have milk and bread.

Zhang Jingwei saw Yue Zhong and Guo Yu eat and drink milk and bread, and she really wanted it.

The remaining several maids watched Zhang Jingwei eat and drink, and their eyes were written with envy. They hadn't eaten those things in a long time.

Zhang Jingqiao bathed in the envious eyes of the other women, unspeakably comfortable. She was essentially a little vain, and a rebellious girl. Her nature wasn't bad apart from this.

The woman with shoulder length hair that Yue Zhong discovered in Poplar Tree Village looked at Zhang Jingqiao jealously: "What magic! One day I will trump you."

The nurse watched Zhang Jingwei eat the bread without blinking.

---



A jeep zoomed along the road towards Stone Horse Village.

“Who are you! Quick stop the vehicle, otherwise we will shoot!” The two guards at the village entrance shouted after seeing the Jeep.

Two type 89, 12.7mm heavy machine gun was mounted at the gate. These two heavy machine guns could easily tear apart the jeep.

The Jeep quickly stopped. Kong Tao stepped out of the vehicle: “Don’t open fire! We are envoys from Long Hai City survivor base. We have words to speak with Captain Yue!”

Chen Yao, Ji Qingwu, and Cai Xiao all walked out of the vehicle.

A gate guard saw Ji Qingwu and immediately stepped forward smiling: “Captain Ji, I was originally one of yours. Please enter.”

Ji Qingwu saw that team member. Her beautiful eyebrow raised. She was a little startled, but then she said: “You are Li Wancai!”

The man named Li Wancai was an ordinary troop under Ji Qingwu. After participating in various kinds of battle and training with Yue Zhong over several days, he had developed a sense of sturdiness and self-confidence. Ji Qingwu didn’t see many elites with these kinds of qualities during her time in Long Hai City survivor base.

Li Wancai smiled at Ji Qingwu: “Captain Ji, ah, no. Now I should call you miss Ji Qingwu. Miss Ji Qingwu, your timing is unfortunate. Captain Yue already took people out to clear zombies and search for supplies. I’ll go inform section chief Li Manni to receive you!”

Li Wancai immediately turned and entered the base after speaking.

“Secretary Li? Li Manni unexpectedly became section chief?” Chen Yao, Zhang Li, Wang Fang, and Cai Xiao all heard this information and couldn’t believe it. Li Manni’s status was below

theirs at that time, but she has unexpectedly become a section chief of Stone Horse Village. Furthermore, they could only hide in the specialty region house at Long Hai City. They had to be careful every time they left.

Soon after four women, Li Manni, Zhang Xuan, Yuan Ying, and Zhang Xin all came out of the village.

“Yao Yao, I missed you!” Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up as soon as she saw Chen Yao. She ran over and gave her a hug. Zhang Xuan and Chen Yao were extremely close in the dorms.

Chen Yao clapped Zhang Xuan’s back and asked: “I’ve missed you Xuan Xuan. How have you been here? Has Yue Zhong bullied you?”

Zhang Xuan shook her head. She grabbed Chen Yao’s hand and talked without getting to the point: “No. He is always busy. I rarely see him. But, Yao Yao I’ll tell you. I am now the education section chief. I’m in charge of children studies. Those little monsters don’t wish to study one bit. They are like flying chickens and running dogs all day in the school.”

Yuan Ying looked at Wang Fang, her face carrying a smile: “Wang Fang, how are you all doing in Long Hai City survivor base?”

The women who stayed with Yue Zhong all looked at Wang Fang to see how she would respond. They wanted to know how the government run Long Hai City survivor base was.

Wang Fang hesitated, silent a moment. She saw the four women wearing the latest fashion, and her face turned red. She knew they were much better off than her from their nice complexions. This made the vain girl extremely suffer, and she didn’t want to speak.

Cai Xiao’s eyes flashed with honesty, and she told the current situation: “We aren’t well there! Law and order isn’t too good. We can only stay in the building every day. We can’t go anywhere. We

can only eat our fill every day that's it."

## Chapter 142: Lobbyist

---

Yuan Ying carried an air of superiority as she spoke to Chen Yao: “Like this ah. It is rare that you all make a visit. Come I will treat you to a good meal.”

Chen Yao was prettier with a better temperament. She also received Yue Zhong’s attention before they separated. Yuan Ying was always jealous of her. She was extremely happy about her choice at that time. Especially after hearing Chen Yao and the others were in dire straights.

“What spirit, but you held onto Yue Zhong’s leg. You are nothing without Yue Zhong!” Wang Fang looked at Yuan Ying with her air of superiority. Her heart filled with envy as she thought. But she was careful, and she didn’t let those words come out. She was an outsider here after all. A disturbance wouldn’t be good for her.

Chen Yao slightly smiled at Yuan Ying: “Many thanks to you!”

Chen Yao was on a mission to persuade Yue Zhong. She didn’t want to say anything that would offend someone within Yue Zhong’s power.

“Follow me!” Yuan Ying smiled. She lead the women to the dining room.

There was fish with vegetables, salt and pepper shrimp, spicy snails, braised carp, and sauteed vegetables. The four meat dishes with vegetables were arranged on the table. There were two big bottles of coke and sprite to the side.

Cai Xai and Wang Fang’s eyes brightened up upon seeing the dishes. They grabbed chopsticks and wolfed down the fresh food in large bites. They hadn’t eaten fresh meat not to mention fresh fish.

Yuan Ying watched Cai Xaio and Wang Fang wolf down the food. She looked pleased with herself and full of happiness in her heart. This meal cost her a half month of provisions. But she could only

see the envy and admiration in the eyes of Cai Xiao and Wang Fang. Her vanity was greatly satisfied.

Eating that delicious food, Wang Fang and the others felt traces of regret in the depths of their heart. They chose to trust in the government when Yue Zhong let them make the choice. They went to Long Hai City, and the outcome is they can only hide scared in the building. Yuan Ying stayed here and became a section leader of Stone Horse Village. Her days were not only much better than theirs, but she was even more independent and respected.

A team member walked in when the food was almost all used up. He said to Li Manni: "Section chief Li, Captain Yue already returned. He wants you to bring Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu to meet him."

"I understand!" Li Manni slightly nodded and stood up. She said to Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu: "Let's go!"

Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu stood up and followed Li Manni out of the dining room.

Wang Fang saw Yue Zhong call for the girls. She became extremely envious and thought: "Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu really have a different place in his heart compared to us."

Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu were brought to the reception hall of the most luxurious villa in Stone Horse Village by Li Manni.

Chen Yao calmly sized up Yue Zhong after she entered the reception hall. Strange feelings gave birth in her heart.

Yue Zhong hadn't yet matured when they were in Lei Jiang City, and his body held traces of an ordinary person then. At most he was an ordinary college student that obtained evolver power. Yue Zhong's appearance hadn't changed that much, but his whole attitude was completely different. Chen Yao facing Yue Zhong felt like when she faced her uncle Chen Jianfeng, who was in charge of thousands of survivors in Long Hai City survivor base.

Yue Zhong showed Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu the sofa, and he sat facing opposite of them. He drank a nutritional drink and unhurriedly asked: “Chen Yao, what have you come for this time?”

Chen Yao arranged her thoughts and said: “Yue Zhong. I have come today to convince you to bring people into Long Hai City survivor base. The government will no longer investigate the things you did in the past so long as you willingly bring your people into Long Hai City survivor base. Furthermore they will also establish a fourth special police squadron. They will let you be the fourth squadron’s captain, a high ranking administrator.”

“Frankly you want to incorporate our military equipment.” Yue Zhong heard what was said and slightly shook his head. He lightly laughed and said straight-forward: “I am Stone Horse Village’s absolute ruler. There are over a thousand citizens under my banner and hundreds of elite soldiers. On what basis would I incorporate into Long Hai City survivor base and live a life beneath another’s face?”

Chen Yao used Long Hai City survivor base’s orthodox nature to continue persuading Yue Zhong: “But you are acting against the law! Yue Zhong, rescuing survivors is worthy of praises and honor. But if you gather troops, it disobeys the government. That nature needs to change. Indeed your military power doesn’t look weak. But if in the future the government defeats the zombies and recaptures the country, they could casually sent a unit to steamroll over your army. You need to throw in with the government now. You can succeed in the future relying on your ability and bring honor to your family.”

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao and coldly said: “Let me throw in with Long Hai City Survivor base. Don’t joke around. You must have already seen the situation inside the base? It is lifeless. Future and hope cannot be seen. The government cannot bear the swelling number of riffraff. This place, you want me to throw in with them? Are you sure you’re thinking straight?”

Yue Zhong would have chosen to bring the Always Bright Village survivors into Long Hai City Survivor base if he saw an extremely orderly government like the one before Z-Age. He would have taken his subordinates and friends and departed. But he only saw chaos and was framed. He already completely lost trust in Long Hai City survivor base, and he gave up the idea of relying on them.

Chen Yao waited on Yue Zhong and spoke: “That is because there are people in the government obsessed with obtaining power and profit. The military’s outward devotion and inward opposition towards the government creates this type of situation. Yue Zhong, you could certainly build a good survivor base if you joined up and allied with my uncle Chen Jianfeng.”

Yue Zhong refused without any doubt: “I refuse!”

Chen Yao’s eyes flash a profound loss of hope. She spoke once again after striving hard to organize her thoughts: “Since you don’t wish to join the base, that is fine. I have come here for another mission as well. It is for you to bring men and ally with us to recapture the granary on the outskirts of Shanglin County. We will split the reward after capturing it. We receive seventy percent, you receive thirty.”

Chen Jianfeng wasn’t as naive as Chen Yao. He calculated earlier that Yue Zhong wouldn’t join in with him. This is why he prepared two strategies for Chen Yao.

Yue Zhong thought a moment and finally said: “Fifty fifty!”

Chen Yao gritted her teeth and surrendered a little: “Sixty forty!”

Yue Zhong insisted this distribution: “Fifty fifty!”

The granary on the outskirts of Shanglin County is a large scale state-owned storehouse. If they could capture the half of the goods, they could feed thousands of people for years without a problem.

Chen Yao agreed: “Fine! Fifty fifty!”

# Chapter 143: Entering the Base Again

---

Yue Zhong asked: “What time do we start?”

Although there was an adequate supply of goods in Stone Horse Village, but the food supply problem continually pressured Yue Zhong’s mind. None of the seeds planted in the farmland have germinated. This means every time they eat there is less food. There will be trouble as soon as all the foodstuffs are eaten.

Chen Yao hesitated a moment and said to Yue Zhong: “My uncle wants to meet you before taking action. Can you come with me to the base for a face to face?”

Yue Zhong’s vision focused, and his brows slightly wrinkled. He calmly stared at Chen Yao. Perhaps politicians don’t fight well, but shady people can be expert schemers. He refused Chen Jianfeng’s offer to join him. Chen Yao’s invitation could possibly be a banquet set up to murder the guest.

Chen Yao quickly understood Yue Zhong’s misgivings after seeing him not speak. She directly looked at Yue Zhong and said: “I can use my integrity and life to vouch for your safety.”

Yue Zhong didn’t speak. He calmly weighed the risk of entering into the base and the possible reward of the mission, as well as his ability to escape capture. If there is a certain death situation, then he absolutely cannot go.

Seeing the silent Yue Zhong, Ji Qingwu used her slightly magnetic and pleasing voice to say: “Yue Zhong, go make a trip to Long Hai City base. I will use my life to guarantee your safety. I won’t let you die as long as I’m alive. I will accompany you in death if you die. If Chen Jianfeng has set up a trap for you, I will separate from the Chen family and follow you.”

Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed with a trace of strange light upon hearing Ji Qingwu’s words, and he said in a deep voice: “Good! I



will go with you to meet Chen Jianfeng.”

Ji Qingwu was stamped into Yue Zhong’s brain after the first time seeing her valiant grace as she fought.

Chen Yao saw Yue Zhong readily promise to meet Chen Jianfang. She wasn’t too happy, in her heart, in fact she was shrouded in confusion and disappointment: “Yue Zhong really liked Qingwu.”

Yue Zhong made all kinds of arrangements after making his determination, and he brought people to Long Hai City survivor base.

Two big trucks, two Hummers, and a Jeep formed a motorcade that entered into the original residence that Yue Zhong’s group stayed in at Long Hai City survivor base.

The survivors in the city all looked at the motorcade confounded. They all knew how precious fuel was. Apart from those who drove out to search for goods, the large majority rode bikes or walked. There were also some government workers who drove. The sons of high level official rode street bikes and wasted a lot of fuel.

Yue Zhong looked at his surroundings after leaving the vehicle. He saw that there were a lot more people here than when he first came. Crude tents were set up everywhere. There were a large amount of survivors squeezed into a small space, and it stunk to high heaven. It was like a refugee camp.

Ordinary people sought a stable place to live after Z-Age. The Long Hai City survivor base with the government title received a large amount of survivors every day. The base food consumption was extremely large because of this. This is why Chen Jianfeng decided to hit up the granary.

Kong Tao used a hand to seal his nose after getting out of the vehicle. He looked at those refugee survivors with disgust: “Yue Zhong, why not drive directly to the specialty region? What have you driven here to do?”

Kong Tao was a government official in Long Hai City before Z-Age. He followed Chen Jianfeng after Z-Age and became a high official in Long Hai City survivor base. He had never been to the refugee camp once. He was full of loathing towards these dirty stinky refugees.

Yue Zhong disdainfully looked at Kong Tao, and directly stopped him: “Stone Horse Village is building a city wall. I want to recruit some survivors to build the wall. Chief Kong Tao, is there a problem?”

Kong Tao’s eyes changed after hearing those words. He was extremely cordial to Yue Zhong: “No problem! Recruit more to build your wall. Are there enough people here? I can help you recruit if there isn’t enough.”

The population was extremely large in Long Hai City survivor base. A large amount of food was consumed every day. Kong Tao hated those survivors a lot. They made Long Hai City stinky and dirty. In his opinion these survivors were like dead weight. They had no skills, and they didn’t dare go search for supplies. There weren’t any beautiful women. They were the same as trash. Kong Tao wouldn’t refuse Yue Zhong’s intention to recruit them for work.

Furthermore Kong Tao was a clever thinker. If he helps Yue Zhong, he could have another escape route. He could have a good life with Yue Zhong if he annexes Long Hai City base in the future.

Yue Zhong instructed to Chen Shitou at his side: “Chen Shitou, take people and go recruit some survivors. Recruit two hundred people. I want one hundred and fifty males, and fifty children. Ask if they want to go build the Stone Horse Village Wall. They can eat three bowls of gruel every and two steamed buns.”

Chen Shitou nodded and went out.

“Recruit me!! Recruit me! I’m strong!!”

“Recruit me! I will absolutely work hard. I was a loader in the past!”

Chen Shitou had just announced the recruitment conditions. Practically all of the survivors regardless of male or female surrounded Chen Shitou and loudly shouted. The scene erupted. It was like the opening of the stock market, like those crazy investors cramming to purchase shares.

A large amount of survivors surrounded Chen Shitou making his work very hard.

Chen Shitou roared: “Quiet! Form into five lines!!”

“Recruit me!! Recruit me! I’m strong!!”

Chen Shitou’s roar didn’t have the least bit of use. Those survivors feared they wouldn’t be recruited and completely circled Chen Shitou. The people originally didn’t have the habit of making lines. They would fight for their lives in order to have a better opportunity.

Chen Shitou was somewhat at a loss facing the surging crowd. He had never handled something like this before.

“Your way is useless!” Yue Zhong strode forward. He coldly looked at those survivors and said: “Give them the whip and ruthlessly thrash! Whoever cuts in line will be whipped! Then they will be made to leave! I don’t want people who don’t follow orders.”

Six subordinates of Yue Zhong that had already leveled up to at least eight walked forward wearing the mutated river snake armor. They pulled a whip from their waist and ruthlessly whipped some survivors.

The whip snapped, and those survivors hit by the whip each wailed in pain then fled. Seeing that miserable sight, the survivors shivered in fear. They calmly formed into five lines.

Yue Zhong looked at the obedient survivors and coldly said:

“Those who don’t listen to my words will be whipped. They will clearly understand the importance of order and discipline.”

“I understand. Captain Yue!” Chen Shitou nodded and responded.

Yao Yao stood at Yue Zhong’s side wearing a little military uniform looking at the sight. She revealed a pondering look. This little lolita quietly slipped into Yue Zhong’s vehicle. Yue Zhong was already at the base when he discovered.

# Chapter 144: Japanese

---

Those survivors all became well behaved after Yue Zhong taught them a lesson. They formed orderly lines and reported their names, abilities, and previous occupations. Then, they awaited Chen Shitou's choice.

These survivors didn't have any particular skills, but there were several strong men. Enough for Chen Shitou to choose.

Yue Zhong saw that there weren't any problems here. He finally brought four close combat unit members wearing mutated river snake armor over to Kong Tao's party.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong and Kong Tao's group went towards the specialty region.

Yue Zhong maintained an alert status along the way, on guard in case the Ice King launched a sneak attack. But he never sensed any danger. Obviously the Ice King didn't dispatch any experts to assassinate him.

"Save me! Save me!!" A mournful cry came out from a house as Yue Zhong's group passed by. Then a woman in tattered clothes rushed out of the room in desperation.

Two short, shirtless men also rushed out of the room, and they snatched the woman.

The woman begged the surrounding people: "Save me! They want to rape me. They are Japanese. They want to rape me. Save me, I'm begging you!!"

"Truly evil. These Japanese come and harm women. Fuck, does the government take care of anything?"

"Take care of what. They are specialty region nobles, privileged figures, who dares do anything, who would willingly do

something?”

The surrounding survivors heard the woman's cries, but they didn't dare do anything. Instead they one by one withdrew, afraid they would invite disaster on themselves. Several hot blooded young survivors wanted to go forward and stop the savage act of the two Japanese. Their blood became cold after hearing the two words 'Specialty Region'.

Ordinary survivors will face severe punishment if caught stealing, robbing, and raping in Long Hai City survivor base. They can even be shot on sight. Only certain people can punish those of the privileged class in the specialty region.

These ordinary survivors will suffer many losses for arguing with specialty region people even if there is a reason. Their hot blood cooled down.

The two short Japanese men stared at the surrounding survivors. They recklessly shouted: “What are you looking at! Looking to get beaten?”

Yue Zhong looked at these two arrogant Japanese men. An obscure flame rose in his heart, and he coldly stared at the two Japanese men.

Kong Tao saw the two Japanese men, then he immediately said to Yue Zhong: “Let's go Yue Zhong.”

Kong Tao had already grown accustomed to the unaccustomed. Several sons of high officials liked to play a game of snatching women. They liked to see the good family women cry before them and they liked to see their powerless expressions. This was an enjoyment they couldn't obtain before Z-Age.

Before Z-Age, because of internet and media supervision, the sons and daughters of high officials didn't dare do these kinds of things in broad daylight. But after Z-Age they lost supervision. The uncertain future and terror made them even more wanton and sick

than before Z-Age.

There are very few sons and daughters of high level officials with good hearts like Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu. But compared to them, those sons and daughters of high level officials that recklessly abused their own power to serve their self desires were much more prominent.

Yue Zhong sarcastically said to Chen Yao: “This Long Hai City survivor base is a truly good base. Nobody cares about raping women after entering the specialty region. It is truly a good base. No one dares to be this unrestrained in Stone Horse Village.”

Chen Yao’s face burst green and white after hearing Yue Zhong’s words. Even though she is Chen Jianfeng’s niece, she doesn’t have any authority. She doesn’t have the authority to do anything about this type of situation.

One of the short Japanese men saw Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu standing beside Yue Zhong. His eyes lit up, and he said to the other Japanese man: “What pretty little women! San Jingxiong! Let’s grab them and take them inside. Chief Gui Tianshe will certainly be happy.”

San Jingxiong strode towards Yue Zhong and arrogantly said: “I’ll give you four packages of instant noodles to give these two women to us. Don’t like the price, and you won’t get a single package of instant noodles.”

Kong Tao saw San Jing’s plans for Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu. He frowned and moved forward to obstruct: “Mr. San Jingxiong, these two are specialty region people. Please take notice of their status.”

San Jingxiong’s brows wrinkled as he stared at Kong Tao: “Who are you?”

Kong Tao said: “I am the Long Hai City office director Kong Tao.”

San Jinxiong looked Kong Tao over. He saw Kong Tao's princely appearance, then he finally turned to the other Japanese person: "Zhen Tian, they are specialty region people."

San Jinxiong knew the degree of seriousness. With their status, they could play with women outside specialty region without any serious penalty. But they could not casually grab a woman from the specialty region. Their Japanese status wasn't as high as theirs.

San Jinxiong and Zhen Tian grabbed the woman and took her back inside.

"Let's go!" Kong Tao smiled and said to Yue Zhong. Kong Tao saw that those two Japanese men no longer continued to seek trouble. His heart relaxed. It could have an influence on his leadership if he quarreled with these Japanese men. Kong Tao also didn't wish to argue with the Japanese men. Also, the important thing was that the several Japanese people in the base had strong support.

Yue Zhong calmly watched the development of the situation. He saw two policemen watching from far away, then immediately turn to leave. He looked at the pale-faced Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu, then he ridiculed them: "Chen Yao, this is the base you want me to seek shelter in? I want to know, is this not China after all? Japanese devils ride above our heads and take a dump, and no one does anything. This type of place. Even if you kill me I won't go over."

Finished speaking, Yue Zhong turned to the team members at his side and coldly said: "Rescue her! Break their arms!"

Two direct subordinates standing next to Yue Zhong immediately shot forward. Two kicks landed on the backs of those Japanese men, knocking them to the floor. Then they snapped the arms of the two men with a twist.

"Ah!! Idiots!! You are all uncivilized!! You dare injure international friends. I want to file a complaint against your



leader.”

“Idiots!! Ah!! It hurts!! I should kill you. You will pay for your actions!!”

San Jinxiong and Zhen Tian screamed out in pain and made threats at the same time.

Yue Zhong coldly looked at the two men and commanded: “Truly big mouths! Make them shut up their dog mouths!”

Two subordinate members moved forward. They ruthlessly slapped San Jingxiong and Zhen Tian across the mouths. They sent several teeth flying, and blood spewed out. Their faces both began to swell.

# Chapter 145: Gui Tianshou

---

Kong Tao saw Yue Zhong fearlessly teach those two Japanese men a lesson. He shouted in cold sweat from behind: “Yue Zhong, don’t act rashly. Although these Japanese men are foreigners, they are still specialty region members. There could be huge trouble from you hitting them.”

First class foreigners, Second class officials, third class minorities, fourth class Han. Foreign friends are always placed first. The whole police department will search if a foreigner loses a bicycle until it is found. If there is a natural disaster, first the assets of international friends are protected, and then the Chinese are taken care of. Dealing with foreigners is not a trivial matter. This is a strange phenomenon in modern China, better to foreigners than to our own countrymen.

Yue Zhong didn’t take the slightest notice to the anxious Kong Tao. He strode into the house. He saw a bald naked pot-bellied middle-aged Japanese man on top of a woman in the bed.

The room was full of the sounds of the man gasping and the woman moaning.

Yue Zhong pointed at the man and coldly said: “Bring him to me!”

A team member shot forward and grabbed the man, firmly pulled him off of the woman, and flung him to the ground.

Gui Tianshou’s mood was interrupted, and he became immediately furious. He slapped Yue Zhong’s team member, Wang Dali, after standing up: “Idiot! Who are you? I am the president of the Ni Ya corporation, Gui Tianshou. I am a specialty investor. I’ve helped my customers Chinese rise from poverty and become rich. I am specialty region citizen.”

Gui Tianshou brought a large amount of funds when he entered

Long Hai City and received a grand treatment. The government officials served upon this uncle. He had a good personal relationship with high level government officials, giving him a bossing domineering arrogance.

Wang Dali grabbed Gui Tianshou's hand, and he returned a slap across Gui Tianshou's face. Gui Tianshou's face started to swell, and his mouth continuously dripped blood: "Pei! Little Japanese devil! This is China's land. Hold back your rage."

Gui Tianshou ate Wang Dali's slap in the face. He was seeing stars, and fury welled up in his heart. But he is a President after all is said and done. He quickly calmed down. He carefully looked over Yue Zhong and the rest, recovered his calmness, and said: "Who are you? This is my private residence. Please leave immediately. Otherwise I will call the police."

Gui Tianshou was arrogant because he had the government to rely on. But he knew better than to not eat the current loss. Everyone in Yue Zhong's party carried a valiant air. They obviously were guys who couldn't be threatened by him. It wouldn't pay to get killed.

Yue Zong pointed at the woman on the bed and coldly said: "What is going on here?"

"That one?" Gui Tianshou disdainfully looked at the woman on the bed. He said to Yue Zhong: "I paid her four bags of instant noodles. She voluntarily let me play for a day. You can ask her if you don't believe. Zhen Ni, am I speaking the truth?"

The woman dropped her head. Her long black hair completely covered her head, and she said in a low voice: "Yes!!"

Gui Tianshou raised an eyebrow and stared at Yue Zhong. His eyes flashed a ruthless light: "Sir, if you wish to preside over justice then please leave! This is a normal flesh transaction between us."

Gui Tianshou planned to first coax Yue Zhong into leaving, then he would investigate Yue Zhong's background. If Yue Zhong's power was much larger than his, then that would be it. If Yue Zhong wasn't his match, then he would do his best to make sure Yue Zhong was unable to live, and unable to beg for death.

Wang Dali spit at the woman on the bed: "Pei! Cheap woman!"

The girl wearing western fashions trembled. Tears stole from her eyes, and she wept in a low voice. She was a highly educated good looking foreign investment white collar worker before Z-Age. Yet after Z-Age she sold herself for four packets of instant noodles.

Yue Zhong waved his hand. He brought the woman over who recently fled: "How do you explain this woman? Was it a flesh transaction?"

That woman used an anxious voice to explain: "No! I didn't make a transaction with him. He said he wanted to recruit a female servant. Each day I would get three steamed buns and three bowls of gruel. I came over here to work. I never thought that as soon as I walk in the door they would want to rape me. I'm really not a prostitute."

Yue Zhong looked at Gui Tianshou and coldly said: "How do you explain this? I personally saw your two subordinates grab this woman. Your subordinate also had thoughts to act against my friends."

Gui Tianshou's brain powered on. He rapidly considered, then deeply sighed: "I don't have anything to say. Take me to the police. I believe that the noble government will certainly treat me just and righteous."

Gui Tianshou remembered the severity of Yue Zhong and his men. He immediately thought of his scheme. He and the government had an understanding, so long as he didn't touch the women of the High officials in the specialty region, he would quickly be released from the government's hands.

Yue Zhong maintained his composure and said: “These words, you admit your own actions.

Gui Tianshou craftily quipped: “I have been framed. Please let the police come inspect this matter. If there is evidence to show I did those things, I will certainly be held responsible.”

Kong Tao also advised from the side: “Yes! Give this matter over to the police Yue Zhong. You must believe the party and the government.”

Yue Zhong didn’t look at anyone else. He turned and said to Ji Qingwu, and asked her: “Ji Qingwu, do you feel we should give him to the police?”

Ji Qingwu was silent a moment. Her heroic little face revealed a struggling expression. She looked to Chen Yao and finally said: “Yue Zhong, give them over to the police!”

“Idiot!” Standing beside Yue Zhong, the little lolita Yao Yao cast a glance at Ji Qingwu, and she muttered.

Yue Zhong revealed a meaningful smile and said: “Good! I’ll believe you once.”

The surrounding policemen quickly rushed over after hearing the foreigner was having problems.

A twenty six or seven year old policeman came to the house. He saw the bloody and swollen faces of the three Japanese men. His brows wrinkled as he said: “What happened?”

San Jingxiong suddenly yelled out to the policeman: “Officer! they publicly attacked us! Quickly arrest them! My hand was broken by them!”

Things happened suddenly. Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu’s faces both changed. They never expected these scandalous evil Japanese men would file a complaint first, and they unexpectedly bit back.

## Chapter 146: Delivered to Police

---

Yue Zhong stood to the side coldly smiling without speaking. He watched those Japanese men rely on the support of the police. Yue Zhong was enraged in his heart, but he had another goal. He maintained his composure and watched the Japanese performance.

The policeman looked at Yue Zhong's group and asked: "Is it truly as they say?"

The subordinates standing at Yue Zhong's side were all of an aggressive generation. They possessed an intrepid aura. Although that policeman favored his extremely mighty international friends, he did not want to carelessly provoke Yue Zhong's seemingly extraordinarily powerful group.

Yue Zhong silently smiled. He turned his head and coldly looked at Gui Tianshou.

Constantly looked at by the spectator's cold eyes, Gui Tianshou's heart immediately got the chills. Yue Zhong knew his specialty region status and he dared make people beat him. Obviously Yue Zhong is capable. Gui Tianshou didn't want to make the slightest enemy before knowing Yue Zhong's true status.

Thinking of these matters, Gui Tianshou shot forward, ruthlessly slapped San Jingxiong and scolded: "Idiot. Shut Up for me."

San Jingxiong was slapped silly by Gui Tianshou. He turned and looked at Gui Tianshou at a loss. He was only looking out for them. San Jingxiong didn't understand why the boss would unexpectedly slap him. In the past, they were always bold in front of the police.

"Lord Yue, I'm very sorry. It is a joke." Gui Tianshou made a ninety degree bow towards Yue Zhong, then he said to the policeman named Shi Bai: "Officer Shi, Lord Yue thought we were violating women. Please earnestly investigate. I am innocent."

Shi Bai's face showed respect. He decisively said like the embodiment of justice: "I know! President Gui, I certainly will seriously investigate."

Shi Bai looked at Yue Zhong's people and said: "You are all coming with me. We are going to record a statement at the bureau."

Kong Tao went forward and pointed at Yue Zhong saying: "Officer Shi, this person is Chen Jianfeng's honored guest today. Forget the statement matter. Take the two women to give a statement."

Shi Bai was startled. He was secretly glad in his heart he did nothing too outrageous to offend Yue Zhong. One must know, Chen Jianfeng is the main person in charge of Long Hai City. Chen Jianfeng had plenty of methods to deal with this little office worker. He could easily find someone to replace his policeman position. Then it would be too late for him to cry.

Shi Bai said with a businesslike appearance: "I know! Official business is urgent, you guys go ahead. I will certainly justly handle this matter."

Chen Yao looked at the woman who was just short of being raped and said: "Wait a moment, I also want to give a report!"

Chen Yao isn't a fool. She was afraid for the victim's future after they left.

Shi Bai raised a brow and looked at the unordinary beauty Chen Yao with the outstanding temperament. His eyes flashed with a new light. He had only seen this type of beauty on the internet before Z-Age. Those fake beauties that had gone through plastic surgery.

Kong Tao promptly said: "This is Mayor Chen's niece Chen Yao. Officer Shi, you must carefully ensure this young woman's safety. You will have to endure the consequences if there are any

problems.

A large amount of policemen with outstanding character either died fighting or were infected into zombies after Z-Age. All types of people were made policemen in the recruiting process. The police force became mixed with dragons and snakes, a situation of corrupted discipline.

If Kong Tao didn't reveal Chen Yao's status first, then letting this type of beauty into the police station would be like sending a lamb to the slaughter.

"I know!" Shi Bai shivered in his heart and nodded after hearing Kong Tao's words. He was an old fox that had hidden for many years in society. He naturally knew who to provoke and who not to provoke. He would be crushed like a little shrimp if he truly messed with one of the big boys in the base.

The law and order in the base wasn't good. Every night they would find a few bodies deserted in the gutter. The policemen didn't pay attention if they weren't important people or if they couldn't find any useful clues. This type of thing happened frequently. The police didn't care so long as there wasn't street killing and public murders.

Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu went with Shi Bai's group towards the police station.

"Truly innocent!" Yue Zhong looked at the rear image of Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu. He revealed a mocking smile, and he dropped his head and said to the little lolita Yao Yao.

Little Yao Yao tilted her head and thought, then she opened her mouth like a lion to speak: "A pair of revolver shoes, one type fifty four pistol, thirty bullets, and a Replica Tang Sword!"

Yao Yao and wasn't the same as the little lolita's her age. Other girls her age liked pretty clothes, boots, and tasty snacks. Yao Yao liked target practice, fiddling with guns, and running wildly



everywhere the whole day. She liked to study all kinds of combat skills like a boy. She was also really intelligent. She could learn anything. She mastered things somewhat faster than Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong cared about this little lolita that only wanted to fight. He personally equipped her with God and Devil World items to go hunting zombies. Yao Yao had already reached level 6. Adding on her natural agility talent, she ranked third in speed for those under Yue Zhong's power. The first was naturally Yue Zhong that had leveled up several times. The second was the constantly fighting and second in command Chi Yang.

Yue Zhong pinched Yao Yao's sleek little oval face and said: "Good, I promise you!"

Yao Yao unhappily slapped Yue Zhong's hand. She stared at Yue Zhong, then disappeared without a sound into a side alley like a sly cat.

"Let's go!"

Kong Tao saw this matter had been smoothly handled and immediately relaxed a breath. He then lead Yue Zhong into the specialty region.

Chen Jianfeng received Yue Zhong in the reception hall.

Chen Jianfeng carefully sized up Yue Zhong after the host and guest took a seat on the sofas. He saw Yue Zhong had the faint appearance of an upper level prestigious person. He slightly sighed in his heart and thought: "Such a pity!"

After Chen Jianfeng heard Yue Zhong's original situation, he knew Yue Zhong truly wanted to throw in with Long Hai City survivor base at that time. If he could have met Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong could have possibly entered into Long Hai City Survivor base under his power. But he knew Yue Zhong didn't have the faintest idea of joining Long Hai City survivor base. Especially after all of the things the Ice King did. He also knew there was no more

hope in monopolizing Yue Zhong after seeing the air of nobility around him.

Chen Jianfeng directly got to the point and monopolized the conversation: “Hello! Yue Zhong, I am Chen Jianfeng. Do you wish to help Long Hai City? If you have come to help me, I can make the you vice captain of the police force. The deputy commissioner level.”

# Chapter 147: Debauchery

---

Who knows how long one would have to suffer to rise up in the Chinese system if there are people up above. Given that it is Z-Age, Chen Jianfeng is giving Yue Zhong a vice level position. He has to withstand the heavy pressures of the job. After all, in the government the majority of the time, Chen Jianfeng makes the decisions, but there are other leaders. Not everything is decided by one man.

Yue Zhong duly laughed and directly refused: “Mayor Chen, I take to heart your good intentions, but I have no interest. We have come to talk about capturing the granary.”

Chen Jianfeng’s eyes flashed a moment and directly said: “Good! We need to make some preparations on this side. The operation will take place after three days at 10 a.m. Our two sides will send three hundred people and two IFVs. We will go to Shanglin county together and capture the granary.”

Yue Zhong’s brows wrinkled, and he said: “I have no problem with the time. But I don’t agree with the quantity of solders. Our side can only send fifty people and one IFV at most.”

Long Hai City has a large amount of people. They can casually send three hundred people. If Yue Zhong sends three hundred people, then the whole armed force of Stone Horse Village would be cleared out.

Chen Jianfeng’s eyes glimmered a moment. He responded to Yue Zhong’s suggestion: “Good! Each side will send fifty people and one IFV, but our two sides must both send elite units. The number of mutated rats there are extremely large according to intelligence reports, and they have extraordinary combat ability.”

Yue Zhong tapped a finger on the armrest several times. He thought a moment and said: “No problem!”

The provisions at Shanglin county are not only important to the base, but they are extremely important to Yue Zhong. He won't be panicked if they have provisions in hand. He can stabilize the people's hearts so long as there is enough food, and they can accept a large amount of survivors.

Long Hai City base has a steady stream of survivors that caused a headache. It was all because they didn't have food. If they had enough food, those survivors would be the best source of manpower.

The two went over a few details. Yue Zhong finally left after confirming the crucial points of the mission.

Yue Zhong had just left, and immediately a burly man that carried a military presence with dark skin, calloused hands, and clear flashing eyes walked over to Chen Jianfeng.

Chen Jianfeng asked that man: "Wei Fei! How is he? Are you sure you could kill him?"

Wei Fei is Chen Jianfeng's captain of the special police squadron. He was a retired special forces soldier before Z-Age. He executed several missions, and over twenty people had died at his hands. After Z-Age, he discovered he could use God and Devil World weapons to kill zombies and level up. Wei Fei grabbed God and Devil World weapons and attacked zombies on the front lines. He had already leveled up to 18. Furthermore, he was wearing the best equipment Long Hai City could gather. His fighting ability is extraordinary.

Wei Fei said full of self confidence: "That person is very dangerous! I'm afraid he has the same strength as me. But if him and I get in a life or death match, the one who lives will certainly be me!"

Combat skills and combat experience are extremely important. Wei Fei is a special forces soldier, and his killing techniques are extremely proficient. Before he became an evolver, he single

handedly killed a level 6 evolver, and he assassinated a level 10 evolver. Various real merits created his enormous self confidence.

Chen Jianfeng said extremely pleased: “That is good!”

Chen Jianfeng could rest much easier so long as someone could control Yue Zhong. This is one of the main reasons he invited Yue Zhong to come. He wanted to evaluate Yue Zhong’s strength and personally see what kind of person he is.

Kong Tao gave a big welcoming smile as soon as Yue Zhong returned to his subordinates: “Yue Zhong! Today we will go to the Celestial World and relax a bit. You are my guest!”

Kong Tao controlled the public relations fees, and he specialised in receiving guests like Yue Zhong. But he rarely had an opportunity to spend the funds for a powerful chief like Yue Zhong’s arrival. Yue Zhong came today, so Kong Tao took the opportunity to borrow from the public relations fund to seek some pleasure. The other aspect was to make good friends with a powerful boss like Yue Zhong. It could give him an exit path in the future.

“Celestial World?” Yue Zhong understood what kind of place this was as soon as he heard the words. He slightly thought a moment then nodded in agreement: “Good!”

Kong Tao happily lead Yue Zhong towards the specialty region’s high class brothel.

Everyone’s clothes were fresh, clean and neat inside the specialty region, just like before Z-Age. Yue Zhong could even see several dames wearing pretty clothes and taking dogs out for a stroll.

Yue Zhong saw the dames carrying the dogs and cats on the green lawns idly taking a walk, and he shook his head at the management of Long Hai City: “On one side there are ordinary survivors without enough food to eat. The other side there are people walking around with pets. If the government lost suppressive

power, an angry flame would certainly burn this whole base down.”

Yue Zhong’s party entered into a luxurious magnificent nightclub under Kong Tao’s guide.

A thirty plus year old woman with white skin, with a glamorous appearance, and wearing a business uniform walked over. She chuckled at Kong Tao: “Chief Kong Tao, You really are an infrequent visitor, please come here.”

Kong Tao said in high spirits: “Zhang Ning! Call over your prettiest woman. Have her nicely serve the brother at my side.”

Zhang Ning looked at Yue Zhong curiously and asked: “Who is this?”

Kong Tao said to Zhang Ning: “This is Yue Zhong. You only need to know he is Mayor Cheng’s special guest. Let’s go!”

“Good! Qian Yi, bring Chief Kong Tao and his friend into the Sky room.” Zhang Ning called to an extremely innocent looking assistant.

“Please follow me!”

Yue Zhong’s party walked into the Celestial World under the female assistant’s guidance.

Along the way, Yue zhong saw into the hall. Lights flickered and music resounded. A large amount of young men and women were dancing and grinding their bodies.

There were various bottles and glass tables arranged in a corner. There was even one couple having an affair in front of everyone. There were shrieking sounds and laughing sounds ringing everywhere. It was an incomparably depraved and decadent scene.

The residents of the specialty region were extremely worried about the future after Z-Age. Because of this many people chose to indulge themselves since the future is scary and unsteady.

## Chapter 148: Kong's Heavenly Reputation

---

A server came forward with a tray of various fruits and placed it on the table after Yue Zhong's group entered their suite. Fried peanuts, stewed duck neck, sweet and sour cucumber, and all kinds of snacks flowed over like running water. The table probably wouldn't be much before Z-Age, but after Z-Age, these goods were extremely rare.

There were also several types of foreign alcohol and native baijiu on the table. One would need several thousands of dollars to buy this table before Z-Age.

Zhang Ning brought in more than a dozen beautiful women.

The women all had exquisite make up, and each was extremely beautiful.

Among the ring of women, there were two that attracted Yue Zhong's attention. One of them was a thirty year old woman with exquisite makeup and a delicate charm. The other one was about the same age with beautiful black hair. She was delicate and picturesque, and she had beautiful white skin that made people feel tenderness towards her at first glance.

The woman with the perfect make up was someone Yue Zhong knew. It was the young woman he had rescued and taken to Long Hai City, Zhao Li.

Zhao Li saw Yue Zhong and her face slightly changed, flashing with a complex light. At that time she whole heartedly wanted to leave Yue Zhong's system and come to the government established base. She never thought that a rich business woman like herself would fall to this extent, working at the Celestial World after coming to the base. She felt regret and embarrassment after seeing the honored guest Yue Zhong.

Kong Tao smiled at Yue Zhong and asked: "Yue Zhong, which

one do you want?”

Yue Zhong didn't look again at Zhang Li. He chose the delicate and charming woman with beautiful black hair and another good looking woman with a big breasts: “Those two are good!”

The delicate and charming beauty and the big breasted woman brought their fragrance to Yue Zhong's side.

The rest of the scantily clad woman also sat beside their men.

The four team members at Yue Zhong's side also embraced the beautiful women and began to touch them up and down.

Yue Zhong didn't hold his team members back from having sex so long as it didn't interfere with the mission. How they spent time with women was their own matter. Basically all of Yue Zhong's direct subordinates had two or more beautiful women. They lived the most dangerous lives, and the rewards they obtained were the most abundant. They all had pretty women sticking to them without having to use force.

Yue Zhong looked at the delicate and charming woman and asked: “What is your name?”

“I am Fang Chu!” Fang Chu's voice was soft and extremely pleasant.

The good looking big breasted beauty wrapped around Yue Zhong's arm. She used the extreme sex appeal of her big chest to rub against Yue Zhong's arm and coyishly said: “Young Yue are you biased, only asking Chu Chu's name but not asking mine?”

This big breasted woman's looks couldn't be compared to Fang Chu, but her seductive skills were at the pinnacle.

Yue Zhong looked at the big breasted woman and simply said: “What is your name?”

This big breasted woman couldn't compare with the figure, appearance, and temperament of Guo Yu. Furthermore she had a



dense air of prostitution, and Yue Zhong didn't really like it.

The big breasted woman coyishly picked up two bottles of beer and said to Yue Zhong: "I am Liu Hong! Young Yue, let's have a drink!"

"I don't drink alcohol." Yue Zhong directly refused. He didn't like drinking alcohol because he needed to remain sober. After all, even though he reached an agreement with Long Hai City, it is hard to say if the two sides are friends or enemies.

Liu Hong's face slightly hardened, but she quickly adjusted her frame of mind. Everyone who entered into the Celestial World were important guests. They were uncles among uncles. She couldn't refuse even if the other party requested she immediately undress here. Otherwise she would be easily driven out of the specialty region, and she would fight to sell her body for a steamed bun. She would disappear from the face of the earth.

"Fang Chu!! Fang Chu come out for the Boss!" at this time, the suite door was kicked open. A young man wearing all new name brand clothes, with a red face and a stench of alcohol entered the room. He was followed by several young men and women about the same age.

These young men and women were all wearing named brand clothing from before Z-Age, and their faces carried an air of haughtiness

Zhang Ning walked over and advised to the young man: "Young Ning! Fang Chu is already with someone. I will find a better girl for you."

Young Ning slapped Zhang Ning across the face and yelled: "Scram! She is merely a prostitute. The Boss doesn't want a dolled up piece of shit. The Boss wants to mount her today! I came here just for her!"

Hearing Young Ning's words, a humiliating feeling bubbled up

inside Fang Chu.

Behind Ning Shao there was a tall handsome young man wearing fitting attire. He leaked an elegant air and lightly laughed: “It appears Ning Zixuan drank too much.”

A petite pretty young woman stood beside the young man. She was full of vitality, and she had a slim waist with a large booty. She raised an eyebrow and said: “He is always like this, disgusting.”

Another young man laughed and said: “People who drink too much are like this!”

The young woman raised a brow and said: “Ma Bu, are you also like this?”

Ma Bu hastily explained: “Fei Fei, of course not! My natural instincts are good hearted. I would never be like this.”

Fei Fei coldly replied: “Humph! Do not think I don’t know the things you’ve done. Not a single man is good.”

Ning Zixuan pushed Zhang Ning. He had bloodshot eyes and reached out towards Fang Chu.

Seeing the crazy Ning Zixuan, Fang Chu leaned into Yue Zhong out of fear.

Kong Tianyu, a direct subordinate of Yue Zhong pushed aside the two women at his side, and he pounced forward like a leopard. He ruthlessly kicked Ning Zixuan’s leg and knocked him to the floor. He grabbed Ning Zixuan’s hand and crossed them like scissors, then he scolded: “Fuck! What creature are you, thinking of grabbing Captain Yue’s woman! Are you looking for death?”

Ning Zixuan was already blinded by alcohol. He was firmly pressed to the ground by Yue Zhong’s subordinate. Ning Zixuan’s heart was filled with anger, and he roared: “I am Ning Zhicheng’s son. You dare be like this to me. I will certainly not let you go. I will kill your whole family!! I will cut you into pieces!”

“Even if you were the son of a king you will not be saved!” Kong Tianyu looked at Yue Zhong. He saw Yue Zhong slightly nod. Kong Tianyu let out a grim smile, and he exerted force with both hands. Ning Zixuan immediately screamed like pigs at the slaughter.

The young man with an elegant scholarly air slightly laughed and said to Yue Zhong: “Sir, please make your man stop. Zixuan merely drank too much, and he turned into a barbarian. Director Kong, why don’t you introduce us?”

## Chapter 149: Switching from Arrogance to Deference

---

Kong Tao stood up and gave an introduction: “Young Gu, let me introduce. This is the boss of Stone Horse Village, Yue Zhong. This person is the son of the Flame King Gu. Young Gu is Gu Yanyi, and this is Gu Feifei. This is the son of Vice-Secretary Ma, Ma Bu. This is the son of the Chief Gu of the Public Security bureau, Gu Li, and this is the son of the Deputy-Chief Zhang Hui of the Public Security Bureau, Zhang Yang. This is the son of Secretary Ning, Ning Zixuan. Yue Zhong, please release Young Ning. This is a misunderstanding!”

Yue Zhong waved his hand. Kong Tianyu finally released Ning Zixuan.

“I will kill you! I will kill your whole family!” Drunk people don’t listen to reason. As soon as Ning Zixuan was released from Kong Tianyu, his eyes turned blood red. He immediately rushed like a tiger towards Kong Tianyu.

Yue Zhong duly said: “Make him calm down!”

Kong Tianyu ruthlessly smiled and kicked Ning Zixuan in the leg. Ning Zixuan immediately fell flat on his face, and two of his teeth got knocked out.

Kong Tianyu slightly stooped, and he ruthlessly chopped a knife hand at Ning Zixuan’s neck. Ning Zixuan immediately passed out.

After seeing Yue Zhong’s party and knowing their status, as well as their valiant nature, these Long Hai City base people couldn’t help but raise their eyelids.

Gu Yanyi and the several Long Hai City base sons sat on a sofa opposite Yue Zhong. A sexily dressed woman immediately came to their side.

Gu Yanyi revealed an extremely charming smile to Yue Zhong:

“So you are Yue Zhong. Seeing for oneself is a hundred times better than hearing from others. I originally believed the person who captured Stone Horse Village must be a rough and crude, burly middle-aged man. I never thought you would be so young and refined.

Hearing Gu Yanyi’s words, the several sons of the officials looked at Yue Zhong differently. They held a trace of reverence.

Ordinary officials and survivors didn’t know Zhong captured Stone Horse Village. But this information was well known among the high officials and their sons and daughters. They also knew that Yue Zhong captured a PLA army base after capturing Stone Horse Village, and he obtained a battalion worth of equipment. The combat power of Stone Horse Village was already not any weaker than Long Hai City survivor base.

Yue Zhong could be on equal footing to the Chiefs of Long Hai City survivor base. He was only missing the righteous status. Without a righteous status, although Stone Horse Village broadcasted a signal to surrounding survivors to come to come, they couldn’t attract nearly as many survivors as Long Hai City.

Like this, these sons of high level officials didn’t wish to offend Yue Zhong. They could use their authority and status to bully ordinary people, but they couldn’t provoke enemies stronger than them.

Yue Zhong courteously replied: “Oh you flatter!”

Although Yue Zhong didn’t fear these sons of the high level officials, he yet wouldn’t refuse their good intentions. He couldn’t be sure at which time he could use their positions. Making some friends is probably not a mistake, even if they are friends with intersecting interests.

Gu Yanyi was different than the previous idiot sons Yue Zhong had met. He was proficient in several spheres of knowledge. His witty conversation made the atmosphere very active.

Yue Zhong couldn't help but admit that Gu Yanyi is one of the most remarkable men he had ever met. Apart from combat and leadership ability, it was extremely clear to Yue Zhong that his conversation skills, knowledge and etiquette couldn't be compared with Gu Yanyi.

There are many sissy boys in aristocratic families, but the cream of aristocratic families were much more outstanding than ordinary people. They have the most abundant resources, and they grow up under the influence of their successful fathers. If they work hard, naturally they will be much more outstanding than ordinary people.

All of the women doing business in the Celestial World were sophisticated. They were all polite to Yue Zhong after seeing the renowned Young Gu. They understood Yue Zhong's position is much higher than they believed. They became even more flattering. Liu Hong at Yue Zhong's side became even more charming, and she used all kinds of methods to tempt Yue Zhong.

Only the cold tempered beautiful Fang Chu still maintained some distance with Yue Zhong, and she didn't have any intimate thoughts with him.

Suddenly the door was once again kicked open. A large group of people entered.

One young man wore military clothes, and he had dyed blonde hair. He had the rank a Captain in the army. He was holding on to two women wearing skimpy clothing, and he laughed saying: "I said who who made Fang Chu leave. It looks like Young Gu. Young Gu, there are so many women here. How about giving Fang Chu to me. I'll take care of your Celestial World bill today! Give her to me, I'll take her back to my suite."

Two men wearing military clothes immediately walked over to Fang Chu. They extended their hands and grabbed towards Fang Chu without a word.

Yue Zhong pulled Fang Chu into himself. He took a drink from his cup and simply said: “Teach them a little lesson!”

Kong Tianyu and another direct subordinate, Wang Jie, immediately sprung up from the sofa. They ruthlessly punched at the two military men.

Kong Tianyu and Wang Jie were the best evolvers that constantly followed Yue Zhong into battle. Wang Jie is a level 8, and Kong Tianyu is a level 9. Their strength far exceeded a normal person. The mutated river snake armor could also stop a large portion of attacks.

The two soldiers were elites in the military. They quickly reacted to Kong Tianyu and Wang Jie’s attack. Only in three rounds of blows, the two elite soldiers were kneeling on the ground.

Yue Zhong asked Gu Yanying: “Who is this person? How can he be so arrogant?”

Gu Yanyi quickly informed Yue Zhong of the arrogant man’s status: “He is Lei Sheng, the son of the battalion leader Lei Cheng! To the his left is Yuan Gang, the son of commander Yuan Yi. To his right is Cheng Guang, the son of commander Cheng Wei

Lei Shen saw his two subordinated knocked to the ground by Yue Zhong’s men. His face was volatile staring at Yue Zhong, but then it suddenly changed. He alarmingly said: “You are Yue Zhong?”

Lei Cheng viewed Yue Zhong as a potential enemy. He sent spies to take a picture of Yue Zhong from far away. Lei Sheng saw Yue Zhong’s photo in the past. But the photo the spy took was a little blurry. Lei Sheng deduced Yue Zhong’s identity from his body shape and Gu Yanyi’s attitude towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong plainly said: “I am Yue Zhong.”

Lei Sheng smiled at Yue Zhong: “So it is Captain Yue Zhong. Give me some face and release my bodyguards.”

Yue Zhong waved a hand. Kong Tianyu and Wang Jie released

the two soldiers: “Release them!”

The two soldiers turned and immediately looked ashamed. They drifted back behind Lei Shen like smoke, and they hatefully stared at Kong Tianyu and Wang Jie.



# Chapter 150: Lei Sheng

---

Lei Sheng looked at Yue Zhong, and he withdrew the arrogant appearance: “I didn’t know Captain Yue Zhong was here today. I have committed an offence, please forgive.”

Yue Zhong simply responded: “Yes!”

Seeing Lei Sheng’s appearance, the women in the Celestial World all showed fear in their eyes. Lei Sheng is cruel and domineering. At this time he was being pressured by Yue Zhong. Their hearts filled with fear. The big breasted Liu Hong looked at Yue Zhong, and her eyes strangely glimmered. She was willing to let Yue Zhong do whatever Yue Zhong wanted. Even Fang Chu gazed in splendor at Yue Zhong.

Lei Sheng stared at Fang Chu in Yue Zhong’s arms. His eyes flashed with greed, and he frankly asked: “Captain Yue, that Fang Chu is the woman I’m looking for. Could you part with her? I will give you three beautiful women. Those three women aren’t much different than Fang Chu, you will certainly like them.”

Gu Feifei’s eyes flashed with rage after hearing Lei Sheng talk about women like commodities. But she didn’t erupt on the spot. Lei family holds onto the military, and they are the strongest clan in Long Hai City.

Flame King Gu family is a big clan in Long Hai City. Their power is enormous, but they are dwarfs compared to the Lei family. Gu Feifei often had a wayward temper, but she could see the bigger picture. She naturally wouldn’t start a conflict without using her brain.

Fang Chu’s face became pale white after hearing Lei Sheng’s words. Lei Sheng held an evil reputation in Celestial World. He not only liked to be disrespectful to women, he also liked to give the woman he was tired of playing with to his pig friends. Finally he would give them to his military subordinates. The women in Lei

Sheng's hands fall into a miserable fate worse than prostitutes.

Fang Chu was also hotly pursued by princes before Z-Age. Two heavy pursuers among them were Lei Sheng and Ning Zixuan. She refused their advances just like before Z-Age. She knew what the outcome would be if she fell into Lei Sheng's hands. Her actions became ice-cold, and her whole body shivered.

Yue Zhong heard Lei Sheng's request, and he released Fang Chu from his arms. If Lei Sheng was overbearing, he couldn't have agreed to Lei Sheng's request. Lei Shen already admitted defeat and gave him face at this time. Furthermore he promised to exchange with other beautiful women. He didn't have any relation to Fang Chu, and he didn't have any special feelings. He didn't want to get involved in this matter.

Yue Zhong's large hands released Fang Chu's delicate waist, and Fang Chu immediately felt a chill from the top of her head to her heels. Just now she didn't really like Yue Zhong grabbing her, but now she wished Yue Zhong could firmly bring her into his embrace. He made her feel a sense of security. Yue Zhong releasing her signified he no longer had the intention of protecting her.

Fang Chu's vision transferred to Gu Yanyi. The Gu Yanyi was the only person here besides Yue Zhong that could suppress Lei Sheng.

Noticing Fang Chu's anticipating look, Gu Yanyi's vision slightly shifted. He didn't dare look her in the eye, and he stared into his liquor cup. The Lei family's power was too large in the base. Gu Yanyi didn't wish to impulsively make the Lei family his enemy. He was very clear on how to chose among the cream of the elite families.

Fang Chu saw Gu Yanyi shift his vision, and her heart lost all hope. She gritted her teeth and kneeled before Yue Zhong. She used a pitiful expression to beg Yue Zhong: "Captain Yue! I'm beggin you to take me. Don't give me to anyone else. My body is still clean. I haven't been touched by other men. So long as you

chose to accept me, I will be a slave girl and wait on you. I won't defy your wishes. I will do whatever you want me to do."

Lei Sheng watched his dream girl before Z-Age kneel before Yue Zhong and beg for shelter. A demonic fire soared up in his heart. He came here today because he knew Fang Chu had fallen into the Celestial World. This is why he came here personally. Lei Sheng wanted to personally make her regret that time. He wanted her to know how ignorant and stupid she was for not picking him back then.

Lei Sheng's eyes were blood red: "Six!! Captain Yue! I will give you six of the most beautiful virgins for Fang Chu. So long as you give her to me, you will become a good friend of mine. You may casually play with my women!"

Apart from the special Fang Chu, other women were playthings that could be discarded in Lei Sheng's eyes, nothing more. He didn't think of Fang Chu like one of those pretty dolls that was just a beautiful girl and nothing more.

Yue Zhong looked at the pitiful and delicate Fang Chu that looked like she had just come out of a painting. He extended his hand and touched her smooth face. He duly said to Lei Sheng: "Lei Sheng, you also heard. She voluntarily became one of my people. She is already one of mine. I don't have a habit of exchanging my people for others. Please return!"

Lei Sheng's eyes were blood red, and fury surged in his heart. Lei Shen originally had an explosive temper. He already gave Yue Zhong face today. Yue Zhong unexpectedly didn't provide his request, and it made him furious without end. He couldn't help but take a step forward in rage. The four elite soldiers behind him also stepped forward with a strong fighting intentions.

In the blink of an eye, the four direct team members sitting on the sofa of Yue Zhong stood up. A formidable killing intent soared from their bodies. Each one of them had killed dozens of zombies

and even several people. Each one of them were tigers and wolves.

“Such strong warriors!” Gu Yanyi saw Yue Zhong’s subordinates uniformly shoot straight up, and he couldn’t help but praise in his mind.

Lei Sheng sobered up after seeing Yue Zhong’s four subordinates stand up from the sofa. His intel states that the man sitting of the sofa is an evolver strong enough to kill a hundred zombies. They wouldn’t be his match if all the people here united. Even if Yue Zhong didn’t act, they probably wouldn’t be victorious over his four direct subordinates.

Lei Sheng deeply sucked in a breath. With great difficulty he resisted his anger, and he managed to squeeze out a smile: “Truly regrettable. Today I have disturbed Captain Yue’s mood. Another day I must host a feast for you to apologize. I hope you can pay a visit.”

Finished speaking, Lei Sheng turned out and left.

Lei Shen was no long able to suppress his rage as soon as his party got to a covered place. He grabbed the delicate and charming woman at his side, and he ruthlessly slapped her across the face.

“I’m giving her to you!” Lei Sheng pushed the swollen faced woman with tears in her eyes over to his four soldiers.

# Chapter 151

---

A short while after Lei Sheng left, the rest of men also dispersed.

After returning to Chen Yao's apartment, Chen Yao look upon Yue Zhong and smiled: "The problem has been resolved. The 3 Japanese has been arrested, and is awaiting criminal prosecution. It will not be long before they will be charged in a court of law."

Yue Zhong smiled, and looked around. "Yao Yao, are you there?"

A small figure emerged from among Yue Zhong's men and stood in front of Yue Zhong. This small figure is Yao Yao. She looked at Yue Zhong and nodded her head.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu said: "Both of you come with me, I have something good for you (to see?)."

"The rest of you need not follow us. Just stand guard over here!" Yue Zhong stopped the rest of the men. Then he brought just Yao Yao, Chen Yao, Ji Qing Wu, and White Bone and stepped into the darkness.

It is deep into the night. Although the city has lampposts and lights, there is a limit to the electricity supply, and brightness of each lamppost is limited. There is a lot of places that the light did not shine upon.

Under the cover of the darkness, Yue Zhong and the rest made his way to the outside wall of a large villa.

White Bone held out his hand, and a bone emerged from his hand. The bone penetrated into the wall. At the same time, the bone that is struck to the wall begin to extend and grows, becoming a bone ladder.

Using the bone ladder, the four of them easily entered climbed over the wall and entered the villa grounds.

Outside of the courtyard, there are two tall and muscular

bodyguards, dressed in a western suit. Yue Zhong sneaked out from the cover of the darkness, and quickly executed two hand chops on the bodyguards' neck.

The bodyguards fainted from the impact of the blow.

Yue Zhong and Yao Yao then boldly walked into the villa.

Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu eyes flashed a hint of doubt, before following behind Yue Zhong.

Yao Yao brought Yue Zhong and the rest of them to a room in a second floor, and point her finger at a room.

There is a sound of men heavy breathing and women moaning emerging from that room. From outside the room, they could hear some sounds.

“Mayor Zhong, thank you for your help today! I will definitely reward you well for your help. Are you satisfied with the products today?”

“Not bad! I really like it! President Guī tián, Chen Yao is Chen Jian Feng's niece. You better not provoke her anymore.”

“Hai, I understand! But Chen Yao, Ji Qing Wu these two women are really pretty. If I can teach them a lesson, they will definitely become a pair of excellent bitches. But it is a pity that they are Chen Jian Feng's men.”

“Heng! Chen Jian Feng is a pedantic, incompetent man and it is unlikely that he can protect his position for long. Once he is finished, the two girls will be assigned to me. At that time, I will ask President Gui Tian to help me teach them.”

“Hai!”

Listening the lewd talk from insides the room, Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu were shaking with anger.

Yue Zhong immediately used his strength and kicked the door. With his enhanced strength, the secured door was knocked off its

hinges and sent flying, and allow Yue Zhong's party to witness what is behind that door.

In the room, there are several pretty girls who were on all fours. These women were leashed like a dog with a collar around their neck, and they were being tortured with adult toys. Some of the women are still twitching and moaning.

San Jingxiong and Zhēntián had a whip in their hands. In front of them is two women who has badly bruised from flogging, and were barely conscious.

There were also four women who are on the big bed, serving Gui Tanshou and one more righteous looking man.

Looking at this scene, a feeling of anger rushed up Yue Zhong's head. This is China's territory, and to let these foreigners stand on Chinese soil, and let them recklessly abused Chinese women made him feel very enraged. But the thing that made him most enraged is that there are so many Chinese men who are helping foreigners to bully their own men. LongHai City even set up a special region to protect these foreigners, while letting uncountable Han Chinese struggled to make a living like ants. To Yue Zhong, he did not understand if this land is built by Chinese men or ghost.

With difficulties, Yue Zhong held back his anger, threw Chen Yao satirical look "Miss Chen Yao, I thought you said that Gui Tanshou has already been arrested by the law, and is awaiting trial in a court of law? Who are this three men, and who is the man on the bed?"

Chen Yao face turned pale, as if a part of her heart has collapsed, and in a hoarse voice, she asked, "Mayor Zhong Aiguo, how come you are here?"

Zhong Aiguo is man who had weathered storms and is not afraid. He frowned and used a blanket to cover his body, and in a voice full of anger, he shouted "Chen Yao, this is a private property. Did you know that you are guilty of the crime of trespassing? If you

leave now, I will not hold you responsible. But if you do not leave, I will call the police!”

Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu faces looked very terrible. They have not expected that Mayor Zhong Aiguo will so confidently shouted loudly against them.

“Shut up!” Yue Zhong coldly pulled out a 54 pistol and pointed it Zhong Aiguo.

Looking at the handgun in Yue Zhong’s hand, Zhao Aiguo who was arrogantly acting in front of Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu immediately shut up and beads of perspiration covered his back. For an important official like Zhong Aiguo, he is most afraid of thugs who cannot be reasoned with.

Gui Tanshou took a look at Yue Zhong, and immediately barked a command at the four girls who were kneeling on the ground. “Captain Yue Zhong, it is a pleasure to have you at my house today! Lì nú, Huì nú, Xīn nú, Lán nú, quickly go and serve Captain Yue Zhong!”

The four women standing near the door moved, and with lifeless eyes, they crawled towards Yue Zhong and like dogs, stuck out their tongues to lick Yue Zhong’s shoes.

Seeing this, the women (such as Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu) were sad and angry.

“Captain Yue Zhong, from now onwards, these women are your sex toys. They have undergo my training, and each of them are the most loyal sex slaves. No matter what fetish you have, they will obey your commands without question.” Gui Tanshou smiled confidentially.

Yue Zhong did not even glanced at the four pretty women, but instead asked Gui Tanshou, “How did you get out from the jail? Did you staged a jailbreak?”

Gui Tanshou immediately explained, “Captain Yue Zhong, we are



not escaped prisoners. We are law abiding and have paid our bail and is set freed.”

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao, and sneered. “Did you hear that? These men are set free legally. After they were freed, they immediately come over to play with the women. Where is justice that you wish me to see? These women here are the results of your justice! Who is really protected by your brand of justice?”

## Chapter 152

---

Under the barrage of heavy questioning by Yue Zhong, Chen Yao face was physically and mentally exhausted [1]. Her face turned pale, and she was rooted to the spot and did not know what to do.

“President GuiTian, from now all, the women here are my citizen. Please go and die!” Yue Zhong look at Chen Yao, who was having a heavy heart and struggling inside, then smiled at Gui Tanshou and pulled the trigger.

“Bang!” The sound of the gunshot rang out, and Gui Tianshou’s eyebrows had another hole with blood oozing out of it. He collapsed with a surprised expression. Before he died, he did not expect that the man who was just chatting and smiling with him will suddenly kill him.

Yue Zhong barked an order to White Bones, who was standing by his side. “White Bones, kill all the men!”

White Bones stepped forward like an arrow, and his axe seemed to have a life of its own. With one cleave, its axe cut through San Jingxiong and Zhēntián body. The upper and lower halves of the body spilt apart, with blood spurting from the wounds, and the intestines and other body parts of these men spilling out from their body. They did not die immediately, but were frantically crawling on the ground and letting out cries of pain.

Zhong Aiguo looked at the two Japanese men who were just decapitated, and his face turned ash white. In fright, he quickly tried to inflate his sense of self-worth: “Do not kill me!! Don’t kill me! I am the deputy mayor of Longhai base. If you do not kill me, I am willing to listen to whatever you say!”

Yue Zhong looked at Zhong Aiguo and replied “Sorry, you are worse than a scum, and have no value being alive.”

As soon as Yue Zhong’s words have left his mouth, White Bones

chopped down, and his axe cleaved open Zhong Aiguo's head. Warm blood spurted from the wounds and splashed on the female 'bitches'.

Looking at the carnage, the women who were trained to be 'bitches' could not help trembling in fright, and their eyes also showed traces of fear when they looked at Yue Zhong.

Ji Qing Wu walked up to Yue Zhong, and looked at him in the eyes. "What are you going to do with these women?"

In the Longhai city base, killing of special administrative region officials is a great crime. If news of Yue Zhong killing Zhong Aiguo is leaked out, even Chen Jianfeng must eradicate Yue Zhong. This is a matter of principle. The problem is compounded by the fact that people living in the Special Administrative Region has special rights (and is untouchable). If Yue Zhong is allowed to kill anyone in the Special Administrative Region, then wouldn't all the people in the Special Administrative Region be in danger?

Ji Qing Wu was worried that Yue Zhong will kill these women to prevent any news from leaking out.

Yue Zhong looked at Ji Qing Wu and replied "Do not worry. If they listen to me, of course I will not kill them. But they also cannot stay in this place, and must be sent to my camp in the darkness of the night. Once they are sent to Stone Horse Village, they are my citizens, and I will protect them."

After the apocalypse, for mankind to survive, the population is very important. Women can give birth, and is hence a valuable resource. If these women do not go crazy and anger Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong also will not kill them without reason.

Ji Qing Wu then relaxed.

Yue Zhong looked at Ji Qing Wu with eyes full of passion, "Miss Ji, you have seen what happened today with your own eyes. Do you still want to stay here and waste your time and efforts? Follow

me back to Stone Horse Village, and I will give you a stage where you can realise your capabilities to the fullest.”

The last time Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu met, Ji Qing Wu was very outstanding, and is darling. Her skills are above average, and her heart is still kind but is not rotten. To date, among all the women that Yue Zhong has met, she has the most combat spirit, heroic spirit and is the most attractive woman. If she is willing to work under Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong will be able to get another general who is capable of taking care of things by herself.

Ji Qing Wu considered for a while, and looked at Chen Yao besides her. She bit down on her lips and struggled internally to make a decision. Actually, she has long wanted to leave Long Hai Survival camp, but is not at ease leaving her good friend alone in this place.

Seeing this, Chen Yao bit her lips and blinked her big, charming eyes at Yue Zhong. “Is it ok with you if I follow you to Stone Horse Village?”

Yue Zhong could not help looking into at Chen Yao’s beautiful eyes, and asked “Of course you are very welcomed. But Chen Yao, if in the future, your uncle and I get into conflicts, can you sit on the fence and not help either party?”

LongHai Survival Base is a stepping stone for Yue Zhong. If there is a chance for him to take command, he will definitely swallow up LongHai Survival Base and will not show any mercy. Yue Zhong has never requested that Chen Yao to stand on his side, but he also do not want her to stand on her uncle’s side.

Chen Yao bit down on her teeth and nodded her head. “OK!”

Chen Yao has seen enough of the ugly side of Long Hai city survival base laws and justice, and it has shaken her faith in the city.

Yue Zhong looked at the corpses of the four men. “Yao Yao,

please take them to leave this place. I will clean up the place.”

Yaoyao in her military clothes, lead all the women (including the ‘comfort women’) out.

Once the women has left, Yue Zhong immediately use his fire skill, and burnt all the corpse into ashes.

Before he left, he also burned the corpses of the two bodyguards in the entrance of the villa.

Around the fence, Yue Zhong found a corner, and using the ladder made from White Bones, he sent all the ‘comfort women’ out of the special administrative region.

After he made all the arrangement to ensure the safety of these women, he then lead Chen Yao and the other 3 women back towards the special administrative region.

“Be careful!”

Suddenly, Yue Zhong had a creepy feeling, as if he was in danger. He immediately launched the Shadow Steps, and increased his speed to the limit, and stepped towards his right.

Just as he stepped out, a bullet that was aimed at his head missed, but there is another bullet that hit his right shoulder and was repelled back.

The force of the bullet is too small, and is insufficient to penetrate the water python scaled armour that Yue Zhong wore. Even though he is safe, Yue Zhong could not help but to be alarmed. The assassin has hidden himself and his killing aura well, and his skills is really scary. Only when the assassin has fired the gun did Yue Zhong felt a sense of danger. This level of skill is only made possible by peak level assassins.

The three ladies, Yao Yao, Ji Qing Wu, Chen Yao immediately took cover.

Yue Zhong traced the direction where the bullet appeared from.

With his passive night vision ability being strengthened by the cover of darkness, Yue Zhong was able to see and assess the situation well despite the fact that the area was enshrouded in darkness. From a point where there is no light, he could dimly spy a man wearing dark clothes, a dark mask, and armed with a gun. It looked as he had merged into the darkness.

Yue Zhong took out his 54 handgun, and fired continuously. At the same time, he was closing in towards the men in black.

The masked man was also very fast, and was able to evade Yue Zhong's bullets. The masked man can even occasionally return fire.

As Yue Zhong burned through the clip of bullets, he did not even hit the man in black once. Instead, he was forced to retreat under the return fire and finds it hard to close in on the man in black.

# Chapter 153

---

“What an excellent marksmanship!” thought Yue Zhong.

After Yue Zhong activated the shadow steps skill, his speed and movement became much faster. Even though he was still occasionally forced to find cover under the masked assassin’s exquisite marksmanship, his massive increase in speed still allowed him to close in on the assassin. As he closed in, he immediately lurched an attack with his knife, and the speed of his knife slash is fast as a meteorite.

If Yue Zhong just focused on marksmanship, Yue Zhong admitted that he is inferior to the masked assassin. Although he had trained diligently in his marksmanship skills whenever he had the opportunity to do so, the time he had spent training is too short.

The mysterious assassin is not weak, and at the moment Yue Zhong closed in on him, the assassin immediately abandoned his gun and pulled out a Chinese Jian (sword). His Jian drew a beautiful arc as it landed on Yue Zhong’s weapon, and Yue Zhong’s knife was harmlessly deflected to the side.

But Yue Zhong did not gave up. Using his superior speed, he launched a series of quick jabs with his knives towards the assassin. Under his enhanced speed, the rapid knives attacking the assassin seemed like a hurricane of blades.

Although the assassin’s speed cannot be compared to Yue Zhong, his swordsmanship skills is superb. He executed a series of defensive sword movements that protected himself from almost any angle, and with great difficulty, he managed to block or parry the series of knife attacks that Yue Zhong had lurched at him.

Just when the two of them are engaged in fierce combat, from the darkness behind the assassin, a shard of sharpened bone spike suddenly exploded and headed towards the man in black like a missile.

The assassin's eyes flashed with a light, and his sword parried the bone shard and slightly altered the trajectory of the bone spike. At the same time, he twisted his body and managed to avoid the projectile that will pierce through him if it hits.

Taking advantage of the momentarily lapse in concentration as the assassin put all his efforts into avoiding the bone shard, Yue Zhong managed to land a heavy kick on the man's waist. The force of the kick sent the man flying for a few meters.

From the darkness of the night, a hail of sharpened bone shards were fired out, heading towards the masked assassin.

The man in black spat out a mouthful of blood from the impact of the kick. As he landed on the ground and became aware of the hail of bone shards heading towards him, his speed suddenly exponentially increased by a factor of 3. Like an arrow fired from a bow, he quickly escaped the area before the hail of bone shards could hit him, and in a few heartbeats, disappeared into the darkness of the night.

There was a shimmer of light in Yue Zhong's eyes, and Yue Zhong also disappeared into the darkness of the night.

Under the cover of the night, the man in black endured his injuries and struggled to make his way through a maze of streets and alleyways. Finally he entered an inconspicuous room within a very quiet alley.

"Cheng Yu Ge, what happened to you?"

"Cheng Yu Ge, are you injured?"

The room has only one lighted candle. Under the dim light of that candle, it is possible to see that the place of less than 30 square meters was crammed with 9 children. Each of these children has not even reached the age of 13.

Immediately after the man in black entered the room, the rest of the children surrounded him, and their faces were full of worried



expressions.

“I am all right!” Cheng Yu took off his mask, and revealed a handsome but pale face. He had a coughing fit, and coughed out another big mouthful of blood. The blood filled his hands.

Looking at the injured Cheng Yu, the nine children panicked, and rumbled through the room, overturning all the drawers in each cabinets in the house to find some medicine for Cheng Yu. After the apocalypse, medicine and food has become sarce supplies. After combing through the home, the children only found a few band aids and some painkillers.

At this time, a massive white bones axe landed on the door of the house, and cleaved it apart. Yue Zhong walked in confidentially.

“Kids?” Yue Zhong was momentarily surprised by the sight of the 9 kids in the room. His bloodlust for Cheng Yu, who was trying to assassinate him a moment ago, has somewhat dissipated.

After the apocalypse, with the passage of time, men slowly turned increasingly evil as morals completely broke down. For a piece of bread, a woman can sell her body. For a steamed bun, a man can kill another. Rape and murder in this post apocalypse world is common occurrence. In other to feed themselves and their families, some people will even turn into cannibals and eat other men.

In this world where order has collapsed, and there is moral degeneration, Cheng Yu is (to Yue Zhong’s eyes) a man among man for protecting these children.

Looking at Yue Zhong, Cheng Yu seemed to plead, “Do not hurt the children! I will follow you!”

Before the apocalypse, Cheng Yu was a top ranked killer, and is proficient in a variety of killing skills. His swordsmanship skills is considered top notched in the city, and he had a wide variety of contracts to kill within Longhai City.

After the apocalypse, like the majority of the men, he retreated to Longhai survival base. Although Cheng Yu has extraordinary skills, his luck is not so good. At that time when the system [God] gifted him with a wooden bat, it happened that he is armed with gun and a sword. Of course, with these two weapons, he did not even glanced at the wooden bat, and threw it away without a thought. Compared to a wooden bat, he is more accustomed to fighting with a sword and gun. This action means that he did not get any experience for using his own weapons to kill zombies. (This world is set up so that only those who use the system gifts to kill zombies will get experience points and rewards.)

Once the secret of evolution is discovered, Cheng Yu has already retreated to the safety of the LongHai survival base camp, and all the items from the God and Devil worlds were strictly controlled. It is with great difficulty that he killed an evolver with a Tang Imitation Sword, and was able use his skills to kill some zombie and evolved to level 8. But at this time, it is very rare for the normal zombies drop skill books. Without any strong skills, he is unable to become a peak evolution expert.

During his peak condition when he was uninjured, he is not a match for Yue Zhong. Now that he is severely injured by Yue Zhong's kick, he poses even less of a threat to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at Cheng Yu, and directed his sights towards one of the kids in the room. With a cold voice, he asked "Who sent you to assassinate me?"

Cheng Yu struggled internally for a moment, but seeing the cold look on Yue Zhong's face and that he is looking at the children and not at him, he finally gave up and revealed "Ice King Zhang Yun!"

To Cheng Yu, the nine orphans in the room with him are far more important than the code of conduct for assassins. (Code of conduct of not revealing the one who hired them?)

"It's him again!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed a hint of murderous

intent. To date, Ice King had already attempted to kill him twice. In his heart, he had already made up his mind that he will definitely take revenge on Ice King Zhang Yun and kill him without showing a shred of mercy.

Yue Zhong then asked, “How much did he pay you for the job?”

Cheng Yu replied “One ton of food!”

Before the apocalypse, each time Cheng Yu kills, he charges about 100,000 USD. But after the apocalypse, one ton of food is enough for this former peak assassin to sell his life.

Yue Zhong looked at Cheng Yu, and said. “I am the leader of the Stone Horse Village. Cheng Yu, work for me! If you are willing to work for me, the children will have better lives. They can study in a bright and spacious classroom together with their classmates, and every day they will get to eat some food. If you are willing to work, even having bread and milk for them everyday is not a problem!”

Cheng Yu has top rated combat experience and skills. If not for the fact that Yue Zhong is a high level evolver, he will not be a match for this former top rated assassin. His biggest problem is that Cheng Yu has bad luck. If Yue Zhong is willing to develop him further, in future Yue Zhong will be able to get a very capable general.

Cheng Yu replied “Captain Yue, if you are willing to take good care of them, I will sell my life to you!”

At this time, Cheng Yu was feeling that he was cruelly oppressed and had no choice in the matter. If he wants to let the children continue to live, he had to work with Yue Zhong. Everyone had things that they hold dear to their heart. To Cheng Yu, these orphans are what matters to him. They allow him to hang on to the shred of his humanity in a perverse world.

After the apocalypse, many people have killed themselves as they

do not have any more faith in this cruel world. As well, many people had lost their faith, and their spiritual pillar collapsed. While these people are still alive, they are dead inside and are no different from a living zombie. Only if a man have faith and held on to his beliefs, will he struggle to survive in this cruel world.

# Chapter 154

---

Yue Zhong and Cheng Yu first ensured the safety of the 9 children that Cheng Yu is protecting by moving them to Yue Zhong's camp. Once the children are safe, Yue Zhong then asked Cheng Yu "What do you know regarding strength of the Ice King Group?"

At this time, Cheng Yu has already taken the medical grass medicine, and is feeling much better. Colour had returned to his face. He seemed to consider for a while, before carefully replying Yue Zhong: "Of the Ice King group, the strongest among them is Ice King Zhang Yun. Nobody knows how strong he had evolved, but all the men who had crossed swords with him in the past had already died. Other than Ice King Zhang Yun, there is one more man call Zhao Xiong who is also a powerful evolver. Zhao Xiong specialised in speed, and is Zhang Yun's most loyal follower. It is rumoured that after the apocalypse, Zhang Yun had once saved his life. In addition, Ice King also have about 100 more underlings."

Yue Zhong considered the information carefully, before asking, "Do you know where the Ice King group's headquarters is?"

"Yes, I know. It is in a massive villa at the end of Xing Hua road."

Yue Zhong then spoke to Chen Yao: "Chen Yao, please may I trouble you to pass a message to your uncle, Chen Jian Feng? Please inform him that the Ice King Group wants to kill me, and I retaliated in self-defence. Please ask him to let the military exercise restraint(and do not interfere in the fight). But only do this 5 mins after we have left the premises."

"En" (means yes in Chinese.)

"Bring me to the Ice King Group's headquarters. I want to destroy him!" Yue Zhong stood up, and his killing intent burst forth. Sitting down and waiting for others to attack him is not his style.

The area around Xing Hua road is the territory of Ice King Zhang Yun. Ice King Zhang Yun is one of the four strongest evolvers in Long Hai survival camp. Although Xing Hua road is not part of the special administrative region, the lights in a massive villa at the end Xing Hua road still shone bright, as if there is no difference before and after the apocalypse.

A team of about 12 people were patrolling outside the villa grounds.

Just when the team of bodyguards rounded the corner, 12 sharpen bone shards were fired from among the tall grasses. Each bone shard hits one member of the bodyguards in his head with unparalleled precision, and the impact of this sneak attack was shocking. All of the team of bodyguards were immediately killed by the bone shard, and not one remained standing!

“What an amazing skill!” Cheng Yu was hiding among the grasses when he saw the strength of White Bones and could not help feeling afraid. Even at his peak period, he could not kill a team of 12 bodyguards without making any sound and without alerting anyone. That White Bones is able to easily accomplish this task clearly illustrated the difference between an evolver and an ordinary man.

After killing this team of patrolling bodyguards, Cheng Yu quickly moved from cover to cover, and made his way to the entrance of the villa. At the entrance, there was two bodyguards that was protecting the area, but they posed no threat to someone of Cheng Yu’s caliber, and was quickly eliminated with two gunshots. Cheng Yu’s guns were equipped with a silencer to avoid alerting the rest of the guards.

Yue Zhong also brought his men and quickly slaughtered his way into the villa

Inside the villa, Cheng Yu skills did not put his reputation as a top killer in the pre-apocalypse age to shame– his marksmanship

was outstanding, and any men who appeared within Cheng Yu's sights were immediately shot and killed before they even realised what is happening.

After entering the villa, Yue Zhong's men immediately dispersed and charged towards the door of each room within the villa. Upon reaching each of the room, they would break open the door, and then killed the men who were sound asleep.

A lot of Ice King Group's men were still asleep when they were killed. In addition, some of the women who were in the villa was also killed.

But Yue Zhong's men were a tad too noisy in carrying out their massacre, and after killing a number of men, they were finally discovered, and the villa was shook awake under a burst of extremely shrill cry: "Enemy attack! Enemy attack!"

Ice King Zhang Yun who was sound asleep with 4 beautiful women in his arm was jolted awake by this cry. He pushed aside the women who were soundly sleeping besides him, and immediately grabbed his level 2 protective vest armour and equipped it in an instant.

A massive white bone axe crashed on his door, and the force of the impact broke the door into pieces.

Yue Zhong stepped into the room, and using his type 79 submachine gun, he wildly opened fire and spread a hail of bullets into the room.

Against the hail of bullets, Zhang Yun sucked in his breath, and activate his evolver skill "Ice manipulation". A sheet of ice mirror seemed to appear in front of his body. The hail of bullets landed on the ice mirror, but only managed to nick a small white dot on the mirror, and immediately bounced off the mirror.

While Zhang Yun may be arrogant and despotic, his reputation is well deserved and his skills are indeed top-notch. He used the ice

manipulation skill again, and an instant, 5 chunks of ice cones appeared from thin air, and shot towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong dare not to receive this attack, and dodged to a side to find cover among the walls.

The 5 chunks of ice cones hit the place where Yue Zhong was originally standing in, and the force of the impact created 5 fists size holes on the wall.

“Very impressive!” Yue Zhong’s heart turned cold. This Ice King Zhang Yun skills is indeed extraordinary for being able to manipulate ice to this extent. The strength of these ice-cones can be considered equal to a level one ice magic spell. But seeing that Zhang Yun can manipulate ice almost at will, it means that he has strong spiritual force, and should had applied more than one point of skill on his ice manipulation ability.

Yue Zhong took out a heavy grenade, pulled out the safety (pin), and threw the grenade into the room.

“Grenade!!” When Zhang Yun saw the heavy grenade, his face immediately turned paled, and used his ice manipulation ability again. Under his skillful usage of ice manipulation ability, the heavy grenade was enveloped and frozen in a chunk of ice, and harmlessly dropped towards the ground.

Once he did this, Zhang Yun immediately rushed out from the room. Each second of using his ice manipulation skills consumed some stamina and spiritual strength. If he could not finish the fight in a short period of time, he will exhausted his spiritual strength and stamina, leaving him unable to fight.

Just when he rushed out of the room, he immediately saw that Yue Zhong had already retreated at least 10m away from him. Even worse, Yue Zhong had readied a massive type 89 styled 12.7 mm heavy machine gun, and it was pointed towards him.

Once Zhang Yun appeared in Yue Zhong’s sights, the massive 12.7



mm heavy machine gun that can easily tear an armoured jeep apart immediately let loose a long barrage of heavy fire. The numerous massive bullets seemed to turn into a hail of golden lines that streaked towards Zhang Yun.

Zhang Yun's face turned even paler, and again he used his skill of ice manipulation to create a thick wall made of ice to block these bullets. Countless number of bullets repeatedly slammed against the ice wall, and created a massive hole in the ice wall that was expanding each second as each bullet penetrated deep into the ice wall and tore some of the ice out.

“Damn it! Why is there a heavy machine gun over here!”

Immediately after creating the wall of ice, Zhang Yun immediately ran back towards his room. His ice manipulation skill may be very powerful, but it is not invincible. Creating an ice wall that can withstand a barrage of bullets from the 12.7 mm heavy machine gun had drained a massive portion of his spiritual force and stamina. If he is continuously assaulted by Yue Zhong's barrage of bullets, it is certain that he will die here today!

“White Bones, attack!” Yue Zhong commanded White Bones who was standing beside him.

White Bone immediately grabbed his massive bone axe and rushed towards Zhang Yun.

To ensure that he get the maximum benefits for his unique ice manipulation ability, Zhang Yun had continuously poured all his skills points into stamina and spiritual force each time he leveled up. The rest of his statistics are average and is only enhanced by equipment that he had gathered from the system. Therefore it is no surprise that his speed is inferior to White Bones. Just as he reached the window and is about to make his escape, White Bones finally reached him and a massive axe chopped down towards him.

Zhang Yun waved his hand, and the ice jade ring on his finger immediately launched its special skill. An ice magic array appeared

from thin air, and a cone of ice slammed against White Bones. The impact sent White Bone flying for several meters. In addition, White Bones' body also shown signs of being frozen, and is covered with a thin layer of ice. What is worse is that the bones in the chest area has been penetrated by the cone of ice, and countless cracks appears on the bones close to the chest area.

# Chapter 155

---

Zhang Yun had just escaped from the window and had only ran a short distance, when Yue Zhong carried a massive type 40 grenade launcher and appeared from window next to his room. Yue Zhong took aim at Zhang Yun and launched a rocket grenade.

“DAMN IT!!” Zhang Yun look at the Yue Zhong lugging that type 40 grenade launcher and his face turn even paler. Zhang Yun had no idea how Yue Zhong manage to bring so many heavy weapons into LongHai survival camp. He does not have even have a type 40 grenade launcher! This type of weapon is only available to highly ranking officers in the military, and just one rocket fired from the grenade launcher can blow an armoured camp into pieces.

Zhang Yun desperately used all his stamina and spiritual force to create a wall of ice in a semi-circle around him.

With a massive “Boom!” sound, the rocket grenade connected with the wall of ice, and immediately exploded. A wave of fire and smoke rapidly spread out from the point of the impact and completely engulfed Zhang Yun in its blast radius.

After the smoke has dissipated, a charred black body collapsed to the ground. This body is the corpse of Zhang Yun, who had been roasted alive from the grenade.

While Zhang Yun’s ice manipulation skill allowed him to create a barrier of ice-wall to protect himself against the barrage of bullets against 12.7 mm heavy machine gun, but that was the limit of his defensive skill. Against a powerful weapon of war such as a type 40 grenade launcher, even his ice wall could not withstand the impact.

It is true that Evolvers are very powerful, and have superhuman powers. But the weapons of war that was developed using the best and the brightest minds of mankind is in no way inferior to evolvers. It is because of this reason that in this survival camp, the

strongest power is not the 4 strongest evolvers (of which Ice King Zhang Yun is a part of), but is the military that have experience in conducting wars.

Of course Zhang Yun's skills are very strong, but he did not even had a chance to fully utilize his powers before he is killed by Yue Zhong's clever use of military weapons.

Once Zhang Yun is dead, Yue Zhong jumped down from the window, and search Zhang Yun corpse to see if he can get any equipment from the [System]. But Yue Zhong's luck is not very good – the items on Zhang Yun's corpse had been blown into dust from the impact of the grenade launch. However, all is not lost, as somehow the ice jade ring manage to survive the carnage and is not broken.

Level 3 treasure: Ice Jade Ring. Grants 6 points of spiritual power when wore, and have a special property: Once a day it can create an ice cone.

Yue Zhong immediately equipped the ice Jade Ring. To him, Spiritual power is also important.

After Zhang Yun was killed, the Ice King's men were left without a leader. Under the attack of evolvers like Ji Qing Wi, Chen Shitou, Cheng Yu, Kong TianYu etc, if the Ice King's men refused to surrender, they were killed outright.

Once the 2nd strongest men in the Ice King group, Zhao Xiong, saw things were not going on well for the Ice King group, he immediately made his escape.

Not long after, the Ice King's men who chose to surrender were tied up and led out of the villa one after another. Other than the men, the villa contains a lot of food and at least 10 women.

Yue Zhong party escorted the captives and the women towards his camp.

On the way back to the camp, there are occasional policemen and

soldiers who saw the procession. However, all of them had already been instructed by their superiors to pretend that they did not see anything. Even if there were no instructions from the top, they also had no desire to stop Yue Zhong's party or create any troubles for this group of fierce looking men.

The news of the Ice King being assassinated quickly spread through the grapevine in LongHai city. Ice King Group is actually an evil group that oppressed many people. Learning that the Ice King was killed, many oppressed citizens clapped and cheered in happiness.

But the rest of the factions in power residing in LongHai survival camp had a different attitude-they were apprehensive of Yue Zhong's power. After all, Ice King Group is relatively powerful within LongHai survival camp. The fact that Yue Zhong managed to destroy the group in the span of one night made them feel threatened.

"I need you to give me an explanation!" The next day, Chen Jian Feng summoned Yue Zhong, and looked at Yue Zhong without any expressions on his face.

Yue Zhong face did not change colour, and he calmly replied. "Ice King Group has twice sent people to kill me, and even framed me for things I did not do. With these provocation, surely I am permitted to fight back?"

Chen Jian Feng stared at Yue Zhong with a poker face. It is impossible to read Chen Jian Feng thoughts from his face as he spoke. "Even then, you should just report the issue to the relevant authorities, and inform us about this issue. We of course will not just sit still and will send someone to take action. But you selfishly acted and kill Ice King Zhang Yun, how are you going to resolve this problem?"

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Jian Feng and suddenly he smiled. "I looted 30 tonnes of food from Ice King Group. I will give you half!"

“20 tonnes!” Chen Jian Feng then relaxed his poker face. In reality, he does not care about the Ice King Group. Destroying this poisonous cancer group means nothing to him. But what he wants is the Ice King Group’s accumulated food supply. 20 tonnes of food. If all the food are turned into porridge, it will be enough to let 2000 more survivors last for one or two more months. The reason why he summoned Yue Zhong today is to ask for some of the food supply that Yue Zhong’s group had raided from the Ice King group. [Translator notes: Off topic: Woahhh.. I did not expect that both LBD&A and this chapter had the same theme, that of corrupted officers in China].

Yue Zhong agreed, “Ok, it is a deal!”

Chen Jian Feng stared at Yue Zhong with a serious voice. “Let’s forget about the matter yesterday. But I do not want this type of thing happening again. If this happens again, I will not let you off this easily.”

If Yue Zhong continues to act without regards for the law, Chen Jian Feng will not sit still, not even if the ones that Yue Zhong killed are all scums from LongHai survival camp.

Yue Zhong did not promise anything, but just replied, “If no one tries to kill me, of course, I will not willfully create trouble.”

Chen Jian Feng raise his eyebrows, and asked “Regarding the raid on the granary, how are your preparations coming along?”

There is really a DongFeng military Jeep in real life! The author really know his shit!

“No problems.”

After asking about preparation for the raid on the granary, Yue Zhong left the office of Chen Jian Feng.

In the following two days, Yue Zhong’s men transported all the people to Stone Horse Village. This include the female ‘bitches’, Cheng Yu’s 9 children, and workers who agreed to work in Stone

Horse village.

On the day of the agreed joint exercise to raid the granary, Yue Zhong forces sent one infantry fighting vehicle, 5 Dongfeng military jeeps with guns mounted on them, 2 Dongfeng Military Trucks, 5 hummers and 2 fire trucks.

On the LongHai survival camp side, the military also sent one infantry fighting vehicle, 4 large trucks, 6 Dongfang military jeeps with guns mounted on them, 6 jeeps, and 3 ambulance.

Other than the military, other factions and powers from LongHai survivor camp united together under one group.

As this mission is viewed as very important by LongHai decision-makers, the various factions and powers were promised by the military that if they were willing to help the military attack the granary, they will be rewarded with a portion of the food.

After the apocalypse, food becomes of paramount importance. If there is food, then there will be people who are willing to work with them in exchange for food. With more people, it means more power. Therefore the various factions and powers are willing to help the military fight in return for a portion of the food supplies. Also, with the the military and Yue Zhong's men being positioned in front, there is less risk to them, and they are more willing to take risks.

Once the appointed hour arrive, all the vehicles set off for the granary in Shang Lin county.

Surprisingly, along the way, the party did not even see a single creature, not even zombies. This made Yue Zhong felt that something is not right.

The granary is located at the outskirts of Shang Lin county. Surrounding the granary are vast tracts of farmland. However some tracts of farm land that is supposed to be full of crops are now overgrown with a strange type of weed. The remaining farm

land seemed to be barren and do not have any crops.

As the group of cars entered the area near the granary, suddenly a shrill cry resounded through the sky. Then hundreds, if not thousands of black rats seemed to crawl out from various rat holes. Each rat is as big as a cat, and the swarm of rats rushed towards the group of cars...



# Chapter 156

---

“Level 5 monster: Mutant Rat – Hunt in massive groups.”

Due to Yue Zhong's Eyes of perception passive skill, he immediately received the information as soon as he saw the mutant rats.

The mutant rat joined together and become a massive black tide, and surrounded the team.

“Open fire! Open fire!!” The leader of coalition of various factions and powers could not help panicking when he saw the endless stream of rats, and immediately shouted out orders.

Immediately the coalition of various factions members all madly fire whatever weapons they had at the mutant rats.

There were too many mutant rats in the rat tide. Even though the shooting skills of the coalition of various factions members were relatively poor, most of the bullets still hit the rats and killed many rats, and those rats that were shot or killed were rapidly crushed by the weight of the other rats behind it as the swarm tided forward.

The problem is the number of mutant rats is many, and despite the fact that a large number of rats have been killed, like a tidal wave, the rats tide does not seem to slow down at all as it rushed towards the team.

Seeing the massive swarm of rats continuously getting closer and closer, the coalition leader was unable to keep his cool under pressure, and tried to escape using the same route that they came in from.

As the jeep entered into the sea of mutant rats, the mutant rats within the rat tide seemed unafraid and attacked the jeep. Although hundreds of mutant rats were crushed and sent flying from the impact of the jeep crashing through them, there were

many mutant rats that managed to latch on the jeep, and the jeep seemed to be surrounded by mutant rats. Even worse, the window of the jeep is completely covered, and this made it impossible for the driver to see anything.

Without any visibility, the driver was unable to steer properly and the jeep crashed into a barren field. Countless mutant rats immediately surrounded and attacked the jeep in a frenzy.

There was a burst of sharp shill sound as countless black mutant rats attacked the steel plating on the jeep, and managed to bore a large hole through the plating. Then the mutant rats swarmed into the jeep, and bit down on the men inside the vehicle. From the jeep, there came a sound of screaming, and splatters of blood splashed on the windows of the car. The car shook for some time, and finally stopped moving.

What happened to this jeep seems to foreshadow what happened to the other vehicles that tried to run and rush out from the rat tide: These were all swallowed by the swamp of rats. Then there were screams of agony as the men inside each vehicle were eaten alive echoes throughout the granary area.

If the teeth of the mutant rat is strong enough to rip about the steel plating on the jeep, of course there is no need to mention what would happen to the other normal vehicles that did not have steel plating.

Each faction leader immediately roared out. "Don't run away, Idiots! Open fire, quickly open fire, and kill these rats!"

Each of the surviving men immediately spread a sea of bullets into the rat tide. The IFV, the weapons mounted on each donghai military jeep, and Yue Zhong's heavy machine guns all concentrated fire on the rat horde. Under the stream of concentrated fire, the black coloured rat tide faltered and it seemed as there was an invisible knife cutting through the middle of the rat tide, parting the waters into two sides. Countless numbers of

mutant rats were torn into shreds from the concentrated fire.

Although there was a temporary respite, the number of mutant rats were really uncountable, and despite the concentrated fire on the middle of the rat tide, there were some rats that managed to avoid the hail of bullets and successfully landed among the team members.

For the rats that managed to enter Yue Zhong's camp, Ji Qing Wu used her superior sword skills, Tang imitation blade and mysterious footwork skills to slice apart the rats. Many rats were sliced into two pieces, as their blood splattered all over the floor.

Chen Shitou, Kong Tianyu and the other evolvers from Yue Zhong's camp also used the Tang imitation blades on any stray mutant rats that managed to get close.

Individually or in a small number, these mutant rats were not scary at all. Even a normal human can easily kill one if they were unafraid of it. But if anyone is engulfed in the sea of rats, it is almost impossible to survive.

For the few isolated cases of mutant rats that successfully managed to enter the coalition team's rank, some of the more skilled warriors were also easily able to kill them, but there were some that panicked and it is with some difficulty that these rats were put down. These rats are only as big as a cat, and only had a bite or scratch attack, and pose little danger to them. Only six of the coalition team members were scratched by the mutant rats, and there was no causality among the team.

The mutant rats seemed to be trapped between a rock and a hard place. (If they retreat they would be gunned down by concentrated fire, and if they rushed forward, those that managed to infiltrate each faction is easily put down. Although a massive number of rats were killed and the rat eyes turned bloodshot, still the rat tide remained unrelenting and continued to rush towards the team.

Under the barrage of heavy fire, in less than 10 minutes, there

were over 2000 mutant rats that have been tore into shreds. However, there were also about 200 mutant rats that managed to enter the human camp and the number is constantly increasing.

In the coalition of factions/powers team, a man who was armed with a machete had just chopped a mutant rat to death. In the next moment, suddenly two mutant rat lunged at him. One of the rats bit his shoulder, and the teeth that can break apart a steel plate took out a big chunk of flesh. The other mutant rat bit him on his leg, and tore off a large stripe of meat and blood.

“Aarhhhh!!!!” The man could not resist letting out a miserable cry. His left hand grabbed the rat that was on his shoulder, and threw the rat to a side.

Immediately after the man threw the rat away, another 4 mutant rats rushed towards him, and latched onto his body as they chomped their sharp teeth into his flesh.

The man desperately struggled in pain while crying out for help, growing weaker with each successive bite. After a short while, his cries disappeared and he stopped moving. There was no one around to save him as more and more rats has successfully rushed through the bullet storm and entered the camp.

Other than the evolvers who were equipped with many protective items, or Yue Zhong’s team members who were well equipped with snake skin armour, the rest of the teams began to show signs of people dying, and the death count of humans also began to rise.

Due to the non-stop firing of the heavy machine guns that was mounted on the vehicles, all the heavy machine guns began to heat up and turn red hot. The battle between the men and rats had only last 10 mins, but now the guns were now white hot, and could not continue to fire.

Seeing this unfavourable situation, Yue Zhong seldomly commanded his man, “Spray the oil!”

The tanks on the two fire engines on Yue Zhong's team did not contain water, but oil. The firemen has already readied themselves to hose the rat horde with oil, and was just waiting for Yue Zhong's command. Upon hearing the command, they immediately sprayed the oil in a semi-circle around the ground in front of Yue Zhong's team.

Cheng Yu then lighted a bottle of Molotov cocktail and hurled it towards the oil on the ground.

Upon contact with the Molotov cocktail, the ground that was sprayed with oil caught fire, and burned all the mutant rats within the area into ashes.

On the LongHai military camp side, they had also prepared two ambulances loaded with barrels of flammable oil. They also spilled the flammable oil on their territory, and set fire to it, forming a wall of fire.

The reason that man is superior to animals is because man has intelligence and is able to think of ways to deal with problems.

But the mutant rats were not the same. Even though there is a wall of fire blocking their path, the mutant rats still continue their strategy of rushing through the fire in swamps. But each mutant rat that passed through the sea of flame were burned to death. There was an unpleasant smell in the air hundreds of mutant rats were burned. Still the rat tide continues to swarm over the fire, as if they want to use the corpse of the fallen to create a gap in the fire ....

# Chapter 157

---

The mutant rats' strategy was unfortunately for them, flawed. This was because the mutant rats' fur were combustible, and the use of flammable oil made it very hard to put out the fire. As a result, all the mutant rats that rushed into the flame were quickly incinerated by the inferno and perished. However, the zeal in which the mutant rat tide charged headlong into the blaze regardless of how many of them were killed had unsettled all the men.

Kong Tianyu had just dispatched the last of the mutant rats that managed to enter into their ranks. Looking at the mutant rats that continuously rushed into the flames, he remarked "It would be wonderful if they all rush through the fire and commit suicide."

If there was only one mutant rat, even an ordinary man could muster up the courage to attack and kill it. However, if there were more than 3 rats attacking an ordinary man, the one that would be killed would definitely be the man. If there are more than 20 rats, even an evolver like Kong Tianyu would be in serious danger if he is not protected by the snakeskin armour.

Initially, looking at the sea of mutant rats made the humans despair. It was estimated that there were at least 30,000 rats. Even if they had used up all their bullets, there were no guarantee that they would be able to kill all the rats. But if these rats were stupid enough to do a kamikaze charge by leaping into the flames, that would be an ideal scenario in the minds of the men.

From among the granary came another shrill cry, and surprisingly, the mutant rats that were thoughtlessly throwing themselves into the sea of flames suddenly stopped rushing into the fire. Instead, they surrounded the fire at a safe distance, and glared menacingly at the survivors entrapped within, waiting for an opportunity to strike.

Yue Zhong raised his eyebrows, and in his heart, he thought that the mutant rats must have a leader that was co-ordinating their attacks.

The uncountable sea of mutant rats that were not afraid of death was already very difficult to handle. Now that there was a leader leading and co-ordinating them, the difficulty of killing these rats had increased by at least a factor of ten.

There is a limit to the supply of oil that Yue Zhong and the rest of the humans had brought along, and it was not possible for them to continuously spray the oil. Under the combined firepower and fire, the humans had already killed over 4000 mutant rats. But as they looked over the sea of fire, they saw that there were still countless numbers of mutant rats surrounding them. This sight chilled the men to their bones and nobody desired to move out of the protection of the fire.

As for Yue Zhong's team, in the short span of 10 mins, they had already used up over 20,000 bullets. This reduced their bullet supplies by one-third. If this continues on, their bullet supplies cannot last for even half an hour more.

After observing this, Yue Zhong walked into the Longhai military group camp area, and requested to speak with the military commander, Xu Zhenggang.

“What the f\*\*k do you want?” Looking at Yue Zhong, Xu Zhenggang raised his eyebrows and directly questioned Yue Zhong. Xu Zhenggang is feeling very depressed – the number of mutant rats had exceeded his wildest expectations. In addition, there was a leader commanding the rats. This made him felt that the battle is impossible to win, and he already had the desire to flee.

The flammable oil was made up of a combination of petrol and crude oil. After the apocalypse, petrol and crude oil were also very valuable resources. The two ambulances that were filled with barrels of petrol and crude oil accounted for 25% of the oil in

Longhai survival base camp. Xu Zhenggang had no desire to waste the expensive oil on trying to take control of a granary that he felt was unconquerable.p>

Yue Zhong looked into Xu Zhenggang eyes and said. “These rats have a leader. I want to take some men to kill this mutant rat leader. 10 minutes. I hope you can lead your men and my men to protect this camp for just 10 minutes. If at the end of 10 mins, I have not returned, you may either choose to lead the men to retreat or continue to wait here.”

Looking at the current situation, if Xu Zhenggang chose to flee the scene, the coalition of various factions and powers in Longhai survival camp will definitely retreat with the military. Once this happens, if Yue Zhong’s men continued to remain in this area and defend the camp, it is certain that they will be annihilated by the mutant rat horde.

Xu Zhenggang might have belonged to a different faction from Yue Zhong, but he was an upright man and a man of his word. If he made a promise to protect the camp, he would die to protect the camp rather than to retreat. It was for this reason that Yue Zhong trusted this man.

Xu Zhenggang glanced at Yue Zhong and carefully considered for a moment. He was well aware of the situation in LongHai survival camp. Only with enough food would there be peace inside the camp. Only with enough food will it allow the survivors in the camp to continue to live. He gritted his teeth before agreeing to Yue Zhong’s request. “All right, I promise you that I will defend this camp for 10 more minutes. But once 10 minutes are up, even if you have not returned, I will led all the men to retreat.”

“Thank you!”

Yue Zhong returned to his camp, and had his men formed a circle, before explaining “I am going to kill the leader that is directing this mutant rat horde. This mission is likely to be a



suicide mission, and death is likely. Those who are willing to go with me, step forward. For those who are not willing to risk your lives, I will not force you.”

All his men stepped out without hesitation. This show of support made Yue Zhong very touched.

For this mission, all the men who had followed Yue Zhong had experienced numerous combats with zombies under Yue Zhong’s leadership. Each of them was a hot-blooded man and a mighty evolver. Seeing that their leader Yue Zhong had chosen to put himself in the path of danger instead of being the first to retreat has stirred their hot-blooded feelings. They would follow Yue Zhong to the ends of the world if required!

Yue Zhong was very touched as he addressed his men in a firm voice. “Each one of you are the pride of my team! Ji Qing Wu, please follow me to kill the leader of the rat horde. The rest of you must defend this place for 10 minutes. If after 10 minutes you do not see me returning here, then you are to leave this place. Kong Tianyu will be your temporary leader while I am gone. Remember, you must defend this place for 10 minutes and not leave this place before 10 minutes is up.”

Among all the men who chose to follow Yue Zhong, Ji Qing Wu was the strongest evolver. To attempt to assassinate the leader of the rat horde, he would need the assistance of the strongest men under him. After Ji Qing Wu, Kong Tianyu was the second strongest man in Yue Zhong’s team, and had served him loyally since he joined Yue Zhong’s team in Always Bright village. Therefore he assign Kong Tianyu as his deputy commander in his absence.

Kong Tianyu had a solemn expression as he replied. “Yes! Captain Yue!”

Once he finished his announcement, he immediately chose to activate a special skill of wearing White Bones as an armour. Then

he grabbed Ji Qing Wu in his left hand, and fired a piece of bone deep into the ground. Using the extension of bone as an extensible ladder, he vaulted towards the sea of mutant rats.

Once the bone ladder could no longer be extended any further, the two of them dropped into the sea of mutant rats.

The mutant rats immediately attacked these two humans that dared to enter into their mist with a frenzy.

As the two of them dropped into the sea of rats, Ji Qing Wu quickly executed a circular blade dance, and her blade dance decapitated all the mutant rats in a small circle around them. For just 1 or 2 seconds, there were no mutant rats around them. Then the tide of rats continued to pour in.

But the relief of a second or two is more than enough for Yue Zhong to penetrate another bone spike into the ground, and reused his bone ladder technique to launch himself and Ji Qing Wu forward.

Using this method of dropping and creating new extensible bone ladders, Yue Zhong speedily made his way towards the granary.

From afar, Yue Zhong could see that on top of the granary in Shang Lin County, there was 7 special mutant rats. 6 of these rats were as big as a human being, and their skin were of cyan colour. But what really set these rats apart was that they looked like humanoid rats. The ratmen stood upright on their hind legs like humans. The crawls on their 'hands' are filled with sharp claws that are at least 20 cm long.

In the middle of the 6 special rats is a gigantic silver white rat. This rat is as big as a bear, and there is a crown of white fur that extend from the top of its head like a crown. Each of its claws are at least 40 cm long, and its eyes flushed with intelligence.

# Chapter 158

---

Yue Zhong's Eyes of Perception ability allowed him to examine the ratmen from afar. "Level 26 mutant beast: Elite Rat King's Bodyguards. Rat King's chosen bodyguards, are willing to die in battle in defense of Rat King."

"Level 43 mutant beast: Mutant Rat King. Has the ability to control mutant rat swarms and elite rat king's bodyguards."

"That must be the leader!" Zhong Yue looked at the 7 massive rats with a gleam of light in his eyes. On this expedition, he was most afraid that he could not find the leader of the rat tide within the time limit of 10 mins. If he could not find the leader, he would have no choice but to abort this mission. After all, his team and both the teams from LongHai survival camp did not bring enough ammunition to destroy the sea of rats.

The mutant Rat King also saw that Yue Zhong was making a beeline towards it. It's tiny eyes flashed a hint of disdain, and it uttered a sharp whistling sound.

At that instant, from the granary, another massive swarm of mutant rats poured out in droves. In addition to the mutant rats tide, another 30 elite rat king's bodyguards also climbed up to the granary.

In addition to the forces above, 20 additional elite rat king's bodyguards rushed towards the direction of Yue Zhong.

These elite rat king's bodyguards were incredibly fast. At full gallop, they crossed the distance of over 100 m in the span of a few seconds, and shot towards Yue Zhong like an arrow. Their speed was only slightly inferior to the fastest creature that Yue Zhong has ever faced – a level 20 hunter.

At this time, Yue Zhong was still 200m away from the granary.

Yue Zhong moved his left hand, and a type 79 assault rifle flew

out. He pulled the trigger and the gun spewed out a stream of bullets that streaked towards the elite rat king's bodyguards.

These elite rat king's bodyguards' bodies were comprised of extremely hard muscles. Although these bullets were able to penetrate through the hide of these rats, they were stopped by the rock hard muscles from penetrating any deeper into the organs. As a result, the wounds of these elite rat king's bodyguards were superficial.

After emptying a 20 round magazine clip, Yue Zhong had only managed to kill four normal mutant rats, and did not even manage to kill a single elite rat king's bodyguard.

These elite rat king's bodyguards finally reached the area in front of Yue Zhong, and used their sharp claws to chip away at the bone ladder.

The claws of these elite rat king's bodyguards were extremely sharp, and the white bone ladder could not withstand the continuous attacks of the elite rat king's bodyguards for long before breaking.

Once the white bone ladder was broken, Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu immediately plunged towards the ground.

The 20 elite rat king's bodyguards were hiding and distributed among the rat tide. They were intently watching the descent of Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu. Once these two humans fell into the swarm of rats, they will be surrounded on all sides and be attacked by numerous rats. No matter how powerful Yue Zhong is, being attacked by countless numbers of rats at the same time would definitely finish him off.

Yue Zhong's eyes turned icy cold, and taking in a deep breathe, he quickly fired another bone spike that stabbed into the head of a normal mutant rat. The force at which the bone spike was fired from allowed it to penetrate through the skull of the mutant rat and continued to penetrate deep into the ground. It quickly

extended to become another bone ladder. In this way, both of them were temporary out of danger.

But the elite rat king's bodyguards who saw this scene immediately rushed towards the new bone ladder and again, used their claws to break down the bone ladder.

This left Yue Zhong with no choice but to continuously shoot out bone spikes using both hands. Thus, he created multiple bone ladders that enabled him to continuously move forward. In the event that one of the bone spikes is broken, it is unlikely to hinder his progress in moving forward.

But for every bone ladder that was shattered, the White Bone armour on Yue Zhong's body became thinner and thinner. While White Bones has the unique ability freely manipulate bones, these bone were refined from its body, and are not unlimited in number. If the bones were continuously broken, beyond a certain limit, White Bones could no longer creates new bone spikes.

Just before White Bone reached its limit, Yue Zhong finally broke through the rat tide and reached the granary.

The twenty elite rat king's bodyguards also followed Yue Zhong and was just lurking below the granary.

As mutant rat king saw Yue Zhong approaching it, it immediately jumped down from the granary. It landed on the ground, and the 20 elite rat king's bodyguards that was already there immediately surrounded it. This party of elite rats then fled.

Meanwhile, the rest of the elite rat king's bodyguards rushed towards Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu.

"It chose to escape?" Yue Zhong spied that the rat king had opted to escape and was greatly surprised. That is a level 43 mutant rat king, and its level was way higher than him! That it did not even attempt to fight and immediately opted to escape is outside of Yue Zhong's expectations

Although the rat king chose to escape, the 30 elite rat king's bodyguards and the remaining rat tide continued to surround and rush towards Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu from all sides.

Yue Zhong took one look at the endless tide of rats that was rapidly approaching him, and also chose to flee. He extended his right hand and fired a bone shard towards the roof of granary. Then using the extensible bone shard like a retractable rope, he launched himself and Ji Qing Wu to the rooftop of the granary.

The 30 elite rat king's bodyguards also quickly climbed towards the rooftop after the two intruders.

Yue Zhong just took a glance at the persistent bastards, and tossed a grenade towards the rat swarm below. A loud "Boom!" sound rang out. With a massive explosion, a large number of shrapnel were flung in all directions. This killed at least 10 of the normal mutant rats and their limbs were sent flying in all directions. Yue Zhong then jumped down towards the empty space that was created by the explosion.

Having stepped foot on solid ground, Yue Zhong continuously tossed grenades at the rat swarm, creating havoc among them. From the havoc, he slowly created a path towards the direction in which the rat king has fled in.

The thirty elite rat king's bodyguards were quickly left behind by Yue Zhong's sudden movement.

The mutant king rat may be as big as a bear, but its speed was not as fast as the elite rat king's bodyguards. Hence, it was much slower than Yue Zhong. The distance between the pursuer and the pursued was continuously shortened.

Seeing the situation, the mutant king rat issued a soft growl, and four of its elite rat king's bodyguards rushed towards Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu. Surprisingly for a rat, it is as cowardly as some human leaders, and is not willing to send too many bodyguards to deal with Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu out for fear of compromising

its own safety.

Looking at the four elite rat king's bodyguards that were rushing towards them, Ji Qing Wu eyes flashed with competitive spirit. "Let me go!" she exclaimed. Ji Qing Wu was a naturally competitive woman and is full of fighting spirit. If not, she would not had used a beginners' staff to fight zombies in the beginning of the apocalypse. It should be known that even among the men, there were very few men that had the courage to use the beginners staff to fight against the zombies. These men were not worried about whether they could not win against the zombie, but rather was afraid that they will be infected with the zombie virus.

Yue Zhong loosen his hold and let Ji Qing Wu down.

Ji Qing Wu lightly landed on the ground, and used her active skill: "Cutting edge enhancement." Her Tang imitation sword was enveloped in a layer of blue light.

Ji Qing Wu eyes gleamed with determination as she followed beside Yue Zhong. With each swing of her blade, several mutant rats were sliced apart like tofu.

In the span of a few breathe, the four elite rat king's bodyguards reached the area in front of Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu.

Yue Zhong moved his hand, and a stinger gun appeared on his hand. He suddenly accelerated like a ghost and avoided the attacks of the elite rat king's bodyguard in front of him. Then he pointed the stinger gun at the head of the elite rat king's bodyguard and pulled the trigger.

"Bam" the elite rat king's bodyguard head was blown apart, and its brains and blood combined together to form a work of art on the floor.

# Chapter 159

---

Another elite rat king's bodyguard lunged towards Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong twisted his body and barely managed to dodge the attack. But at the same time, he moved his stinger gun and blasted away the brains of the elite rat king's bodyguard.

Ji Qing Wu did not have as many weapons as Yue Zhong. Neither had she evolved as much as Yue Zhong. She did not even have the shadow steps skill that Yue Zhong had. But her swordsmanship skill was unparalleled, and her activated skill enhanced the deadliness of her blades. The Tang imitation sword in her hands wove a path of destruction, beheading an elite rat king's bodyguard in a single stroke even though she was lower in level than that creature. The head of the elite rat king's bodyguard flew through the air, and blood sprayed out in all directions from the wounds. A big experience point globe was immediately absorbed by her, allowing her to gain two levels with a single kill.

Despite killing an elite rat king's bodyguard, Ji Qing Wu legs had not ceased moving all this while. In the span of a heartbeat, she was standing next to the last elite rat king's bodyguard. The last elite rat king's bodyguard immediately swiped its claws at her. With her supple and flexible body, she is able to avoid the death blow aimed at her head by crouching down. Once the claws had swiped over her head, she sprung up and beheaded the last elite rat king's bodyguard with a single stroke.

Where is the experience orb?

Although these elite rat king's bodyguard were level 26 mutant beasts, their combat powers were much weaker than the level 20 boss hunter. Their only advantage over the boss hunter was their unmatched sharp claws. Other than that, their strength and speed were way inferior to the boss hunter.

“Amazing! I had selected the right person to bring for this



mission!” Yue Zhong saw the elegant way in which Ji Qing Wu had killed the two elite rat king’s bodyguards, and was very glad that he had chosen to bring Ji Qing Wu with him. Indeed, her performance did not disappointed him.

The four elite rat king’s bodyguards dropped a skill book and some [System] survival coins. Yue Zhong just kept all of them into his spatial ring, and continued to rush towards the Mutant King Rat like an arrow. The objective of this mission was to kill the Mutant King Rat. If the Mutant King Rat is not killed, the entire mission would be a failure, and there would be countless number of deaths among the humans even if the humans chose to retreat.

The Mutant King Rat saw that Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu had easily dispatched four of his bodyguards, and immediately quicken his pace. With a sharp howl, ten more elite rat king’s bodyguards turned back and rushed towards Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu.

Yue Zhong just took a glance at the approaching elite rat king’s bodyguards, and from his spatial ring, he rapidly received several hand grenades and threw them towards these beasts.

“Boom!” “Boomm!!” “Boommmmm...!!!”

A series of explosions resounded throughout the room. The 10 elite rat king’s bodyguards had not even came close to Yue Zhong before they were caught in the explosion. For 6 of these creatures, all that remained of them are the stumps of their foot, while their bones and guts were spattered all over the area.

The remaining four of the elite rat king’s bodyguards faced the exact opposite situation. Their legs had been tore apart by the force of the explosion, but their life was preserved.

From a short distance away, the rapidly approaching Yue Zhong fired 4 more bone spikes at the surviving elite rat king’s bodyguards. Each bone spike were fired with incredible accuracy, and pierced a massive hole through each of the surviving elite rat king’s bodyguards’ brains. Four massive experience globes were

absorbed by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong would not gain experience for using [non-System] weapons such as military weapons, grenades etc to kill any [System] creatures. However, he would gain experience orbs if he used the bone spikes as bone spikes were provided by White Bones and hence was part of the [System].

“Congratulations for reaching level 28. You have gain 2 points of stats points that you may distribute among your stats.”

“Increase stamina and agility!”

Yue Zhong quickly made his choice and continued to rush towards the Mutant King Rat.

The Mutant King Rat saw that Yue Zhong is very persistent in chasing after it, and continuously screamed a low pitched shrill cry.

From all directions surrounding the granary, more and more mutant rats continuously poured out from every nook and cranny, and each of them rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong continuously waved his hands and tossed multiple hand grenades into the swarm of rats. A series of explosions decorated the room with splashes of mutant rat bones, innards and bones.

Ji Qing Wu stood beside Yue Zhong, and guarded him. For each mutant rat that managed to come close to Yue Zhong, she sliced them apart with her blade skill.

The two of them wreaked a path of carnage and destruction towards the Mutant King Rats. Although they had to deal with numerous attacks from the mutant rats, their speed is still relatively quick. But the speed at which Yue Zhong used up his grenades is very rapid. Once he had used up all his grenades, both he and Ji Qing Wu would be caught in a hazardous situation.

In the span of 10 breathes, Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu are only

20+ meters away from the Mutant King Rat.

Yue Zhong activated the Ice Jade Ring's "Ice Cone" skill. Magical runes appears in the air instantly and launched an Ice Cone at the foot of the Mutant King Rat.

One of the elite rat king's bodyguards immediately stood in front of the Mutant King Rat and used its body to protect the Mutant King Rat. The Ice Cone ended up penetrating a large hole in the body of the elite rat king's bodyguard. At the same time, a powerful wave of force immediately freeze that elite rat king's bodyguard.

Yue Zhong took out his stinger gun, and continuously fired towards the Mutant King Rat.

One by one, the elite rat king's bodyguards took turns to use their body to protect the Mutant King Rat.

Feeling that it was in danger, the Mutant King Rats' cries became more and more desperate and urgent, and the 30 elite rat king's bodyguards' eyes turned blood shot as they raced towards Yue Zhong group in increasingly faster speed.

The mutant rats also seemed to be frenzied as they lurched themselves at Yue Zhong without concern for their own lives. But each and every one of the mutant rats could not scratch a hair on Yue Zhong's body as Ji Qing Wu easily sliced them apart.

Yue Zhong readied his devil flame skill, and mass of flames appeared in his hand. Suddenly he accelerated and like a flash of lightening, he disappeared from Ji Qing Wu's side and appear next to the Mutant King Rat. With his devil flames, he burnt the injured elite rat king's bodyguards protecting the Mutant King Rat. They were turned into ashes.

Ji Qing Wu was surprised by Yue Zhong sudden burst of speed, "Incredible! Had he evolved so much?"

Even if Yue Zhong had not used any active skills, his speed had

already eclipsed Ji Qing Wu by a wide margin.

Seeing that it could not flee anymore, the Mutant King Rat swiped a paw that was as big as bear towards Yue Zhong.

With his shadow step skills, he seemed to disappeared from the Mutant King Rat's sights for a moment, only to reappear behind the Mutant King Rat.

The mighty paws of the Mutant King Rat landed on the ground, and with a massive "Bam!" sound, the surrounding area also seemed to shake from the impact. There was a big imprint of the paws on the ground. If this paw strike had landed on a human body, it would have undoubtedly pounded a man into meat paste. If it hits Yue Zhong, even Yue Zhong would have been killed by the might of this blow.

But Yue Zhong had long escaped behind the Mutant King Rat, and had readied another fireball. He fired the ball of fire towards the back brain of the Mutant King Rat.

There was a massive "Bam" sound as the fireball hit the Mutant King Rat. After the smoke cleared, Yue Zhong was startled to see that the fireball has only created a black burnt mark on the hairs of the Mutant King Rat and that fireball was unable to penetrate the skull.

"An impressively hard skin and skull!" Yue Zhong cried out in alarm. This is the first time he had encountered a mutant beast that even his fireball was unable to harm.

# Chapter 160

---

Although it is not injured, the Mutant King Rat was incensed by the attack. It shrieked out a cry of anger and turned around and attempted to smack Yue Zhong with its mighty paws.

But with the shadow step skill, Yue Zhong was able to stay one step ahead. He dodged to the right side of the Mutant King Rat, and used his stinger gun to fire 3 stinger bullets into the head of the Mutant King Rat.

The stinger gun is powerful, and a single shot was able to seriously injured or kill the elite rat king's bodyguards. However, the same weapon only managed to create 3 tiny wounds of about 2 cm diameter on the Mutant King Rat's head. Still, unlike the fireball, the stinger gun managed to make the Mutant King Rat bleed – blood began to slip out from the wounds on the Mutant King Rat's head. Although it is injured, the 3 wounds are merely superficial wounds, and are far from enough to kill the Mutant King Rat.

The Mutant King Rat cried out in pain. It was enraged and furiously lunged at Yue Zhong with both its paws.

Yue Zhong was shocked: “Even the might of the stinger gun is insufficient to kill it?”

With the shadow step skill, Yue Zhong easily dodged the attack and moved towards the back of the Mutant King Rat. He then fired more 3 more times towards the Mutant King Rat's head.

Again, the 3 stinger bullets only managed to result in another 3 minor holes in the Mutant King Rat's head.

It turned its head and in one swift motion, lashed out with a paw containing all its strength. Each of the Mutant King Rat's paw strikes was as heavy as a mountain, and a single hit could even shatter a small jeep. With but a single strike, Yue Zhong would be

spattered into meat paste.

But the Mutant King Rat was not as agile as Yue Zhong. Sure, it could have killed Yue Zhong with just a single paw strike, but that was only if it could land a hit on Yue Zhong. With Yue Zhong superior speed, and under the effects of the shadow step, Yue Zhong was practically dancing in circles around it.

Once the Mutant King Rat made its move, Yue Zhong also moved at the same time. With his superior speed, Yue Zhong was again able to position himself behind the Mutant King Rat. This time, he fired 6 stinger bullets in a row into the hole created by a previous wound.

These six consecutive bullets were able to take advantage of the earlier wounds and managed to penetrate deep into the brains of the Mutant King Rat. Although the Mutant King Rat has very hard bones and skin, its brains are made up of soft matter. The brains exploded under the onslaught, and with a last twitch of its body, the Mutant King Rat collapsed on the floor.

“Congratulations for reaching level 29. You have gained 2 points of stats that you may distribute among your stats.”

...

“Congratulations for reaching level 31. You have gained 2 points of stats that you may distribute among your stats.”

Once the Mutant King Rat had passed away, a massive orb of experience was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body, allowing him to grant 3 levels at once.

“Put 3 points into agility, and 3 points into stamina!”

In the battle with the Mutant King Rat, if not for the fact that Yue Zhong's speed was vastly superior to the Mutant King Rat, Yue Zhong would have died. It is a fact that he could not even withstand a single blow from that creature. Therefore he unhesitatingly invested 3 points of his hard earned skills into agility.

“Congratulations for reaching above level 30. You can learn two extra active skills outside of your job skills before reaching level 50.”

“Congratulations for reaching level 30. You have received one point of skill enhancement point. Please choose a skill that you desire to enhance.”

“Enhance summon skeleton skill!” Yue Zhong immediately made a choice. He wants to enhance this skill to the maximum level, and see how it will evolve.

A sudden gush of knowledge entered Yue Zhong’s sea of knowledge, and in his summon skeleton skill, an additional rune was engraved in it.

A beam of black light emerged from the rune and empowered White Bones, evolving it further.

“Your summon skeleton skill has received 2 new skills.

New Skills 1: Return to Hell. When you use this powers, your skeleton will return to hell, and may self-evolve. However, in Hell, there are massive conflicts among the undead. Once your skeleton return to hell, there is a chance that your skeleton may continue to get stronger. However, there is also a chance that it may be killed by other undead, and becomes a pile of bones.

New Skills 2: Immediate summon. Using this skill, no matter where your skeleton is, it will immediately appear next to you. Cooldown: 1 day.”

[See this page for the new White Bones Stats.]

“Your summon skeleton skill has already reached the maximum level. If you wish to continue to improve on this skill, you must first master the skill: Summon Dark Skeleton.”

The Mutant King Rat also dropped two skill books and 200 [System] coins.

Yue Zhong immediately grabbed the 2 skill books. One of them is a skill book that enhanced stamina, while the other one is a skill book that enhance agility.

“Level 3 Passive Skill Enhancement: After learning this skill, your stamina will permanently improve by 10 points.”

Yue Zhong did not hesitate and immediately learnt this skill. With a flash of light, he felt the skill immediately enhancing his stats.

Once the Mutant King Rat has died, the tide of mutant rats parted from Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu as if Moses commanded the sea to part. They fled in all directions.

The elite rat king's bodyguards also fled and were no longer as fearless as it was when it guarded the Mutant King Rat.

Rats are actually cowardly by nature. Given a choice to fight or flee, they will naturally prefer to flee. The mutant rats have evolved from ordinary rats, and hence inherit the cowardice of its predecessor. The only reason they attacked so aggressively was because the Mutant King Rat had a unique ability to control them, and they were powerless to resist its control. Once the Mutant King Rat had died, they were freed from its control and immediately reverted back to their cowardly nature.

Ji Qing Wu was actually saved in the nick of time by Yue Zhong. While Yue Zhong was fighting the Mutant King Rat, she was trying her best to fend off the numerous mutant rats that kept attacking her. But the packs of mutant rats were unrelenting in numbers – as soon as she killed one, two more took its place. As the rat horde kept closing in on her, she found herself without the space needed to execute her superior sword skills and could only use normal strikes to defend herself. Bit by bit she was forced back, until she finds herself in a precarious situation. If not for the timely death of the Mutant King Rat, she would be the one who died today.

Without the tide of mutant rats pressurising her, Ji Qing Wu



breath a sigh of relief and walked towards Yue Zhong. Seeing Ji Qing Wu, Yue Zhong passed the skill book that enhanced agility to her. He has never been selfish with empowering his men.

Seeing the skill book, Ji Qing Wu eyes shone with eagerness, and immediately learnt the skill.

After she had learnt the skill, Yue Zhong immediately asked Ji Qing Wu for assistance, “Come and help! Help me cut away its skull.”

The skull of the Mutant King Rat was very thick and Yue Zhong found the task to be very difficult. However, Ji Qing Wu has the skill “Cutting edge enhancement.”, allowing any weapons in her hands to be sharper than normal. To Yue Zhong, using this skill to slice apart the skull is a very useful ability.

Ji Qing Wu walked over and tried to use her enhanced Tang Imitation Sword to slice open the skull of the Mutant King Rat. Although the enhanced weapon was able to chip open a small hole in the skull, it could not slice off the skull in one stroke as Ji Qing Wu had expected.

Ji Qing Wu’s eyes flash a hint of surprise. After she had learnt the skill “Cutting edge enhancement”, no matter what she tried to cut, it parted like tofu. This is the first time that she encountered something that can withdraw a blow from an enhanced blade.

Ji Qing Wu used her strength and continued to stab into the skull. After repeated attempts and expending a lot of effort, she finally managed to stab the blade into the skull.

Leveraging the blade like a saw, she slowly but steadily cut a hole in the skull.

Yue Zhong immediately put his hands into the brains of the Mutant King Rat and try to find any monster beads.

“Bingo! Let’s see what we found!” Yue Zhong grabbed two items from the brains: One of them is red blood bead. The other one is a

pebble size white crystal.

# Chapter 161

---

Not long after Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu had left the camp, there were some activity going on in the middle of the camp that went unnoticed by the humans: Two claws sneakily protruded out from the ground and continuously scattered the dirt around the area. Before long, a big hole appeared in the grounds in the middle of the camp.

From that hole, two Mutant Rats Variation climbed out. These Mutant Rats Variation were the same size as a cat, but unlike the other mutant rats, they have pair of forelimbs were unusually developed and were filled with sharp claws.

“Holy Shit!! There are rats here!!”

“Rat Variation!!”

Looking at the Mutant Rat Variations that were rapidly climbing out of the hole, the men were taken back, and immediately fired at these rats.

Under a hail of bullets, the first few Mutant Rat Variations were killed as soon as they emerged from the hole.

But the hole had already been dug, and from the hole, a massive number of (normal) Mutant Rats poured out..

“Fill the hole! Do not let them come out!” The leader of a small team of men roared.

7 evolvers holding Tang Imitation Swords leaped out from among that team of men, and rushed towards the hole.

Everyone knew that if these Mutant Rats continuously poured out of the hole, all the men here would die today!

The 7 men used Tang Imitation Swords to continuously sliced apart any Mutant Rats they came across. Soon they formed circle around the hole, refusing to let a single one of these creatures

escape and wrack havoc within the camp.

“Let me do it!!” A militant armed with a type 79 assault rifles took advantage of the 7 evolvers’ ability to prevent these Mutant Rats from climbing out of the hole. He rushed towards the hole and open fired into the hole with a mixture of glee and reckless abandonment. “Datatatataaaaa....” A continuous stream of bullets shot through the Mutant Rats that were scrambling through the hole.

After emptying all the bullets in his magazine, the militant pulled out 4 of the Mutant Rat Variations’ corpses [that was covering the hole], and immediately tossed a hand grenade into the hole.

“Bombbbbbbb!” A loud explosive rang out. From the hole, a wave of heat, rocks and Mutant Rats’ body parts were launched into the air, creating a massive cloud of dust. After the cloud of dust has dissipated, the hole was sealed with a mixture of rocks and sand.

Suddenly a series of loud shouts sent a chill into the hearts of the men:

“There is also a hole here!!”

“Holy shit! There is another hole over here!!”

Shouts and screams erupted among the humans as multiple holes suddenly appeared at various points throughout the camp. A swamp of Mutant Rats emerged from each of these holes, and rushed towards the humans in a frenzy.

Then the whole camp erupted in an outpouring of gun fire and screams.

From Yue Zhong side of the camp, Kong Tianyu bellowed, “Spray the gasoline! Quickly spray the gasoline!”

Although there were many Mutant Rats emerging from the various holes, the number of Mutant Rats that managed to enter the camp through the tunnels were a lot lesser in numbers than the Mutant Rats Tide that was outside the ring of fire. If the

Mutant Rats outside the camp took advantage of the confusion within the camp and rushed towards the camp, then all of these men would die under the jaws of the rat tide.

The two fire trucks constantly sprayed gasoline onto the flames, creating a buffer zone. The initial fire was running out of things to burn and was slowly dying out when it suddenly received this new source of fuel. Torrents of flames that was dying out received a new lease of life as the inferno erupted and raged even more fiercely.

In the camp where Yue Zhong's team was defending themselves, several rat holes had been dug by the Mutant Rats Variations. From each of these rat holes, several mutant rats emerged and rushed towards the men.

"Follow me!" Zhong Tianyu roared, as he grabbed a Tang Imitation Sword and rushed towards the closest hole.

Chen Shitou and the rest of Yue Zhong close combat team members also equipped their Tang Imitation Sword and moved forwards to intercept the Mutant Rats.

The war between men and rats became chaotic as the two side crashed together in close combat battle. Every moment, there were massive number of Mutant Rats that were killed. At the same time, there were many men who had bitten to death or seriously injured by these rats.

Yao Yao had also participated in this joint exercise. The Tang Imitation Sword in her hands seemed to be waving after-images like a ghost as it danced among the Mutant Rats. Numerous Mutant Rats continuously died in her hands, and a large number of experience orbs entered into her body, continuously strengthening her.

Little Greenie Eagle also used its wings to knock away the Mutant Rats that approached toward it. These Mutant Rats were unable to hurt it at all. With each peck, there will be a Mutant Rat corpse

adding to the pile of dead Mutant Rats around it.

The militants and normal humans in various camps were either injured or killed by the unending streams of mutant rats. Only the evolvers from the LongHai teams and those who wore the Water Python Snakeskin Armor like Yue Zhong's team of evolvers were able to escape injury. The scales and skin of the Water Python Snakeskin Armor was incredibly tough. Although the Mutant Rats' teeth were incomparably sharp and were able to chew through a steel plate, the action was not immediate and took place over a period of time. Similarly, these rats could bite through the Water Python Snakeskin Armor, but only if they had the time to chew through it. Of course these battled harden warriors were not going to stand still and give the Mutant Rats this luxury.

Other than the close combat team, Yue Zhong's team also had many soldiers who were armed with type 03 rifles. They also fired at Mutant Rats in short bursts of fire. All the marksmen in Yue Zhong's team are made up of veteran soldiers. These soldier had undergone strict military training. After following Yue Zhong, they were not only required to continue these training, but were also frequently called into raiding missions where they had to clear zombies.

Under this strict diet of training combined with practical combat experience, their accuracy improved day by day, and their combat powers are way higher than normal soldiers. After all, soldiers who had experienced real combat were more useful in a war than soldiers who had just received military training.

Kong Tianyu brought his men and rushed over to all the locations where the mutant rats were streaming in from. Each time when they fought their way to a rat hole, they would fire all their bullets into the hole, and tossed in a hand grenade, closing that hole.

Although this method is not fool proof – the Mutant Rat Variations could continue to dig a path out of the plugged hole,

each hole plugged brought the men a brief respite from the attacks of the Mutant Rats, making the number of Mutant Rats that they need to handle at one time more manageable.

The Mutant Rats were in reality, only level 5, and if they did not have the advantage of numbers, they would not be a match for humans. Under Kong Tianyu's leadership, the Mutant Rats' corpses piled up, and each rat hole were filled up with debris from explosions.

Just when the number of Rat Holes in the camp had been reduced to 30 or less, suddenly there were numerous claws extending from the ground at various locations within the camp. In a short span of time, 12 more massive rat holes were created by teams of four Mutant Rat Variations in concerto.

From each of these 12 massive rat holes emerged an Elite Rat King's bodyguard. 12 Elite Rat King's bodyguards glared menacingly at the humans and let loose a loud roar.

Seeing emergence of this new threat, the military men immediately aimed their guns at these monsters, and a rain of bullets sprayed out towards them from all directions.

Although these Elite Rat King's bodyguards were shot numerous times under the might of the bullet storm, these creatures did not immediately die from their wounds. With a shake of their body, they charged towards the group of humans and begin slaughtering the humans with each flash of their claws. Looking at the carnage, it was as if powerful tigers had landed among meek lambs and began a massacre.

Two of the evolvers who were armed with Tang Imitation Swords did not even had the time to react to this new threat, when an Elite Rat King's bodyguard's claws penetrated through the stomach of the first evolver and into the guts of the second evolver. As the Elite Rat King's bodyguard withdrew its hands, the intestines of both men were discarded on to the floor, while sprays

of blood emerged from the wound as the surprised evolvers lifelessly sunk onto the floor. Even as their life rapidly poured out of them, in a shower of blood letting, they still did not understand how they died.

If even these evolvers were no match for the Elite Rat King's bodyguards, then normal humans were helpless against the might of the Elite Rat King's bodyguards. Each Elite Rat King's bodyguards craved out a path of carnage and destruction, littering the area around them with the blood stained corpses of the humans it killed.

“Shoot the canon! Fire the canon!” Kong Tianyu noticed that the strength of these Elite Rat King's bodyguards were extraordinary, and he immediately ROARED the order.



# Chapter 162

---

Once the soldiers had received the command, the soldiers manning the type ZPT90 25 mm autocannons that were mounted on the IFV immediately let loose a stream of heavy firepower.

The type ZPT90 25 mm autocannons used of armour piercing rounds that could easily tear apart an armoured jeep. Although the Elite Rat King's Bodyguards had hides that were able to shrug off normal bullets, these hides were unable to withstand the might of armour piercing rounds. Under the concentrated fire, an Elite Rat King's Bodyguard ended up being shredded into pieces.

On the LongHai Military Camp side, they also began to use the ZPT90 25 mm autocannons mounted on their IFV and open fired on two Elite Rat King's Bodyguards, and tore these creatures apart.

Under the two combined might of the two IFV firepower, 5 of the Elite Rat King's Bodyguards had been ripped apart. But the remaining 7 of these creature Elite Rat King's Bodyguards were scattered around the camp, creating paths of death and destruction among the men.

The IFV could not fire at the remaining 7 Elite Rat King's Bodyguards as these creatures are too close to groups of men. These bullets would not discriminate against men or beast and would also tear their allies into shreds if the autocannon continued to fire. Therefore, there was a temporary ceasefire.

Of the 7 Elite Rat King's Bodyguards, 4 of them had headed towards Yue Zhong's military group, 2 of these creatures had rushed towards the Coalition group, and 1 of them had entered into the LongHai military group.

The 2 Elite Rat King's Bodyguards that made it into the ranks of the Coalition group were like unstoppable killing machines as they massacred the men. When even evolvers could be disembowelled by a single swipe of its claws, the Coalition which comprised of

ordinary men could not withstand the carnage that each of these creatures wrought.

Normal guns and weapons could barely scratched its' hide, and the Coalition were powerless to stop the rampage of these pair of killing machines. In the short span of a few breaths, there were at least 4 men that were disembowelled as their guts or hearts were ripped out from their bodies, collapsing in an orgy of blood-letting.

To compound the problem, the Coalition group was also assaulted by hordes of Mutant Rats pouring out from the rat holes at the same time.

The Elite Rat King's Bodyguard that slaughtered its way into the LongHai Military Group seemed to disappear as it blended into a group of Mutant Rats that it was leading. As the rapidly expanding numbers of Mutant Rats rushed into the camp, occasionally it will emerge from the tide of rats surrounding it. Each appearance was always accompanied by a horrifying flash of claws that cleaved apart a soldier with each hit. Then as if it was never there, the Elite Rat King's bodyguard disappeared among the tide of rats again. The group of Mutant Rats and Elite Rat King's bodyguard then headed towards a group of marksmen in the Military and began a mass slaughter.

As the IFV dared not to fire the autocannon for fear of hitting its own men, the Elite Rat King's bodyguard was like a mighty and invincible beast among the marksmen. Even on the occasions that the men managed to land a hit with their machine guns, its hide allowed it to shrug off the damage.

"Xiao Wang, Lao Liu! ##\$#%#@#!!! Mother-F\*\*ker! Go and Die!" Looking at the corpse of 7 of his friends that were killed by the Elite Rat King's bodyguard, one of the militant's eyes turn bloodshot with rage, and toss a hand grenade towards the rapidly approach group of Mutant Rats and Elite Rat King's bodyguard.

"Boom!" The surrounding Mutant Rats and the Elite Rat King's

bodyguard was blown apart by the force of the grenade, and the Elite Rat King's bodyguard stood still stupidly as half of its body seemed to be missing. Then it collapsed.

But as the explosion was too close, the one that threw the grenade was also caught in its blast radius. His right leg was blasted off, and his whole body was covered in blood and shrapnel pieces. He collapsed onto the ground and was barely alive himself. He found himself slowly dying as blood seeped out from his wounds, staining the earth with the red colour of his blood. Then all is black.

One of four Elite Rat King's bodyguards had just entered Yue Zhong's group's camp when little Greenie Eagle leaped down from the top of a vehicle and pinned it to ground with its claws. With a peck of its mighty beaks, it crushed the head of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard and scattered the remains of its brains all over the floor.

These Elite Rat King's bodyguards were not stupid. Seeing how easily Little Greenie Eagle killed one of its own, they chose to avoid going near Little Greenie Eagle and headed towards the rest of the men.

Yue Zhong's group were comprised of brave men who were not afraid of these creatures. Seeing one of the Elite Rat King's bodyguards approaching them, 4 of the close combat team members gripped their Tang Imitation Sword tightly, and rushed towards the Elite Rat King's bodyguard. The team of four men were wearing Water Python Snakeskin Armour and it gave them the confidence to engage these killing machines in close combat.

Like an enraged panther, the Elite Rat King's bodyguard also charged towards the men, and swiped at one of them with its claws as if it was batting aside a fly.

With a single hit, a terrifying force sent that man flying with . Blood oozed out from his mouth while in flight, creating a red

colour arc in the air. As he landed heavily on the ground, he seemed unable to get up and was barely conscious. A close look will reveal that his outer garments had been torn, and even the Water Python Snakeskin Armour that could resist bullets had been imprinted with the creature's claws mark. Although the Water Python Snakeskin Armour had prevented the Elite Rat King's bodyguard from disembowelling him in a single strike, it could not protect him against the force of the impact.

The other 3 members of the close combat team swung their Tang Imitation Sword with all their might as they chopped towards the body of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard.

Although these close combat team members were evolvers, they do not have any powerful skills from the [System]. As a result, their blades could only leave white colour slash marks on the hide of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard. They were dismayed to find that they could not even cut through the hide to make this creature bleed!

There was an irritated look in the eyes of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard. In its eyes, it considered the three men surrounding it as nothing more than pesky flies. It raised its left hand to swat away these flies. The faces of these men turned pale. They had seen what a swipe of these claws could do to their comrade earlier.

Before its paw could complete the slash, a small shadowy figure used incredible speed to appear behind the Elite Rat King's bodyguard. With a trust of its blade, the shadowy figure stabbed a Tang Imitation Sword into the right eye of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard. Then she retreated.

All animals have at least one critical points on their body: their eyes. No matter how powerful these animals are, the eyes of a creature is a weak spot. The Elite Rat King's bodyguard is no exception to this rule. The Tang Imitation Sword was able to stab deep into the creature's brain from opening created by the eyes.

The Elite Rat King's bodyguard struggled for a brief moment as it lashed about in its death throes, and desperately struggled to pull out the sword. But it was obvious that this creature is getting weaker and weaker. With a sudden stiffening of its body, it collapsed into a pool of light and dropped a skill book.

A large experience orb entered into the body of the shadowy figure. Only then did the 3 men who was fighting the Elite Rat King's bodyguard realised that the small shadowy figure is actually Yao Yao.

Yao Yao picked up the Skill book and saw that it is a level 3 Agility Enhancement Skill book. With but a thought, she immediately opt to learn this skill and the skill book vanished as a glow of light surrounded her and empowered her.

Seeing this, the 3 close combat team members' mouths slightly curled, but they did not say anything.

Yue Zhong had a very strict rule: All the items that were dropped by any creatures in the [System] had to be submitted to him. Only he was allowed to distribute these rewards based on merits of his men. Secretly keeping an item or learning a skill from a dropped skill book was a big offence, and once any transgressors were discovered, they would be sentenced to death.

But Yao Yao had just saved their lives. In addition, she was on close terms with Yue Zhong. They had no intention of reporting Yao Yao for this violation of rules.

On the other side of Yue Zhong's camp, one of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard was locked in fierce combat with Kong Tianyu, Chen Shitou and two other close combat team members.

That Elite Rat King's bodyguard swiped a massive paw at one close combat team members and sent him flying. Although he is not disembowelled in one hit, his bones were crushed from the impact of the blow.

Chen Shitou had innately practiced a type of kung fu before the apocalypse. After he had attained the ability to evolve, he had participated in numerous raiding missions with Yue Zhong's team. Although he joined Yue Zhong's team relatively late compared to other members, his level is not low, and he is now a level 7 evolver. He stepped forward, and using his kung fu training, launched a mighty low kick at the Elite Rat King's bodyguard's leg.

The Elite Rat King's bodyguard lost its balance and fell heavily into the floor.

Chen Shitou quickly used his military knife to cut the throat of the prone Elite Rat King's bodyguard. If this is a man or an ordinary zombie, they will be decapitated by now. Alas! The knife was unable to even scratch a mark on the surface of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard's skin.

The Elite Rat King's bodyguard used its hands to support itself and was trying to stand up again by pushing against the ground.

Kong Tianyu was not going let go of this excellent opportunity. He quickly stepped forwards, and stabbed his Tang Imitation Sword through an eye socket of this beast. Then he used his body weight to push the sword deeper and deeper into the eye socket, while twisting and turning the sword in his hands. The blade drilled a path inside the brains of this Elite Rat King's bodyguard, pounding it into a sticky brain paste.

But Kong Tianyu has made a fatal error – he was standing in front of the Elite Rat King's bodyguard as he used all his strength to drive the Tang Imitation Sword deeper into its brain. The Elite Rat King's bodyguard's lashed out in fury at the pain and Kong Tianyu was unable to avoid its claws and was sent flying. However, a massive experience orb also entered into his body, and instantly promoted him to level 12 at one shot.

At the same time a valuable skill book was dropped.

# Chapter 163

---

Having killed an Elite Rat King's Bodyguard, Little Greenie Eagle searched the area for any more threats. It's sharp eyes spied the last Elite Rat King's Bodyguard in Yue's Zhong camp, and with a terrible speed, it rushed towards it. With a single peck, its mighty beak crushed the brains of Elite Rat King's Bodyguard before the Elite Rat King's Bodyguard could react.

“Boom!!!” “Boommmbbbb!!”

Two mighty explosion rang out. The last 2 Elite Rat King's Bodyguards were taken down by two suicide bombers in the Coalition group armed with live grenades in a Kamikaze attack.

But how did the various factions in the Coalition group got hold of these weapons, especially grenades, in the first place? It should be noted that in China before the apocalypse, machine guns and hand grenades were restricted to the army or police. It is the same in LongHai Survival Camp.

The truth is that a lot of the Coalition group members had cultivated good Guanxi (Relations) with the Military in LongHai Survival Camps. After the apocalypse, weapons are strength, and strength means survival in a post-apocalypse world. Many factions have donated food and women to get weapons such as machine guns and hand grenades from the Military, and these weapons become the bottom line insurance for their lives.

Without the added threat of the Elite Rat King's Bodyguards, the rest of the men began to slowly turn the tide against the Mutant Rats that were still pouring out of the rat holes. The men quickly worked together to deal with the Mutant Rats in their territory and close up each existing hole with a grenade.

Just when the situation was getting under control, again several pairs of claws protruded from the ground and scattered rocks and soil all over the grounds. With the Mutant Rat Variations working

in unison, 24 large holes were quickly created. From each of these holes, an Elite Rat King's Bodyguard emerged.

Looking at this situation, all the men felt a hinge of despair. It was with great difficulty and heavy casualties before they managed to kill 12 of these monsters, and now there are twice as many Elite Rat King's Bodyguards! Even if they managed to kill or drive these creatures off, the death count will be very high, and many of them would undoubtedly perished. As well, even if they managed to drive off this wave of beast, will the next wave come in even greater numbers?

Having experienced what these beasts could do if they ran unchecked, the men manning the type ZPT 90 25mm autocannon in the IFV immediately focused all their firepower on this new threat.

Under the roar of the autocannon firepower, many of the Mutant Rats and Elite Rat King's Bodyguards were torn asunder.

But as powerful as the IFVs were, there were only 2 of these machines. Although 8 of the Elite Rat King's Bodyguards were ripped into shreds, 16 of the monstrous creatures still managed to lead a large number of Mutant Rats into the areas where there are dense concentrations of men.

Just when the Elite Rat King's Bodyguards and Mutant Rats were about to engage the humans in fierce combat, a surprising thing occurred. The swarm of rats suddenly scattered and fled in all directions, leaving the men alone.

Even the Elite Rat King's Bodyguards that were unstoppable killing machines suddenly raised their head, sniffed into air, and ran back to the hole they appeared from.

The two gunners from the IFV grinned and displayed their might as the autocannon burst apart some of the fleeing Mutant Rats and Elite Rat King's Bodyguards.



“Do not shoot anymore!” “Stop shooting! Stop shooting!” Kong Tianyu yelled out a command.

Yue Zhong’s forces had limited ammo. It is for this reason that the IFV seldom use its type ZPT 90 25mm autocannon. The autocannon is ususally used for showing off their strength and not for actual combat. Only when the men in Yue Zhong’s camp were facing a desperate situation did Kong Tianyu authorised the use of this weapon of war. The reason why Yue Zhong had trained a large number of close combat team members is because they want to conserve their ammunition.

Although the firepower is very strong, but the consequences of reliance on these weapons is also very dangerous. Without bullets, a sword is much better than a rifle as a weapon.

All the men in Yue Zhong team’s stopped firing, and the surviving close combat team members immediately chased and hacked apart any Mutant Rats within reach. Now that these Mutant Rats are fleeing and not attacking them in groups, the Mutant Rats are easy prey. Each Mutant Rats are level 5 Mutant beasts, and each kill will enable the close combat team members to gain more experience and hopefully evolve further.

After Yue Zhong has slayed the Mutant Rat King, the Mutant Rats and Elite Rat King’s Bodyguards are in confusion and dispersed in all direction as they fled the area. Seeing the actions of Yue Zhong’s team members who continuously collected the experience orbs, the rest of the evolvers from the Coalition group also charged out with their Tang Imitation Swords, and tried to gain more experience.

Watching the fleeing Mutants Rats and Elite Rat King’s Bodyguards, the surviving humans let out a cheer. In this battle, although approximately 100 men had been killed, they had attained victory at last.

Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu returned to the camp. All around

them is the corpses of rats, blood and guts of men, testifying to the intensity of the battle in the camp.

Once he returned to the camp, Yue Zhong immediately sought out Kong Tianyu. Grabbing his arm, Yue Zhong asked, “Is anyone killed or injured?”

For this mission, all the men that Yue Zhong brought out are elite troops from his party. Each of these men had killed at least 30 zombies. As well, all of these elite troops were equipped with Water Python Snakeskin Armor. Even if there is one death, Yue Zhong would be saddened by the loss of an elite troop member.

“Report: Two of our men were seriously injured. However, they had already consumed the Life Recovery Grass, and their life should not be in danger.” Zhong Tianyu also passed a skill book and a small pile of coins to Yue Zhong. “Captain Yue, this is a skill book that dropped and some coins.”

“Level 2 skill: Super Strength Enhancement. After activating this skill, within 30 secs, your strength will be increased by 30. However, after 30 secs, current stamina will drop by 10 points. If current stamina is less than 10 points, you will be unable to use this skill.”

Yue Zhong tossed the book to Kong Tianyu. “This time you have done well! This skill book will be yours!”

Yue Zhong was not interested in this skill. The surge in power of this skill could only be used for a short time, and learning this skill will also consume one slot and reduced the number of active skills he may learn.

“Thank you, Captain Yue!” Kong Tianyu was very happy, and immediately learnt the skill. With a ray of light, the book disappeared, and the knowledge of that skill appeared in his mind.

At level 10, he gained the ability to enhance one skill. However, at that time he did not have any skills. Now that he had a skill, he

also chose to put his skill enhancement point to this skill.

From his mind came a message “Level 2 skill: Surge in Strength +1! After using this skill, your strength will increase by 35 for a time period of 5 mins. After 5 mins, your current stamina will be reduced by 10. If your current stamina is lower than 10, you may not use this skill. There is no cooldown on this skill.”

Kong Tianyu was very glad, and in his heart, he laughed “Hahahaha, with this I am now a true evolver!”

Once he activated this skill, for 5 minutes Kong Tianyu will become like Hercules, and normal men would not be able to withstand the might of his blows!

Yue Zhong walked towards the injured men.

Seeing Yue Zhong, the two men who were injured tried to get up and called out weakly, “Captain Yue!”

Yue Zhong just helped them back to rest. “There is no need to get up. Just focus on resting for now and slowly regain your strength!”

The two injured men was touched and feebly nodded their heads. This consideration for their well-being increased the feeling of loyalty they felt towards Yue Zhong.

After ensuring that all his men were all right, Yue Zhong then walked towards the LongHai Military camp.

The LongHai Military group painted a tragic scene. Other than the men who were smacked to death or disembowelled, there are 8 more soldiers who had been bitten by the Mutant Rats. These men were spread out on the floor, and blood seeped out from their wounds, while they cried out in pain.

Xu Zhigang was holding an injured man in his arms. This man is wounded in several places, and he was crying as he begged Xu Zhigang. “Platoon leader! Please shoot me and release me from this agony! I can’t stand it. It is so painful! Please have mercy on me and end my sufferings!”

Xu Zhigang was fiercely holding back the tears in his eyes as he shouted. “Lang Zi! Please hold on!! I will definitely save you! You will definitely get well!”

# Chapter 164

---

Lang Zi, the man who was being held by Xu Zhenggang, was among the bravest soldiers under Xu Zhenggang's command. Both Lang Zi and Xu Zhenggang were initially assigned to the same platoon. Having experienced countless numbers of battles together, their relationships were as close as brothers. When the Elite Rat King's Bodyguard attacked the military group, Lang Zi is among the first men to step out to engage the new threat.

With tears streaming down his face, Lang Zi begged "Platoon Leader!! I know you are a good man. But I also know that we do not have any medicine. With my injuries, even I successfully made it back to LongHai Military Base, I will also die! Why don't you just shoot me and spare me the agony from these pain? Please, I am begging you!!"

After the apocalypse, medicine, like food, became a valuable resource. After raiding Qing Yuan County, a large number of medicine were acquired by the LongHai survival camp government. Due to limited supply of medicine, only men who were living in the Special Administrative Region in the LongHai survival camp were able to get medical treatment. As for other men, even if they were injured, they were only able to either find ways to heal themselves or wait for death.

As the army was the one who conducted the raid, Lei Cheng (offside note: Lei Cheng is the military commander in LongHai Survival Camp) had misappropriated a lot of medicines and kept them as his personal stash. However, these medicines were all for his relatives, his personal aides and himself. There is no way he would share the medicines with anyone else. Xu Zhenggang is not a personal aide of Lei Cheng, and could not even get hold of any medicine from Lei Cheng.

Xu Zhenggang was a thoroughbred soldier. His loyalty did not rest with Lei Cheng, but resided within the country and

government. If Lei Cheng should attempt to stage a military coup to take control of LongHai Survival Camp, Xu Zhenggang would resist the hostile takeover with all his might.

What Lei Cheng really desired are soldiers who obeyed all his orders without question and were willing to carry out his orders, even if his orders put them in conflict with the government or country. Therefore, Xu Zhenggang had never been on close terms with Lei Cheng.

In the military, there was a clear chain of command. This was the foundation on which the military was based on. Only and only Lei Cheng could issue any military commands and mobilised the army as Lei Cheng is the army commander. As Xu Zhenggang was soldier under the command of the military, even if the government would like Xu Zhenggang to be in charge of this expedition, they must first received Lei Cheng's approval to do so.

But Lei Cheng was a man who looked after his own interest first. He would not always follow the government's instructions. At the same time, the government was worried about Lei Cheng getting too much power. As a result, the relationship between the government and the military in LongHai survival camp could be described as being strained. Even if the government wanted to take control of the distribution of medicine in the army, it would be but an empty dream – the government did not have the power to take over the military and Lei Cheng would never agree to hand over the medical supplies.

In the military, for men who were as seriously injured as Lang Zi, most platoon commanders would not hesitate to deliver the coup de grace and end the suffering of his soldiers. But how could Xu Zhenggang bear to kill them? These men had been in countless numbers of battle with him and are closer to him than his own brothers.

The pain that the rest of the 7 injured men were going through were also visible on their face and actions as they winced, groan

and trashed about. All of the injuries were very serious and it is obvious that if they did not receive any medical treatment, they would die.

The rest of the men in the platoon could only stand and watch the scene unfold with tears in their eyes, and feelings of sadness and being powerless to help swelled in their hearts. All of these injured men are men who had experienced several life and death situations with them. Their relationships were cultivated over the spans of several dangerous missions where they worked as one and trusted in each other to watch their backs as they overcame many obstacles together. Over time, an unshakable bond was formed between them.

“F\*\*k! There is no justice in this world? We stand in the front lines of all battles, risking our lives for these bastards, and what do we get in return? They will not even spare any medicine for us? What are we in the eyes of these men? Are we still regarded as human beings? When the pets of the men living in the Special Administrative Region were sick, they had access to a vet. Are, we the soldiers who risked our lives to get more food for the population of LongHai Survival Camp, even inferior to (pet) dogs?” A burly soldier threw his military cap to the floor in frustration as he let loose a stream of profanities at the government and military in command.

Many rich men and women in the Special Administrative Region kept dogs as pet. Even when there was a shortage of food and countless numbers of people in LongHai survival camp were starving and dying of hunger, these dogs were well fed with superior dog food or left-overs of human food. When these dogs were sick, they had access to vets and expensive veterinary medicine. In contrast, the living conditions for many survivors in LongHai Survival Camp were inferior to a dog!

The burly men’s words struck a chord with the sentiments in the hearts of the solders. Another soldier also took off his military cap

and threw it to the ground in frustration. “That’s right! We are disposable! Even if we died, in the eyes of the top brass in the government or military, we are worse than a dog!”

Listening to these words, the morale of the soldiers dropped drastically. These men were often the first to engage in battle and the last to retreat. They often have to participate in many dangerous missions to raid food and other supplies, and have a high injury and death toll. These soldiers are also human. Seeing this unfair and biased treatment, all these soldiers were of course, unhappy and fuming in anger.

Lang Zi knew that he will definitely die. He took the opportunity to finally say the words that he had longed kept in his heart. “Platoon Leader! You bring the rest of our brothers ... and leave! The further you go... the better! Do not follow Lei Cheng anymore, he wants ... he wants the lives of us all!”

Lang Zi’s words spelled out what many soldiers also felt in their hearts but did not say it out. They all just stared at the platoon commander, Xu Zhenggang. They were not blind, nor were they stupid. They of course knew the Lei Cheng had regarded them as disposable men.

Xu Zhenggang had tears in his eyes as he replied: “Lang Zi, we cannot leave! We are military soldiers, government soldiers and civilian soldiers. Now that the country is in danger, we, the military, have to protect the citizens. If we all leave, who will protect our people and country?”

There was a bitter smile in Lang Zi mouth, as he sighed. He had worked with Xu Zhenggang for so many years, of course he knew the character of Xu Zhenggang inside out. Xu Zhenggang was a man with strong convictions and belief. No matter what others people said to him, he would never give up on his beliefs. But this was also what made Xu Zhenggang so attractive to his men, and why Lang Zi was willing to fight alongside Xu Zhenggang.



At this time, Yue Zhong stepped forward.

“I can heal them, and in addition, I have 70% chance that they will be completely healed.” Yue Zhong said.

Xu Zhenggang's eyes shone with a flash of hope, but at the same time, he was wary of Yue Zhong. “What are your terms and conditions? If you want me to betray the government or military in Long Hai survival camp, I will not agree to your terms.”

Xu Zhenggang was not that stupid as to believe that Yue Zhong would help him out of the goodness in Yue Zhong's heart. The situation among these two leaders was quite awkward – after this joint mission had been concluded, it is likely that they might be enemies in the near future.

Yue Zhong looked at the men who were injured and named his terms. “If I heal you, after you have recovered, you must join my team and become my men. Your boss, Lei Cheng, treated your lives as insignificant as grass. But I see you men as treasures! If you are willing to join me, I will give you nothing but the best! The best weapons, the best food, the best medicine! All these are available to you! If you have the ability, having two or more wives is also not a problem! ”

On Yue Zhong's side, what he lacked most were professional soldiers. Also, he had raided a military base and received many military weapons like IFVs, there were few soldiers who were proficient in using these weapons. If he needs to train these soldiers from scratch, it would require a large amount of petrol, bullets, and time. Therefore soldiers who were already trained are treasures in the eyes of Yue Zhong. Not only can he save on the resources needed to train these soldiers, but each soldier that joined his party could immediately be put to work in defending his camp.

Even if these soldiers could not drive or operate IFVs, these experienced soldiers only need more combat experiences and they

would be elites among the men. These battle hardened men would be much stronger and more stable in a real battle than the conscripted soldiers in his army.

Xu Zhenggang pointed his fingers at the 8 men and said. "Then please heal them. They are all good soldiers. I promise you that once you have healed them, I will strike them out from the military list, and they will be your men."

If these soldiers did not get any help, they would die without any doubts. Xu Zhenggang could not bear the thoughts of men who he regarded as brothers dying, especially when an opportunity to preserve their lives is right in front of him.

Yue Zhong nodded and took out some powder made from the Life Saving Grass, and sprinkled them into a bowl of water. Then he let the men drink the bowl of water and sprinkle some powder onto the wounds of these men.

Under the miraculous effects of the Life Saving Grass, the 8 men's wounds slowly began to heal, and their situation shown signs of stabilizing.

# Chapter 165

---

Seeing that the wounds on these 8 soldiers were slowly closing and that their comrades' conditions were stabilizing, the surrounding soldiers also heaved a sigh of relief. These men had fought besides them in countless battles. Needless to say, there were close relationships between the injured soldiers and their platoon mates.

Having seen the miraculous recovery of 8 of his subordinates, Xu Zhenggang sincerely thanked Yue Zhong.

"There is no need for thanks! Since they are my men, of course I will naturally protect their lives." Yue Zhong replied. Looking at the rest of the soldiers crowding around these men, he asked, "All of you are the bravest soldiers I ever had the pleasure to meet! Would you like to join my team? I will give all of you the best benefits!"

Listening to Yue Zhong's recruitment speech, many soldiers were greatly tempted. Yue Zhong did not abandon these seriously injured soldiers, and even used miraculous medicines to heal the injured. In contrast, Longhai Military group was not even willing to give these soldiers common medicine. These men were not as stubborn as Xu Zhenggang and naturally preferred to work for a caring commander than someone who regarded their lives as disposable.

Xu Zhenggang was furious at Yue Zhong's attempt to pull his men to his side. But when he considered the injustices that his men had to go through, he could not find the heart to voice out his rage. After all, these men were as close to him as his brothers, and he also wanted the best for them.

One of the soldiers stepped forward, and looked into Xu Zhenggang's eyes. With tears in his eyes, he exclaimed, "Platoon commander Xu, I apologise! I am no longer willing to risk my life

for these bastards! Even the dogs in the Special Administrative Region have vets to take care of them when they were sick, while we soldiers who risked our lives to grab resources for these men could not even have any medical treatment when we were injured in the line of duty. We are men and have flesh and blood too, but they treated us even worse than dogs! I have no desire to work for them anymore!”

Another soldier bit down on his lips and clenched his fists. When he could endure it no longer, he also stepped out. “That’s right! We all knew that if we use items from the [System], we will be able to become stronger and evolve. But look at our men who had been fighting in battles with us! Which one of them ever had the chance to evolve? All the drops from [System] were kept by Lei Cheng. Look at the Coalition Group that were comprised of civilians. Even they have evolvers! We cannot even compare to these men!”

Indeed, in Xu Zhenggang’s platoon, not a single one of his men were equipped with any items from the [System]. Since Xu Zhenggang was not willing to follow all orders without question, the Military Commander, Lei Cheng, was very careful not to allow any [System] resources to fall in the hands of this group of men. It was apparent that he did not want this group of men to gain power.

Listening to the grievances of the two men who stepped out and stood behind Yue Zhong, one by one, more and more men stepped out and stood behind Yue Zhong’s side.

That these men were willing to follow Yue Zhong was not due to Yue Zhong’s charisma. To these men, Xu Zhenggang and Yue Zhong were equally good leaders. However, in light of the unfairness and injustice from the military and government forces, these men were pushed to stand at Yue Zhong’s side.

They were fed up of the unjust treatments that they had received from these groups of people. Previously they had no choice but to continue to endure these injustices as they were not confident of

surviving alone in this post-apocalypse world. But now that they had chance to work for another faction that had promised to treat them better, they all jumped at the opportunity.

There were no doubts in their minds at all that Yue Zhong would fulfill his promise to treat them better – they had seen that Yue Zhong was willing to use some miraculous medicine to save their comrades earlier. This action already spoke volumes of the extent that Yue Zhong went to take care of his men.

“You guys!!!” Xu Zhenggang looked at the men standing behind Yue Zhong. He felt helpless – there were more than half of his men who had already moved to stand behind Yue Zhong.

Xu Zhenggang’s eyes turned bloodshot as he fiercely glared at Yue Zhong. “Yue Zhong, do you want to force all of us to serve your faction?”

Each of men still standing behind Xu Zhenggang side were alarmed. They had seen Yue Zhong’s team members in action earlier and his team indeed had the power to annihilate all of the remaining men standing behind Xu Zhenggang.

Yue Zhong just calmly replied: “I do not have that intention. But these men joined me of their own free will by stepping behind me. Once they became my men, I will not easily let anyone snatch them away.”

LongHai Survival Camp still had a massive military presence. If Yue Zhong had opted to force all the men in Xu Zhenggang platoon to join his team, LongHai survival camp would take this transgression as a reason for war.

From Yue Zhong’s perspective, even if they win the war, they will only do so with heavy losses. A war will consume a significant number of resources such as bullet, medicine and cannon ammo. Before he created a factory for producing more of these resources, he preferred to try to conserve whatever resources he had.

If it was possible to avoid a battle with mere words, he would rather not fight. But if a battle is imminent, he will not shrink from it either.

Xu Zhenggang suspiciously looked at Yue Zhong. “How do you plan to distribute the food?”

Now that the Coalition group had suffered massive loss of lives, and half of the surviving men in the Military group had joined Yue Zhong’s side, the balance of power had tipped in Yue Zhong’s favour, and Yue Zhong’s team was indisputably the strongest among them all. Xu Zhenggang was very worried about this issue. If Yue Zhong had chosen to take advantage of this chaos and rob them of their share, Xu Zhenggang would have no choice but to concede.

Yue Zhong just glanced at Xu Zhenggang and replied: “Nothing has changed from our earlier agreement. I will take 50% of any resources we find. The other 50% you divide it among your party and the Coalition. I will not interfere in this.”

Xu Zhenggang then breathed a sigh of relief, and with a bitter expression, he glanced at his former platoon men who opted to be with Yue Zhong’s group. “Leave! Get out of my sight!!”

Yue Zhong turned around and walked towards the Coalition group.

The soldiers who chose to leave saluted Xu Zhenggang for one last time. Then they gathered the 8 injured soldiers and walked towards Yue Zhong’s camp.

In the camp of the Coalition group, there were 10 men who were injured. Yue Zhong requested for the men whom he felt that he could possibly save. In this cruel post-apocalypse landscape, medicine was a rare resource. Therefore, when Yue Zhong offered to save these men in exchange for their joining his team, of course no factions within the resources will refuse. One less injured soldier to take care of means that they could save on expensive

resources like medicine and food.

These injured soldiers were very thankful to Yue Zhong for agreeing to save their lives. Hence after they had recovered, almost all of them agreed to work under Yue Zhong's banner.

In addition, 6 smaller faction leaders brought all their men with them and requested to join Yue Zhong's team.

In LongHai Survivor Camp, the bigger factions were thriving. However, smaller factions were struggling to get by. Being a leader of a smaller faction was not something cool nor was it enviable. These faction leaders had to find various ways and means to feed their men. As their teams were small in number and relatively weak, they found it very hard to do so. That was why they were tempted by the offer of food from the military and had taken part in this joint expedition.

Of course Yue Zhong did not reject any men. As long as these men were willing to follow his rules, he was willing to accept any men. Right now, what he lacked most is manpower.

After the battle, the camp is littered with the corpses of the Mutant Rats. Many men also take these rat corpses and proceeded to roast the rats.

After the apocalypse, many men had not tasted meat for a long time. To them, the Mutant Rats corpses were very tasty treats. [Yikes!!]

The camp was soon filled with the sweet smell of roast rats. Some of the smaller teams in the Coalition group were packing the Mutant Rat corpses into the truck, and was prepared to stock up these creatures as exotic food.

After skinning and drying these rats, it is also possible to make rat meat jerky from the the meat of these corpses.

In the Military group and Yue Zhong's group, all the men were also stocking up the corpses of these Mutant Rats. These are rare

treats and a delicacy to be had!

Yue Zhong gave a command to Chen Shi Tou. “Quickly take some members with you and retrieve all the corpses the Elite Rat King’s bodyguards.”

Although the hides of these Elite Rat King’s bodyguards were inferior to that of the Water Python Snakeskin Armor, but these are also good materials for making leather armour. After all, these creatures could shrug off the impact of normal weapons and bullets, and normal zombies will not be able to break through these hides and infect his team members with the zombie virus.

Although the Water Python Snakeskin armour was much better than this ratskin hide, there is a limit to the number of armour that could be made given the limited number of snakes that Yue Zhong had encountered. At most there will be 70 sets of Snakeskin armour.

These Elite Rat King’s bodyguard skin may be slightly inferior to that of the Water Python Snakeskin armour, but the number of these creatures are not small in number. These Elite Rat King’s bodyguard hides will allow Yue Zhong to better equip his team members.

Even the fur of the Mutant Rats could be used to create clothes. Although there were many tailoring machines in Stone Horse village, there were limited number of materials that could be used to make clothes. Almost everyone else were wearing what they had worn before the apocalypse, and changes of clothes were rare.

[Wag1990 explanation: It might imply that they just haven’t created any clothes that will help them survive this apocalypse. Basically it is saying that they are wearing normal, unarmored, civilian clothing that was made before the apocalypse and provides no protection whatsoever.]



# Chapter 166

---

After opening a storeroom in the granary, the men were delighted to discover that there was a small mountain of food inside. Bags upon bags of rice were stacked neatly into columns and rows, filling the granary. However, some of the bags of grains had been bitten open by rats, and a lot of the food were spilled onto the floor.

The granary had 8 storerooms. But of the 8 storerooms, only 5 of them contained food. The remaining 3 storerooms were empty. But in the 5 remaining storerooms that contained food, about 20% of the food had been eaten by the rats. On closer examination, about half of the food in the granary was deemed to be eaten by the rats.

Yue Zhong looked at the 3 empty store rooms that were supposed to be full of food, but he did not say anything.

Looking at the amount of food still remaining in the granary, all the men from Military or Coalition group who participated in this mission went crazy with excitement. They continuously grabbed the stacks of food and moved them to their vehicles. Food in LongHai Survival Camp is more valuable than gold!

Yue Zhong ignored the actions of other men. Instead, he had some of his men to guard his share of 2.5 storerooms worth of food, while the rest of his men continued to load the food into the vehicles. When the vehicles are full, he had the workers transport the food to Stone Horse Village to unload the food, then come back again. Meanwhile, the other half of his team continued to guard the food. There was too much food for their vehicles to load at one go.

Now that the most pressing issue had been resolved, Yue Zhong then examined the spoils of war. During their chase of the Mutant Rat King, Ji Qing Wu and he had killed several Elite Rat King's

bodyguards, and 4 skill books were dropped. On closer examination, the 4 skill books were Level 2 shadow steps, Level 2 massive strength, Level 2 heal, and Level 2 continuous miniature fireball.

“Level 2 Heal: Using this skill, one may treat most types of injuries, including external wounds and internal injuries. The healing effect of this skill is relatively good. Using this skill will consume 20 spiritual points. Non-priest class who mastered this skill may only use this skill once a day.”

“Level 2 continuous miniature fireball: Using this skill, 5 miniature balls of fire can be summoned. All five fireballs will become a continuous stream of fireballs to attack an enemy. Using this skill will consume 20 spiritual points. Non-mage class that mastered this skill may only use this ability once a day.”

Yue Zhong swiftly decided how he planned to distribute these skills. “Liu Yan should get the shadow step skill while Lu Wen will get the healing skill. As for the Level 2 Massive strength skill, I will grant this skill to Chen Shi Tou – His performance is very good. Chen Yao is a mage class, so giving her the Continuous Miniature Fireball skill will be best for her.”

Having determined how he would distribute the skill books, Yue Zhong took out the crystal that he had received from the Mutant Rat King’s brain. He was in conflict over if he should eat this crystal. He looked at the crystal. Unlike the red blood bead, he did not feel any temptation to eat it.

Looking at the crystal in Yue Zhong’s hands, Little Greenie Eagle’s eyes seemed to shine with a bright light. Flapping its wings, it rushed towards Yue Zhong. Before Yue Zhong could react, Little Greenie grabbed the crystal in its beak and immediately swallowed the crystal.

Looking at Little Greenie Eagle’s actions, Yue Zhong had a flash of inspiration: “Looks like the crystal is for Mutant Beasts to eat!”

he thought.

The crystal and the red blood beads were very rare items. After killing so many Mutant beast, Yue Zhong noted that only Mutant beasts of level 30 and above had a chance of dropping a red blood bead. As for the crystal, this is his first time seeing one.

As expected, in the bodies of the Level 26 Elite Rat King's bodyguards, there were no red blood beads nor crystals.

After swallowing the crystal, Little Greenie Eagle seemed to use its wings to curl itself up, and stopped moving as it slept.

Seeing that Little Greenie Eagle seemed to be all right, Yue Zhong also swallowed the red blood bead.

The red blood bead seemed to turn into a fiery bead of fire as it travelled through Yue Zhong's body, continuously changing and strengthening his body.

From his brain came a message from the [System]: "Congratulations! Your vitality has been enhanced by 12 points, and your strength has been enhanced by 3 points!"

"Woah! +12 vitality? This Mutant King Rat's red blood bead is really powerful!" Yue Zhong could not help grinning in delight.

Each of the 6 stats had their own use. Having more vitality would increase his rate of recovery when he is injured, and made his rate of recovery much faster than normal men.

Little Greenie Eagle slept until late into the night. While it was sleeping, feathers began to drop from its body. Each feather was quickly replaced by new feathers that seemed to grow very rapidly. His body also seemed to grow bigger.

After Little Greenie Eagle woke up, it opened its eyes and spread its wings. Then with a leap, it flew into the sky.

"Yes! Finally it can fly! This is great!" Yue Zhong was very happy to see that Little Greenie Eagle could fly.

An eagle is a king in the sky. If Little Greenie had continued to be a flightless bird, it would have lost its biggest advantage. Now that Little Greenie could fly, Yue Zhong's forces had gained a powerful flying ally.

Nobody noticed the moment when Yao Yao managed to slip in beside Yue Zhong. She looked at Little Greenie who was soaring happily in the sky, and she seemed to be lost in her own thoughts.

Little Greenie circled several rounds in the air before landing besides Yue Zhong. It seemed to be rubbing its head against Yue Zhong and thanking him.

“Level 36 Mutant Green Feather Eagle. Have the ability to fly and rock hard feathers.”

Yue Zhong's Eyes of Perception's ability allowed him to observe the changes to Little Greenie. After swallowing the crystal, Little Greenie immediately raise 10 levels, and its powers have increased exponentially.

Yao Yao also raised her hands and stroke Little Greenie's feathers.

After it had transformed, Little Greenie's feathers become very sensitive. When it sensed Yao Yao touching it, it immediately flapped its wings. Poor Yao Yao was sent flying for 5 to 6 m away, and was covered in dust and soot.

Being one of the mightiest creatures under the sky, Little Greenie Eagle was very proud. Other than its master Yue Zhong, it did not allow anyone else to touch it. Only if Yue Zhong command it, perhaps it might allow others to touch it.

Yao Yao crawled up from the ground. With her face full of soot, she stared daggers at Little Greenie Eagle.

Little Greenie Eagle did not even put Yao Yao in its eyes as it continued to rub its head against Yue Zhong.

After thinking for a while, Yao Yao walked up to Yue Zhong and

asked in her little Lolita voice, “Please, can I ride Little Greenie and fly in the sky?”, she pleaded.

Yue Zhong looked into Little Greenie’s eyes, and Little Green immediately shook its head. It did not like the idea of anyone other than Yue Zhong riding it. Mutant Beasts were way more intelligent than normal animals. Although Little Greenie could not speak, it could understand human speech.

Yue Zhong could only smile at Yao Yao and replied, “It is not willing. I also do not wish to force it.”

Yao Yao stared at Yue Zhong, and with a grumpy look, she pouted and exclaimed: “It is just an eagle only. I will definitely catch a bigger and better bird than it in the future!”

Then she ran off and quickly disappeared from Yue Zhong’s sight.

Little Greenie also flapped its wings and flew outside, and begun to feed on the corpse of the Mutant Rats. There were several thousand rats, and not all the Mutant Rat corpses had been moved into the vehicles.

# Chapter 167

---

After all the food have been moved out Shang Lin County granary, both Yue Zhong's Stone Horse Village and LongHai Survival Camp men also breathe a sigh of relief as they went back to their respective villages.

After Xu Zhenggang returned to the survival camp, he was praised by his superior, Lei Cheng. Lei Cheng had noticed that Xu Zhenggang had less men in his platoon, but he did not even asked about the death toll or injuries among Xu Zhenggang's men. This made Xu Zhenggang feel very upset. Since Lei Cheng did not ask, Xu Zhenggang did not report that some of his men had defected to Yue Zhong's camp.

Big Cliff Village is to the east of Stone Horse Village. Inside the village, there was a small scale steel factory. As well, there were also a lot of enterprises that provided services that compliments the steel factory. e.g. Creating knives from steel produced from the factory etc.

One day, an IVF, 7 Dongfeng Trucks, 5 Jeep vehicles, 5 military jeeps loaded with heavy gun stopped outside Big Cliff Village.

“Alright quickly ! You trashes better come down as fast as you can!”

Under Kong Tianyu's angry roar, from the 7 trucks, about 100 men who were dressed in rags disembarked from the trucks.

Besides each truck were several men who were armed with type 79 assault rifles or type 03 rifles. These guards stared at all the men who dismounted from the truck. There was a flash of contempt in the eyes of the guards.

Several men carrying large number of machetes and shields threw these weapons in front of the 100 men who were dressed in rags.

Although the number of steel workshops in Stone Horse village could not be compare to Big Cliff Village's, it also had a few workshops that produce knives using the steel from Big Cliff Village. The machetes and shields in front the men in rags were produced from these workshops.

Kong Tianyu chuckled evilly as he stared at the men in rags and shouted. "Listen carefully, you scums! In accordance with the crimes you committed, you should be shot, or beheaded already. But you are lucky that Captain Yue's team not only spared your worthless lives, but also waste precious food on you. He had allowed you to have food to eat and water to drink! Now is the time for you to show your worth! Immediately pick up the machetes and shields in front of you, and follow my orders to kill zombies! Understand?"

After hearing Kong Tianyu's speech, each of these prisoners hesitating pick up a machete and shield from the floor. With the threat of several guns pointing at them, all of these men did not have any power to resist.

These 100 or so men are prisoners from Yue Zhong's camp. Although these prisoners outnumber the number of guards, but compared to the threat of guns, IFV and heavy firearms mounted on 5 jeeps, these men were still powerless to resist their captors even when armed with a shield and machete.

"Come here, you scums!" Under the bellow of Kong Tianyu, the prisoners carrying a shield and machete assembled at a corner waiting for further orders.

The guards quickly spread out with and readied their guns.

Several men also rushed forward, and two large stakes into the ground. Then they tied several lines of wires to the stakes to create a trip wire barrier. This barrier could be used to trip the zombies.

Once the team are ready for combat, Yue Zhong commanded White Bones: "Go and draw these things out."

The eyes of White Bones seem to glow with an eerie light as it walked into the County. White Bone was covered with flesh blood.

White Bones waved his massive axe, and like a whirlwind of destruction, beheaded zombies near the entrance of the village.

Smelling the blood on White Bones, the zombies in the village began to move. But unlike previous experience where the zombies were led out in manageable waves, the zombies residing in Big Cliff Village's could not be lead out in small groups. Instead, thousands of zombies residing within the town walked out from all directions, and combined together into a massive mob as they charged towards the village entrance.

After killing slightly more than 10 zombies, White Bone was forced to retreat under the mob of zombies.

All these zombies were wearing tatter clothes, and their body had rotted. They shakily walked out of the village towards the men.

Looking at the massive number of zombies that were chasing White Bones, Yue Zhong frown. "Why is there no S level zombies here?"

Usually, the S series type of zombies are much faster than ordinary zombies. In a horde of zombies, the S series type of zombies usually were the first to charge in front. These S series type of zombie were the deadliest zombie, and each of these creatures were of higher threat than normal zombies.

When these zombies were less than 100m away from them, Yue Zhong shouted: "Fire at will!"

Immediately, the sounds of gunfire rang out throughout the area.

Many zombies were immediately killed with a headshot and collapse onto the ground. The zombies behind them trampled on their fallen comrades and continued to advance.

Having actual battle experience is the best training. After many battles and using up countless numbers of bullet, Yue Zhong's



team now have about 20 elite marksmen. These marksmen have a 70% chance to use a type 03 rifle to blow apart the head of a zombie from less 100m away.

These elite marksmen were professional soldiers (that had defected to Yue Zhong's camp). They had undergone rigorous military training, and most participants had fought in previous wars to regain Qingyuan City. After the baptism of combat, they adapt very quickly to the battlefield.

The other marksmen's attack were less effective. Other than a head shot, the zombies were unlikely to suffer any damage at all. Although they had hit the zombies, they did not manage to get a head shot.

The horde of zombies pushed forwards as one. The corpses of the zombies that were downed with a headshot did not even slow the charge of the horde of zombies.

The prisoners' face turned pale when they saw the horde of advancing zombies. Although each prisoner is an expert in bullying other men, but they had never personally attack or fought with zombies before.

The massive numbers of zombies gave off a feeling that no matter how many they killed, there will always be more of them. This create a feeling of fear and helplessness among the men.

In the area in front of Yue Zhong, there were several trip wire barriers that were already set up.

As the zombies in the front passed by the trip wire barrier, they tripped onto the ground. The rest of the zombies behind stepped on their comrades' bodies and continued to walk towards Yue Zhong. Under the stampede of thousands of zombies, the ones that tripped were smashed into meat paste.

These trip wire barriers continuously tripped waves after waves of zombie as the zombies in front were tripped and squashed by the

subsequent trample of their comrades.

But there were really too many zombies. These trip wire barriers could not hope to stop the zombie horde from advancing.

Seeing the massive group of zombie continuously advancing towards them, all the men felt increasingly pressurised.

Yue Zhong's men coped better in the face of danger. Many of the men had engaged the zombies on multiple occasions. However, the prisoners' face turned white with fear and were uncontrollably shivering. Just the thought that they had to engage the zombies in close combat was enough to frighten them.

When the zombies were just about 30m away from Yue Zhong's group, Yue Zhong shouted out a command "Concentrate your fire!"

In that instant, all the firepower in Yue Zhong army shredded a path of destruction as it cut a swathe through the ranks of zombies. Most of the zombies had fallen onto the ground from the concentrated fire.

The concentrated fire did not last long, as Yue Zhong relayed another command: "Stop!"

Under Yue Zhong's instructions, all the men stopped firing.

Yue Zhong's team has no way to create new bullet, spent bullets could not be reused. With no way of replenishing their supplies, each bullet used will further depreciate their supply of bullets. If they do not learn to conserve bullets, they will soon use up all their bullets.

# Chapter 168

---

After the ceasefire order, Yue Zhong was startled to see to that the Village entrance was still filled to the brim with zombies!

From all corners of Big Cliff Village, zombies seemed to continuously crawl out, with no end in sight.

“WTF! Why are there so many zombies?” Yue Zhong was frowning as he looked at the swarm of zombies creeping towards him.

Zombies were usually distributed all over the village. Last time Yue Zhong brought people to raid Stone Horse Village, he would draw about 100 zombies out. Then the team will clear this wave of zombies before drawing out and clearing a second wave of zombie.

In this way, each subsequent waves of zombies are slowly cleared, with minimum danger to his team. But unexpectedly this time, all the zombies in the village were drawn out, and the numbers posed a significant threat to his team.

Other than the zombies that continued to pour out of Big Cliff Village, many of the zombies that were shot from the earlier round of fire also slowly climbed up from the ground again, and shakily made their way towards Yue Zhong’s team.

Zombies were impossible to kill with bullets unless they were shot in the head. Unfortunately, most of the bullets hit the zombies in their body. Unlike humans who would be seriously injured by bullets, the zombies seemed to shrug off the bullets as they got up from the ground and continued to advance.

“All close combat team 1 members, follow me!”

Yue Zhong roared an order and led a team of 12 men as they charged into the Zombie horde. Each of these men were clad in Water Python Snakeskin Armor, and wields a Tang Imitation Sword.

If his men were strong enough to fight the battle without his aid, he would be more than happy to direct the battle from behind. This would allow his men to gain even more experience. However, Yue Zhong's team was currently relatively weak. Each of these elite troops were all valuable resources. He must fight alongside them to give them the courage to fight, and in times of crisis, save their lives.

Yue Zhong, White Bones and the close combat team 1 members charged into the group of zombies, beheading a zombie with each strike of the sword.

The close combat team members were all evolvers. Most of them had continuously poured their stats points into strength and stamina, making them unstoppable close-quarters combat (zombie) killing machines. With enhanced strength, each swing of the sword would cleave through a zombie easily and occasionally hit the zombie next to it. With enhanced stamina, these fighters were able to continuously hack apart the zombies without feeling fatigued. In a short span of time, over 100 zombies have been destroyed.

However, the tide of zombies were endless, and no matter how many they killed, there were more to replace these fallen zombies. It was like fighting a hydra. For each zombie that was beheaded, it was replaced by two more of its mates. Over time, even the elite close combat team members began to feel afraid, and helpless. After all, their stamina was limited, while the horde of zombies were never ending.

“First Combat Team members, retreat!” After killing scores of zombies, Yue Zhong estimated that his team was reaching their limits, and promptly sounded the order to retreat. He had no desire to risk the lives of his men.

From the entrance of the village, more and more zombies emerged. The first combat team members only comprised of 12 men. Even though they were wearing Water Python Snakeskin

Armour, they would be killed without a doubt if they were surrounded by the sea of zombies.

These first combat team members were all at least level 7 evolvers. To Yue Zhong, each of these members were invaluable, and he would be heartbroken if even one of these men perished.

After receiving the command, all the men in the first close combat team immediately retreated at the first opportunity.

Yue Zhong and White Bones continued to hold back the tide of zombies to buy time for his men to escape. After ensuring all his men had safely retreated, Yue Zhong and White Bones were also preparing to retreat.

At this moment, suddenly the zombie horde parted to make way for another group of zombies. To Yue Zhong's horror, there were 7 S2 zombies, 8 L2 zombies, 36 S1 zombies, and 43 L1 zombies rushing out towards him!

"Holy Shit! Even the zombies have someone directing them?" Looking at the 100 or so elite zombies charging towards him, he could not help feeling that someone or something was controlling these zombie.

Yue Zhong's suspicions were based on his experience – normal zombies would not attack all at once. Also, the elite zombies seldom grouped together. But seeing the horde of zombies and the elite zombies as acting together as one made him believe that someone or something was controlling these zombie. Over time, he learnt to trust his instincts. His experience with the Mutant Rats was the best example – he believed that the Mutant King Rat was controlling the Mutant Rats, and he was proven right.

Looking at the horde of elite zombies, Yue Zhong immediately retreated. At the same time, he launched a fireball towards a L2 zombie.

The fireball hit the L2 on its head, and blew it off. The L2

collapsed onto the ground.

As for the 7 S2, if these creatures did not close in on Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong had no way to kill them. They were too fast and Yue Zhong's marksmanship skill was too low shoot them accurately.

As expected, the 7 S2 were the fastest of the lot, and immediately rushed towards Yue Zhong in a zig-zag fashion, and attacked Yue Zhong from all directions. Their speed were insanely fast, and even the expert marksmen from Yue Zhong's team would be unable to accurately aim for them. Compared to the strength enhanced L2 zombies, these s2 were more deadly.

At the same time Yue Zhong was retreating, he shouted, "Little Greenie!"

From the sky, a bolt of green colour lightning struck down and immediately crushed an L2 zombie's head into pieces.

The green colour bolt of lightning was none other than Little Greenie!

With a single strike, it destroyed an L2. Then it flapped its wings and flew upwards. A moment later, it became another bolt of green lightning as it charged towards another L2 and tore the head of the L2 off its body with its sharp claws!

After having evolved, Little Greenie was now able to fully utilize the power of flight. Its claws and beak were extremely sharp, as befitting a level 36 beast. Although the L2 were powerful, it could not withstand a hit from these claws that could rip apart the scales of Water Python. Even though the L2 were monstrous strength enhanced zombies, they could not fly and pose no threat to Little Greenie.

Meanwhile, the 7 S2 quickly caught up with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had fought these creatures before and knew that with his current speed, he could not hope to take them on. He immediately activated shadow steps, gaining a large boost to his

speed. Then he charged towards a S2 zombie. There were two flashes of light as the S2 and Yue Zhong cross each other. For just a second, both parties stopped moving. A spray of blood erupted from the S2 brain as it collapsed onto the floor, while Yue Zhong stood victorious. In the brief exchange, Yue Zhong had beheaded the S2!

But Yue Zhong had no time to relax. Such is the speed of the S2 that even being stationary for a second was enough for another S2 to launch an attack on Yue Zhong. Its claws threaten to rip Yue Zhong into shreds and were just a few centimeters away from him. Suddenly Yue Zhong seemed to disappear into a wisp of smoke, and reappeared behind it. Then there was another flash of light as another S2 was beheaded.

The high-speed fight was almost invisible to the naked eyes of the soldiers – all they could see was a blur of movements and flashes of light as Yue Zhong's sword repeatedly slashed out. With each slash, an S2 zombie would collapse onto the ground, with its brain cleanly sliced open. In the span of a few breaths, the team of 7 S2 were completely annihilated by Yue Zhong!

“Super Strong!!! So impressive!! Kong Tianyu could not help admiring Yue Zhong. In the span of a few seconds, Yue Zhong managed to kill 7 S2 zombie. He was also an evolver, but he could not even take on a single S2 – the speed of S2 zombie was too fast.

“Congratulations on reaching level 32. You have gained 2 points of stats.” After killing the 7 S2, Yue Zhong gained massive amount of experience. This was enough for him to advance a level.

“Increase agility, and stamina!” Yue Zhong quickly made his choice. If not for the fact that he had continuously increased his agility, there was no way that he could handle 7 S2 zombies so easily!

# Chapter 169

---

Yue Zhong quickly kept the items that the S2 had dropped, and rushed back to his team.

In front of Yue Zhong, there were still numerous S1, L2 and L1 zombies, in addition to countless number of normal zombies. As powerful as Yue Zhong was, if he was surrounded by the never-ending horde of zombies, he would be killed.

“Magic team, attack!” Once Yue Zhong returned to the camp, he immediately shouted out an order.

In raids against the zombies, Yue Zhong would sometimes receive magic skill books. He had passed these magic books to a team of 10 people, and created a team of mages.

These mages include Lu Wen, Guo Yu, Chen Yao etc. After the apocalypse, each of these skills were very valuable. To save on bullets, these mages who could launch only a single spell were also deployed on the battlefield. This will allow the mages to gain experience orbs and evolve.

Each of these mage activated their magic and began chanting their spells. From the air in front of them, several runes appeared, as it gathered the energy to launch the spells.

“Fire at will!” Yue Zhong roared. Although magic was very powerful, but the time required to cast a spell was also relatively long. While the mages were channelling their spells, he also need to stop the zombie horde from getting too close so that the mages will not be distracted.

Once Yue Zhong gave the command, the men immediately let loose their ammunitions as a hail of bullets tore into the ranks of the zombies.

Under the rain of bullets, several S1, L1 and normal zombies were like stringed puppets that had their strings cut, and collapsed onto



the floor. However, the L2 was built like a tank, and continued to advance despite the bullet storm. Each bullet that hit the L2 were repelled, and could not even slow its charge, with but one exception. The 12.7 mm heavy machine guns that were mounted on the top of the jeeps were able to penetrate the hide of these creatures.

Each 12.7mm heavy machine guns were able to shred a lightly armoured jeep into pieces, and have great penetrating power. Therefore, it was no surprise that the L2 zombies were unable to cope with the firepower.

“Cease Fire!” Seeing at the group of evolved zombies had been knocked down, Yue Zhong requested a ceasefire.

All the men stopped firing.

After the hail of the bullets stopped, more and more zombies emerged from Big Cliff village.

At the same time, all the evolved zombies that were shot got up again.

These evolved zombies were much tougher than ordinary zombies. Unless you exploded their head, it is impossible to kill them.

The four surviving L2 immediately got up. With massive strides, they charged towards Yue Zhong.

However, the bullet storm managed to land lucky hits on several evolved zombies with headshots.

At this time, Guo Yu, Lu Wen had already finished chanting their spells. Fireball, Ice cones, Earth Spike etc., all these magic were focused on the evolved zombies, and managed to kill 8 of these creature.

“Close combat groups – Team 2 and Team 3, rush forwards with me!”

With a mighty roar, Yue Zhong led a team of 24 close combat team members into battle with the evolved zombies. Like the close combat team 1, each of these men were wearing Water Python Snakeskin Armor, and wields a Tang Imitation Sword.

Although magic was very powerful, it also had a long cooldown. After launching a single spell, Guo Yu and the mage team were unable to cast anymore spells for that day. Unless they reach level 10 and change their class to a mage, it is unlikely that they could continue to cast more than a single spell each day.

The evolved zombies clashed with Yue Zhong and his team of 24 men.

Like an arrow, Yue Zhong sped towards a L2 zombie, and pointed a stinger gun at the head of this creature. Then he pulled the trigger.

With a “Bang” sound, the L2’s head was decorated with a new hole, and it collapsed lifelessly onto the ground.

A mighty fist threatened to crush Yue Zhong into pieces as another L2 discovered his presence, and raised his fist to smash Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong easily dodged the L2’s fist as he stepped forward, pointed his stinger at the lower jaws of the L2, and busted its head apart.

In the sky, Little Greenie swooped down, and in a single swipe, managed to decapitate a L2 in each claw. Two L2 lifelessly collapsed as their heads were ripped off their body.

The 24 elite close combat team members were engaged in a fierce battle with the L1 and the S1.

In the chaos that followed, some close combat team members were sent flying with each swing of an L1 fists. And some close combat team members were scratched by the claws of the high speed S1. But many L1 and S1 were also killed by the close combat

team members.

“F\*\*k! Go and die!”

Kong Tianyu activated his skill [Enhanced strength], and with a single swing of the Tang Imitation Blade in his hand, he managed to lop off the head of a mighty L1 zombie.

But he had no time to relax as a S1 immediately clawed at his left shoulder as soon as the L1 zombie was dispatched.

“Damn f\*\*king bastard! Go and die!” With a sinister smile, his blade immediately separated the S1’s head from its body.

The Water Python snakeskin armour protected him from the claws of the S1. Unless the S1 landed a hit on his head, it could not hurt Kong Tianyu.

But in comparison to the S1, the L1 were of a much deadlier threat. Many close combat team members were sent flying by the L1.

Under the might of his herculean strength, Kong Tianyu was able to kill even L1 zombies with a single swing of his blade. Therefore he was unafraid and charged towards the other evolved zombies.

The rest of the team found that dealing with S1 zombie were relatively easy. They could use their body as a bait to draw these creatures closer before taking a swipe at them. With their Water Python Snakeskin armour, the claws of the S1 could not even scratch them.

But the L1 were a totally different story. They need to repeatedly hack at the L1 multiple times before they could lop off a single L1’s head. In addition, the L1 attacks were very powerful and sent men flying with each hit.

Many team members managed to land a hit on the L1 heads, but they were left open to the L1’s retaliation strike, and was seriously injured. If not for the Water Python Snakeskin Armour absorbing a massive portion of the impact, these men would have

immediately perished.

But once the level 2 evolved zombie had been cleared, Yue Zhong, White Bones and Little Greenie turned their attention to the level 1 zombies. Under their combine attacks, the evolved zombies were quickly clear out. 5 of Yue Zhong's team members were injured by the L1 zombies and could no longer participate in this battle. [To be continued] ...

# Chapter 170

---

These evolved zombies were not so easy to deal with. Each evolved zombies had extraordinary abilities, especially the S series zombies. If not for the Water Python Snakeskin Armour that protected the close combat team from the S series zombie's strikes, more than half of the men would already been infected with the zombie virus. But under the protection of the superior armour, only five men were injured.

“Retreat!”

After destroying the evolved zombies, Yue Zhong kept some of the items that were dropped by the evolved zombies in his spatial ring. Then he led the two close-combat teams to retreat from the zombie horde.

Little Greenie stood unchallenged in the sky, as it picked apart zombies at it's leisure. From time to time it would swoop down and crush a zombie. Before any zombies could fight back, it was long gone, having flew out of reach of the flightless zombies. Not a single zombie could withstand its attack nor could these zombie touch a feather on its body.

Although the elite zombies had been destroyed, the ordinary zombies continued to stream out of every nook and cranny of Big Cliff Village.

At first, it was a river of zombies as the streams of zombies merged together and filled a street with zombie. The rivers of zombies merged together on the main road to form a massive sea of zombies over 5000 strong.

After all the efforts that Yue Zhong and his team had expended, they had only managed to kill 600+ zombies, a little more than a 1/10th of the zombie throng that were shuffling towards them.

Although the route to Yue Zhong's camp were littered with the

corpses of countless zombies, but the sea of zombies seemed to shrug off the loss of their kind as they continued to advance towards Yue Zhong's camp. Seeing so many zombies created immense pressure on the team.

This was the first time that many of Yue Zhong's team members had seen such a massive number of zombies, and they were shaken. In the last encounter with zombies, Yue Zhong was able lead the zombie out in groups of 100s, making the task much easier. But with 5000 zombies walking shakily towards them, they could not help but tremble in fright.

Having to fight 5000s of zombie and 100 zombies were two different issues. In battles with groups of 100 zombies, they could afford to take a rest between fights. But in a tide of 5000s zombies, the waves of zombies were unending, and there is no respite for these men.

The elite marksmen in Yue Zhong's team had never stopped firing. Each hit would accurately blew apart a zombie's head. Although many zombies had fallen, it had no impact on stopping the mass of zombies from advancing forward. The zombies behind would step on the corpses of the fallen and continued to advance, slowly but steadily.

Looking at the sea of zombies approaching them, Ye Zhong was alarmed and he thought "Looks like this time we will suffer a big loss!"

Seeing the hordes of zombies unceasingly getting closer and closer, Yue Zhong immediately commanded: "All teams, fire at will!"

Following Yue Zhong's order, all his men let their guns ripped. Torrents of bullet washed into the sea of zombies.

Under the scythe of the bullets, many of zombies that were at the foremost of the zombie tide were cut down.

But the number of zombies were immeasurable, and the zombies were without fear. They continued to advance, regardless of their lives or the number of zombies that were scythed down by the bullet storm. Some of the fallen zombies picked themselves up from the ground.

Yue Zhong's team was also expending their ammo at a very rapid pace.

The sea of zombie at the back of the tide seemed to slam into an invisible wall of bullets as they advanced, and were scythed down. In this way, a number of these zombies were temporary held back, and created a zone of fallen zombies in the front.

Looking at the carnage, Yue Zhong commanded: "Stop firing! All the prisoner team advance!"

Yue Zhong must let his team conserve stamina, so that they have the ability to continue to fight or retreat. Using the prisoners at this team will buy his team some time to regain their diminishing stamina.

These prisoners shook uncontrollably and dared not advance.

Kong Tainyu angrily shook his fists at the prisoners and shouted, "Damn you bastards! You shitheads better rush forward! Otherwise I will kill you with my own hands!"

The other men in the camp also pointed their guns at the prisoners. Their eyes were cold and devoid of emotion. If these prisoners dared not to obey the orders or attempt to flee, they will gun these prisoners down in cold blood.

"I will count to 3, if you don't rush forwards by the count of 3, then do not blame me for opening fire!"

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

Kong Tianyu's eyes were cold as he looked at the prisoners who refused to budge. He stepped forward and with a swing of his sword, he beheaded one prisoner. A spray of blood splattered onto the faces of some of the horrified prisoners. Then he looked into the eyes of the rest of the prisoners and bellowed "Charge out!! Go now!!"

Looking at the fierce look in Kong Tianyu's eyes, the prisoners also turned frightened. Nobody doubted that if they do not charge at the zombies, they would be killed immediately. Under the threat of death, these prisoners had no choice but to rush forwards. Perhaps Yue Zhong would let live if they kill enough zombies. But staying here would definitely result in their death.

"Wagghhhhh..!!!" As if this warcry of the prisoners gifted them with courage, they charged towards the zombies. One of the prisoners chopped down on a zombie that was struggling to get up, and with a swing, he chopped off its head.

These ordinary zombies were very slow, and their bones were very brittle. Even an ordinary wooden club as granted by the [System] could smash apart these zombies. Therefore the steel machetes were highly effective in decapitating the zombies.

Although most of the prisoners fiercely fought against the zombies, there were some prisoners who were frightened out of their wits and tried to run away.

"Bang! Bang!"

The sound of two gunshots rang out, and the prisoners who tried to ran away were gunned down.

Kong Tianyu shouted out "All who try to run will be shot without exception!"

Since they will definitely be killed if they try to run, the prisoners continued to hack at the zombies until their eyes turned red from bloodlust. They could only hope that if they killed enough number



of zombies, they would be allowed to live.

The number of prisoners were not small. There was close to a hundred prisoners. As long as they overcame their fear, these normal zombies that were slowly climbing up from the bullet storm were not a match for these desperate men. The prisoners frenzied attacks were highly effectively as numerous zombies fell to the machetes of these men.

One of the prisoners was a massive 1.9m tall man. Armed with a machete, his performance was extremely outstanding as he chopped down like a fierce tiger on the zombies in front of him. While most prisoners only hacked apart two or three zombies, he had killed over 5 zombies.

“Let these men retreat!” After ensuring that each of these prisoners had at least killed one or more zombies, Yue Zhong then issued a command to Kong Tianyu.

Under the [system], men had limited stamina. Each kill would deplete their current stamina. Having killed a few zombies, their stamina had dropped a lot. If these prisoners had continued to battle, all these prisoners would be wiped out.

After the apocalypse, each men were also valuable resources. Men are not solitary creatures. No matter how powerful a man was, there was a limit to how much he could do alone. Men could only survive this apocalypse if they worked together. These prisoners are all men with able bodies. Although they had committed crimes against humanity by engaging in torture, rape, murder or cannibalism, Yue Zhong had no intent to waste their lives.

# Chapter 171

---

Kong Tianyu shouted in a very loud voice! “All you scums! Retreat!”

Listening to the order to retreat, these prisoners discarded their shields and machetes as they ran back with all their speed. The shields were quite heavy and discarding them would enable them to run faster. In this short period of time, they had killed 300+ zombies. Each man's stamina had dropped significantly.

Their bloodlust had also withdrawn as they focused all their efforts on running. Earlier, they did not have a choice – it was either to kill the zombies or be killed by their captors. Therefore they gambled their lives on killing as many zombies as possible and had a bloodlust. But now that they were given a chance to retreat, naturally they would choose to flee, and hold back their bloodlust.

Kong Tianyu roared a command at the group of prisoners “All of you put your hands behind your head and squat down immediately! I will shoot all those that dared to run!”

If the men ran in a disorganised manner, they could escape or in the worst case, rush into Yue Zhong's camp and to spread confusion and chaos. With the zombies attacking them, Yue Zhong can not afford to have confusion and chaos in his camp.

Under gunpoint, all the prisoners ran towards the area that Kong Tianyu had designated and put their hands behind their heads and squatted down.

3 of the close combat team members quickly examined the prisoners, and dragged out 23 prisoners who were injured in the battle with zombies. They shot these prisoners at point blank.

The sounds of gunfire and the deaths of their comrades made the prisoners trembled in fear, and they dare not move a muscle and as they looked downward and behaved.

Individually, normal zombies are not that scary. Their strongest threat to man-kind is the zombie virus. These creatures are extremely slow and are only dangerous in overwhelming numbers. In the short skirmish, none of the prisoners were eaten alive by the zombies.

However, there were approximately 1/2 of the prisoners who were scratched or bitten by the zombies, and infected by the zombie virus. Since there is no cure for the zombie virus, Yue Zhong sent his men to kill these infected men. He did not want any prisoners to turn into a zombie and infect other prisoners.

“All close combat teams, follow me!” Looking at the zombie horde that persistently crept forward no matter how many times he mowed them down with gunfire, Yue Zhong finally lost his patience and gave the order for all his close combat teams to attack. The close combat teams’ members were more effective in killing zombies than gunfire.

All the close combat teams’ members followed behind Yue Zhong as they charged towards the zombies.

In the team of close combat personnel, not all of these men are equipped with Tang Imitation Sword. Yue Zhong do not have enough swords to equip each man with a sword. Therefore some of these men also use the machetes. These machetes also easily cleaved apart the zombies, and the only disadvantage of using a machete compared to Tang Imitation sword was that any zombies that were killed by a machete do not give its killer any experience orbs.

These close combat team members hacked at the zombie in a mad frenzy.

Yue Zhong and White Bones led the charge, and cut down several zombies with each swing of their weapon.

These close combat forces then engaged the zombies. The close combat forces team were comprised of evolvers who had killed

scores of zombies before. Ordinary zombies have no way to bite nor scratch through the Water Python Snakeskin armour that the close combat forces were wearing. These zombies are also relatively slow. As long as a close combat team member took care not to be surrounded by zombies and retreated before his escape route is cut off, the close combat team member is not in any danger. But the same can not be said for the zombies. Each hack with the sword or machete will kill at least one zombie without fail.

Meanwhile the elite marksmen continued to burn their bullet supply as they continuously dropped zombies with each headshot.

With the aid of a team of about 50 men, Yue Zhong's group finally managed to whittle down the number of zombies to a more manageable number. But each close combat team member seemed to be drained of stamina, as they were breathing heavily from just the effort of standing up.

Only Yue Zhong and White Bones have the strength to continue to kill the zombies as the close combat team members are exhausted. But the few dozens of remaining zombies should pose no threat to either Yue Zhong or White Bones.

As he cut down the last of the remaining zombies, Yue Zhong breathed a sigh of relief "Finally we won!"

These zombies might be level 1 creatures, and are weak. But there were over 5000 zombies. Even after several rounds of concentrated fire, the number of zombies remaining were still over 1000 strong. The team of close combat fighters had managed to finish off these 1000+ zombies, however their stamina had depleted to a very critical level – they were unable to continue to fight until their stamina had recovered somewhat. The group of 50 close combat fighters were way too small in number to deal with the massive number of zombies.

"This time, I had really underestimated the enemy." Thought

Yue Zhong as he stared at his men who were perspiring heavily and panting.

This time, Yue Zhong had only brought  $\frac{1}{4}$  of his troops to attack Big Cliff Village. This was because having experienced the last clearing of villages, Yue Zhong thought that these men were more than enough to clear Big Cliff Village, and at the same time, increase the experience of his men. But he did not anticipate that there was a zombie controller in this village. If not for the fact that Yue Zhong had evolved many times, this raid would have ended up as a massive failure.

“What the f\*\*k is controlling these zombies?”

Yue Zhong is suspicious and curious about the controller of zombies. He headed out alone with White Bones towards the village.

Yue Zhong had evolved much more than his regular troops and frequently allocated points to increase his stamina. As long as he did not continuously use his active skills, his stamina would not deplete so quickly. Therefore, although his men could barely move, he was not tired at all.

The town of Big Cliff Village was practically empty. Also there was a trace of dark coloured blood at various places, but there were no more zombies inside the town.

“It seemed that I was right! There is something or someone controlling these zombies!” Yue Zhong looked at the empty and silence town, and he frowned.

In the last raid against Stone Horse Village, although the zombies were drew out in waves of about 100 zombies, but the centre of the village had a massive number of zombies. But this town centre did not even have a single zombie. This means that someone or something had controlled all the zombies in this town and forced these zombies to attack Yue Zhong’s team.

Having a mysterious zombie controller is not a good thing for Yue Zhong's team.

If there was something or someone controlling these zombies, then Lei Jiang City (its name means Thunder River City) with its population of 100,000 zombies would be invincible as there was nothing that could stop this massive army.

Although the strength of the men in Yue Zhong's team were much stronger than the time when he raided Stone Horse village, but the ammunition spent in this raid was several times the ammo used to capture Stone Horse village. As well, each member of his team were more exhausted compared to the time they raided Stone Horse village. A 100,000 zombie army was a very fearsome number. How much more ammo would they need to repel just a fraction of this army.

Therefore, this zombie controller must die! It must not be permitted to escape into Lei Jiang City.

Yue Zhong could not see any activity from the street where he currently was in. Therefore he activated his combine armour defense skill and merged with White Bones. He launched a bone spike onto the ground, and used a bone ladder created from the bone spike to climb onto the rooftop of a supermarket.

Standing at the top of the supermarket, he had an unobstructed view of the scenery and surrounding landscapes. Although he did not have the "1000 li eyes" ability that would allow him to see as far as 500 km, but his vision is relatively good. Somehow being an evolver had increased the range of his vision.

At the East side of the village, Yue Zhong saw there were eight L2 and seven S2 zombies that were grouped together and fleeing towards the East side of the city, as if they were protecting someone important.

Yue Zhong fired another bone spike into the ground and created another bone ladder to bring him safety back to the ground level.

Once he landed on the ground, he immediately speed up and sprinted towards the direction where he had seen the group of zombies.

Yue Zhong had spent a lot of points of his stats on agility. As well, he is wearing various agility enhancing items. The L2 might be strong, but they are relatively slow. Although the S2 are very fast, these creatures were guarding something. Therefore the whole group moved at the speed of the slowest member, the L2. With Yue Zhong speed, he quickly caught up to the group of fifteen evolved zombies.

Once he had caught up with the zombie bodyguards, Yue Zhong was able to see clearly that in the middle of the group of elite zombies, there is single grey colour zombie. This zombie is relatively small. Its limbs are very short, but its head is relatively big for its body. Its eyes are very long, and its mouth are very big and filled with sharp teeth. It sits on top of a massive L2 zombie as a man would sit on top of a horse.

# Chapter 172

---

“Level 40 intelligence-enhanced zombie variant: Type I Commander Z1”

As soon as the Commander Z1 zombie saw Yue Zhong, it uttered a sharp cry. The L2 that was carrying it seemed to increase its speed as the group fled.

However, not all of these zombies fled. Like a ghost, three S2 zombies rapidly drifted towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong smiled at the three incoming S2 zombies. Then he suddenly accelerated and sprinted with all his might. He seemed to become a bolt of lightning as he charged towards the Commander Z1 zombie.

As he passed by the incoming S2 zombies, there was a flash of light. Then he continued to chase after the Z1 zombie at full speed, ignoring the S2 zombies. Shortly after, the bodies of the three S2 zombies collapsed lifelessly onto the ground. The scariest thing about these corpses was that each of the corpses had no head. Then, as if answering the question of what had happened to the heads of these zombies, the heads landed a short distance away from their bodies. In the short period of time that the two parties had charged past each other, Yue Zhong had cleanly lopped off the heads of the three S2 zombies!

Looking at the ease with which Yue Zhong had dispatched its guards, the Z1 began to panic. It cried out a call of distress. Following its cries, three massive L2 zombies turned away from the group and charged toward Yue Zhong.

Each of these L2 zombies could withstand massive amounts of punishment before collapsing in permanent death. Their rock hard muscles were capable of repelling most ordinary swords and bullets. Even Yue Zhong found it very difficult to use the Tang Imitation Sword to hack apart a single L2 zombie's head. These



three L2 zombies were indeed, very formidable opponents for Yue Zhong. Luckily for Yue Zhong, although these creatures were very tough, they were relatively slow compared to him.

Looking at the three L2 zombies smashing apart anything in their way as they charged towards Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong began to frown. He immediately activated his skill Devil Fire. In his right hand, an orb of devilish-red coloured fire that could burn anything into ashes was formed.

Taking advantage of his speed, he ran in front of a hulking L2 zombie. Before the zombie could react to him, Yue Zhong had already launched the orb of Devil Fire in his hands towards the head of the zombie. The Devil Fire was truly worthy of its name, as even the powerful and extremely tough L2 zombie's head was burnt into ashes.

The power of the Devil Flame skill depended on Yue Zhong's Spiritual Power, Stamina, Strength, and Vitality at the time of casting the skill. The stronger these four attributes were, the stronger the power of the Devil Flame.

However, if Yue Zhong wanted to increase the power of the Devil Flame further, he could sacrifice more Spiritual Power and Stamina to do so.

Similarly, Ice King Zhang Yun was able to take advantage of this loophole to create a wall that was able to withstand the might of a 12.7 heavy machine gun. Normally his ice wall could not last even a few rounds of bullets. But by expending a massive amount of stamina and spiritual power, Ice King Zhang Yun was able to strengthen his Ice Wall.

By using the Devil Flame, Yue Zhong was able to one-shot kill an abomination L2 zombie. But this kill came at a cost to him. He had expended 2 points of spiritual power and 2 points of stamina to do so. He had already tried to minimise the usage of Devil Flame by using it only to burn the head of the L2 zombie, instead of using it

to burn the entire L2.

“Looks like I will also need to increase my spiritual power.”, thought Yue Zhong

Yue Zhong's body seemed to flicker as he temporarily disappeared, and reappeared in front of one of the two surviving L2 zombies.. With a Devil Flame in his hand, he burned the head of the creature into ashes. Then he repeated his movements and dispatched the last L2 zombie that charged towards him.

Although he had managed to destroy three L2 zombies, he had squandered 6 points of spiritual power and stamina to do so.

After obliterating the three L2 zombies, Yue Zhong had rushed in front of the group of the bodyguards. With a stinger gun in hand, he pointed the weapon at the Z1 zombie and pulled the trigger.

At that exact moment when Yue Zhong was aiming towards the Z1 zombie, the Z1 zombie dropped down from the body of the massive L2.

As well, three S2 zombie appeared out of nowhere and used their bodies to block the bullet. The stinger gun blew apart the shoulders of an S2 zombie.

Having missed his shot because of the interferences of the S2 zombies, Yue Zhong refused to give up. He stepped forward and attempted to chase the Z1 zombie. With a Tang Imitation Sword in his left hand, he beheaded an S2 zombie that was blocking his way. But he was greeted with the sight of a powerful fist smashing down towards him as an L2 zombie attacked him. One usage of Devil Flame later, the L2 zombie's massive body collapsed lifelessly onto the ground as its head was burned into ashes.

The Z1 commander zombie's eyes turned bloodshot at the carnage Yue Zhong was wreaking on its forces. It stared at Yue Zhong with eyes filled with unbridled fury. Then it focused and launched a mental attack at Yue Zhong.

A wave of spiritual power discharged towards Yue Zhong. At this exact moment, Yue Zhong was blocked by an S2 zombie and an L2 zombie from advancing any further. The spiritual power hit the S2 and L2 head on, and their head exploded from the impact of the spiritual attack.

Although the two zombies in front of Yue Zhong borne the blunt of the attack, Yue Zhong was also not spared from this powerful attack. He felt as if his head was hit by a baseball bat. His world spun in circles, and he could have sworn that he saw stars circling around his head. He could not maintain his balance, and collapsed onto the ground.

The mind blast attack is an area of effect (AOE) spell, that does not distinguish friend from foe. It directly blew apart the brains of the zombies near Yue Zhong, and almost knocked Yue Zhong unconscious with a single blast.

Seeing that Yue Zhong had fallen, three S2 zombies immediately rush up towards Yue Zhong, intending to finish him off. Three massive L2 also began to walk towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was shaken, and his vision was blurry. He seemed to see double or triple of everything. He bit down hard on his lips, until he was bleeding. The pain seemed to jolt his brain into working again as his survival instincts kicked in. Finally he regained control of his body. His first action was to rapidly retreat!

Yue Zhong believed that the mind blast had a limited range. If not, Yue Zhong would have already been hit with the attack from afar, rendering him unable to fight the first group of three S2 zombies that charged towards him.

From the sky, Little Greenie become a ray of green light as it charge down towards the zombies. A mighty swipe of its claw separated the head of an L2 zombie from its body.

Yue Zhong was still feeling a bit groggy from the mental attack and was not as fast as before. The group of three S2 zombies were

able to rapidly close in on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong tried his best to focus, and calm his mind. At that instant when the three S2 closed in on him with their terrible claws swiping at his head, three bone spikes were launched from his bone armour, and directly penetrated through the heads of the three S2 zombies.

Their claws was but a few centimetres away from Yue Zhong's head, when they lifelessly collapsed onto the ground.

Yue Zhong was able to withstand the impact of the mind blast only because he had strong spiritual power. This ability was further augmented when he equipped several items that enhanced his spiritual powers. For instance, the white jade ring he had taken from the corpse of Ice King Zhang Yun had provided a massive increase of 6 points of spiritual power. Hence, he was able to partially resist the power of the mind blast.

Although the mind blast attack had not blown apart his head, it still managed to make him feel highly disoriented and dizzy. He had managed to shake off most of the effects of the mind blast, and his condition had improved somewhat.

After killing the group of S2, Yue Zhong stepped forward and pat his hands on the head of an L2. He was intending to use his Devil Fire to burn the brain of the L2 into ashes. But suddenly he felt a massive headache, and his spiritual power seem to be drained and unstable. The Devil Flame did not appear.

The L2 raised both its fist and smashed down towards Yue Zhong.

Like a gust of wind, Little Greenie appeared behind the L2 zombie. With its mighty claws, it lifted the L2 zombie off the ground as it flew upwards. Then it flew downwards rapidly and sent the L2 Zombie smashing headfirst against the concrete floor. The poor L2 zombie's head and its upper body turned into a spectacular display of bloodletting as the floor around it shook

from the impact.

Yue Zhong had no time to worry about Little Greenie. There was still two more L2 zombies that were charging towards him. He used his superior speed to apply behind one of the L2 zombies. With the stinger gun in his hands, he blew apart the brains of this L2 zombie.

The last L2 zombie suddenly did something very surprising: It turned and tried to run. Normally L2 zombies were without fear. Perhaps this L2 zombie was trying to rush back to carry the Z1 commander zombie away to safety instead of fighting. But how could Yue Zhong let such a good opportunity slipped by? He pointed his stinger gun at the back of this zombie and fired 3 stinger bullets.

Each stinger bullet had explosive penetrating power. The bullets tore through the back muscles and bones of the L2 and blew apart its brains. The L2 zombie collapsed in a pool of blood.

But when Yue Zhong saw the shadow of the Z1 zombie leaping off from the L2 zombie arms at the exact moment he fired the stinger bullets, he understood why the L2 had ran instead of fighting him. For some strange reasons, all the commanders he had met so far were cowardly in nature. This include the Z1 commander zombie, and the Mutant King Rat.

Although the Z1 zombie had very short limbs, it speed was not slow at all as it scrambled off to safety.

If the Z1 zombie had chosen to fight and launch another mind blast, Yue Zhong would be in trouble. But for some strange reason, the Z1 zombie had chosen to run and exposed its back to Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong had no qualms about killing an enemy from the back. In fact, there was nothing he liked better. He grinned and activated Ice Cone spell from his white jade ring.

Runes appear from the air around Yue Zhong and a cone of ice flew towards the Z1 commander zombie. It tore a massive hole in

the Z1 commander's body and proceeded to encase the body in a block of ice.

A massive globe of experience flew from its body toward Yue Zhong.

“Congratulations! You have advanced to level 33 and have gained 2 stats points.”

“Put all the stats points into Spiritual Power” groaned Yue Zhong as he rubbed his head. He was having a spitting headache.

Once he made his choice, he could feel some spiritual power entering into his body. His fluctuating spiritual power seemed to be stabilised somewhat.

# Chapter 173

---

Yue Zhong walked up the corpse of the Z1, and found that the Z1 zombie had dropped several items: A skill book, a green coloured treasure box and 200 [System] coins

“Level 3 skill book: Spiritual Solidification. This skill is a passive skill. After learning this skill your spiritual power will permanently increase by 10.”

Yue Zhong immediately opted to learn this skill.

Instantly, in Yue Zhong's brain, there appears a new rune. Once this new rune appeared, Yue Zhong's headache seemed to magically disappear. The mild feeling of disorientation he had as a result of the mind blast also completely vanished.

Looking at the massive head of this Z1 zombie, Yue Zhong took out his Tang Imitation sword and chopped off its brains. He tried to examine if there were any blood coloured beads or crystals inside it.

Just as Yue Zhong was checking the corpse, Little Greenie flew down, and with a peck, begins to eat the zombie with relish. After several big gulps, it quickly swallowed the entire zombie.

“There is no evolution this time?”

Seeing that Little Greenie had not evolved, he was feeling quite disappointed.

He opened the green treasure box, and BINGO!

“Level 3 Treasure: Power Gloves. +10 to strength on equip.”

On the route back to the camp, he kept all the items that the elite zombies had dropped into his spatial ring.

Once the Z1 zombie had been killed, the entire town had no further threats. Yue Zhong's men had also entered into Big Cliff village, and had began to look for survivors,

While his men were busying searching for survival, Yue Zhong was greedily looking at the spoils of this battle.

This time, the numbers of evolved zombies were relatively high. Therefore the rewards were also much higher. Yue Zhong had managed to collect 63 white colour treasure box, 3 green colour treasure box and 6 skill books.

After opening all the treasure boxes, Yue Zhong found that he had 3 pairs of Level 1 strength enhancing shoes, 32 Tang Imitation Swords, 1 complete set of Level 1 protective vest, 1 set of Level 2 protective vest, 3 pairs of white colour gloves, 1 Level 2 Tang Sabre, 1 Level 2 wand.

As well, the seven skill books include Level 1 fireball, Level 2 strength boost, Level 1 Ice Cone, Level 1 Minor Healing, Level 2 high speed movement skill, level 1 accelerate skill.

“Level 2 Treasure: Tang Sabre. This sabre is much sharper and more resilient than the Tang Imitation Sword”

“Level 2 Treasure: Inferior Wand. With the aid of the wand, spells that take more than 15 seconds to cast may save 1 second off the casting time.

“Level 1 accelerate skill: Using this skill will consume 5 points of stamina. After using this skill, the agility will be increased by 10 points for 30 seconds.”

Looking at the 32 sets of Tang Imitation Swords, Yue Zhong was very happy. “With this I can create another 3 teams of close combat evolvers!” he thought.

Each evolver’s combat powers and stamina is way stronger than normal humans. With strict training and more combat experience, it is very easy to create a team of special elite troops.

Most of the white colour treasure boxes that were dropped by ordinary zombies were empty. The drops were mostly taken from white colour treasure box dropped by evolved zombies. Big Cliff



village had a much larger number of evolved zombies than Stone Horse village. As a result, the number of treasure box that were dropped was much more than that of Stone Horse village.

Having a new Tang Sabre, Yue Zhong can finally let go of his Tang Imitation Sword.

Although the Tang Imitation Sword were effective against normal zombies, it was ineffective against creatures with high armour such the Snake Mutant Beasts or L2 zombies. If not for the fact that Yue Zhong had invested some points into strength, it would not be so easy for Yue Zhong to kill the S2 zombies.

With each successive evolution, the zombies not only increase in their primary stat. Their skin and bones also harden, making them tougher to fight. The S2 zombies may not be comparable to an L2 zombie in terms of toughness, but these S2 zombies are almost as tough as an L1. If Yue Zhong had insufficient strength to behead an S2 zombie with a single hit, the battle against these zombies would be much harder.

While Yue Zhong was busy looking into the spoils of war, the troops that rushed into Big Cliff village had discovered many survivors. Almost all of these survivors were starving. The village that used to have more than 5000+ people had been reduced to less than 400 survivors!

Of course, there were cannibals among the survivors who preyed on other humans. These cannibals were shot by Yue Zhong's men. For those who had commit other crimes against their fellow men, they were dragged towards the prisoner camp.

The prisoner camp suddenly had 53 more prisoners. After considering the death toll from earlier, the total number of prisoners had a net gain of 20+ new prisoners.

Big Cliff village had a steel factory. At the same time, there were many enterprises that use the steel from the factory to produce other items. Before the apocalypse, the steel factory and the coal

power plant had massive amount of coal in their reserves. If there were sufficient men, it would be possible to restart the factory.

During this time, Yue Zhong had repeatedly recruited men from Longhai Survival Camp. In addition, he had assigned men to find survivors from the surrounding area. If you include this group of survivors from Big Cliff Village, he finally had close to 3,000 men under his command!

After he had taken control of Big Cliff village, Yue Zhong sent 1,000 of his citizens from Stone Horse Village into Big Cliff Village. He began to process steel, and used this steel to create more items that he deemed were useful, such as machetes, steel shields, barbed wires, sharp iron staffs etc.

The amount of steel remaining in Stone Horse Village was very little. Creating 100 steel shields and machetes had already used up a majority of the steel in Stone Horse Village. Therefore, Yue Zhong could only let his men create these primitive weapons and armors to arm the prisoners.. Therefore, capturing the steel factory was of paramount importance in the eyes of Yue Zhong.

A construction site in Big Cliff Village had been surrounded with barbed wire. In this place, various clothes had been placed on the ground. These clothes are the bed for the prisoners who were held in Big Cliff Village.

There were 10 sentries keeping watch over the prisoner camp. If these prisoners try to talk to each other or try to escape, these guards were authorised to shoot and kill these prisoners.

In this prisoner camp, a group of men clustered together as they complained about the harshness of the camp.

“Damn it! Big Brother Gao, these men are really too much! This time we went out and fought, 20+ men died. If this continues on, all of us will die.” A short, skinny man was complaining to the massive 1.9m tall giant man besides him.

The tall giant just stared at the short, skinny man. With a voice as cold enough to freeze the surrounding air, he rebuked: “Nanlan Mingzhu [Pearl Nanlan]! Shut up! You know the predicament we are currently in! If the top brass hears what you have just said, you and I will be shot on sight!”

The big prisoner is named Gao Daqiang (Strongman Gao). Before the apocalypse, he was a farmer. After the apocalypse, he drifted along and worked for Bi Caishan. As a man working under Bi Caishan, he had also committed several crimes. After Yue Zhong destroyed Bi Caishan, he was sent to the prisoner camp.

Listening to Strongman Gao, Pearl Nalan began to shiver and seemed to shrink smaller as he hugged himself and curled up. He carefully looked around at the guards surrounding the camp, and his eyes shown traces of fear.

# Chapter 174

---

In Yue Zhong's base, the prisoners do not have any human rights at all. If the words of Pearl Nalan reached the ears of the Guards, even if the Guards shot him immediately, no one will say a single word.

These prisoners also have no power to object to this treatment. If they try to revolt, the type 79 assault rifles of the guards are more than enough to kill them all.

In addition, there were two heavy machine guns mounted on vehicles that were pointed at the group of prisoners.

Pearl Nalan had a stupid grin on his face as he tried to brush what he said away, "It is a careless rant!"

"Who is Strongman Gao?" a guard walked into the camp and shouted out aloud.

All the prisoners' eyes turned to look at Strongman Gao.

Many of the prisoners who were sitting next to Strongman Gao also shifted their body as they tried to put as much distance between them and Strongman Gao as possible. Although his face turned white with fright, Pearl Nalan continued to sit next to Strongman Gao.

Strongman Gao also turned pale. He clutched his fist and slowly stood up. He was perspiring heavily, as he declared. "Me! I am Strongman Gao."

To these prisoners, having their name called out is not a good thing. Not long ago, there were twenty plus men who were called out, and these men were all shot dead in front of the other prisoners.

The soldier looked at his journal and shouted: "Today, Strongman Gao has shown his courage in battle, and killed 7 zombies by himself. From now on, he is promoted to be a squad

captain among you prisoners. The following prisoners are assigned to his squad with immediate effect: “Pearl Nalan, Tiger Wang... etc.

As a squad leader, for the period of 1 week, he will be given a piece of fish every day. We hope that he can quickly kill 30 zombies, and win back his freedom.”

Pearl Nalan’s eyes shone with happiness for his friend, as he congratulated Strongman Gao.

“Big Boss Gao! Please take care of me!”....

The 12 men assigned under his command all came forwards to offer their congratulations. From now onwards, he will be in charge of them.

Strongman Gao was stunned by the announcement and could not believe his ears. But listening to the stream of congratulatory messages from his team woke him up from his stupor. He immediately thanked the soldier. “Thank you! Thank you!!”

The soldier smiled and looked at Strongman Gao with eyes that were much warmer than the cool looks of the guards. “There is no need to thank me. I am just here to carry out Captain Yue’s orders!”

The soldier continued to list out the names of prisoners who shown promise in fighting zombies, and promoted 10 prisoners into squad leaders, and assigned team members to each squad leaders. All of these squad leaders gained the right to have 1 fish everyday as a reward for their bravery.

After announcing all the rewards, the soldier waved his hand, and several men pushed a trolley of food into the prisoner’s camp. In the food tray, in addition to rice and buns, there were several pieces of fish.

All of the prisoners looked at the fish, and their saliva dripped uncontrollably out from their mouths.

After the apocalypse, food becomes scarce. Only the top brass in LongHai city could afford to have a fish to eat. Most of the prisoners have not even taste meat after the apocalypse. Today, when they saw the freshly cooked fish and the nice aroma that accompanied the dish, their mouths could not stop watering, and they could not help staring hungrily at the fishes.

The soldier then shouted coldly, “All of you, come and get your food! You are not allowed to make any noise, and you are not allowed to jump the queue. If anyone is caught infringing these rules, you will be given 20 lashes of the whip, and double the usual workload!

After listening to the soldier’s words, the prisoners all behaved themselves. They queued up in an orderly manner to get their food. The behaviour of these prisoners was much better than their behaviour before the apocalypse.

Strongman Gao gathered a big bun, a bowl of porridge, and a steamed carp and returned to his seat.

Along the way, Strongman Gao could sense all the hungry looks of the other prisoners as they glanced at his fish. If not for the fact that there were guards manning the camp, and that he is relatively big and fierce compared to most of the men, there would be a lot of people who will attempt to snatch his fish.

Pearl Nalan took a bowl of porridge and a bun, and sat next to Strongman Gao. Like all men, he had not tasted fish for months, and with great difficulty, swallowed his saliva as he looked at the fish.

Strongman Gao placed the fish between them and said, “Pearl, come here! Let’s eat together!”

Pearl Nalan face flushed with happiness as he thanked Strongman Gao repeatedly.

Strongman Gao smiled, and picked up a piece of steamed fish. In

front of the envious men, he ate the fish and savored the taste.

Although he was but a farmer before the apocalypse, he is not stupid. He understood that in order to take control of a team, he needs to take control of people's hearts. Only then will he have people who are willing to follow his orders. If his team refused to obey him, he would be nothing but a commander in name only. Having saved Pearl Nalan's life during the battle with the zombie and shared his fish with Pearl Nalan, Pearl Nalan is naturally willing to follow him.

“Our current population is 2786 men. Stone Horse village has 1438 men, while Big Cliff has 1348 men. Yesterday, the men managed to find another 87 survivors. ...”

Inside the Stone Horse village, Guo Yu was wearing a white dress, and was reporting the status of the village to Yue Zhong.

“We are still short of men!” Sitting on the table, Yue Zhong was frowning as he seemed lost in his thoughts.

As a commoner without any government authority, it is very hard for Yue Zhong to recruit more people. Even if he use radio or T.V. to broadcast his intent to recruit more men, the number of survivors who would come to him would be very small in number. The majority of the survivors prefers to go to LongHai Survival Camp as they believe more in government officials. Although Yue Zhong had been ‘stealing’ people from LongHai Survival Camp, and had tried his best to find more survivors in surrounding area, the number of people he could get is still very small in number.

Without men, he could not build a stronger army.

LongHai survival camp has more than 6,000+ survivors, and is getting more survivors everyday. This made Yue Zhong realised the power of just having a status as a government official.

“Chen Zhiguan has sent a secret message: LongHai survival camp had issued an order to prevent us from recruiting more men to

build a wall in our village. They also began to build a wall around their camp.”

Yue Zhong eyebrows raised as he said: “What? Let me see the report!”

Chen Zhiguan had already become a trusted man who will provide Yue Zhong with insider information in LongHai Survivor Camp. He is a local resident in LongHai Survivor Camp, and well versed in the ways of the city. He had been assigned to help Yue Zhong recruit more men from LongHai Survivor Camp.

Most of the men in Yue Zhong’s villages were recruited from LongHai Survival Camp. By banning him from recruiting more men, Yue Zhong’s plans for expansion had been greatly affected.

“Should I forcefully attack the LongHai Survival Camp?” Yue Zhong struggled with this decision.

The presence of LongHai survival camp prevented Yue Zhong from expanding his base. Although they had worked together in the past to raid the granary, it was more like this matter was of mutual interests. Right now, it is hard to determine if LongHai survivor camp is an ally or a foe...



# Chapter 175

---

In restricting Yue Zhong from continuing to recruit survivors, Longhai Survivor Camp seemed to imply that they had already regarded Yue Zhong's group as a possible enemy, and is not willing to allow Yue Zhong to continue expanding his forces.

Yue Zhong had considered attacking and taking LongHai Survival Camp many times, and snatch all the survivors, food and equipment. But Yue Zhong's forces were limited as a majority of his men were normal humans. In a battle, the strongest two groups of men are naturally the evolvers and the military.

In a real war, the Military group will be much more effective than an evolver. The Military had taken control of all military weapons including but not limited to IFV, cannons, rocket launchers etc.

Although Yue Zhong had many militants who had defected to his camp, Yue Zhong had no confidence that they would listen to his commands and attack LongHai Survivor Camp. After all, many of their friends are still in the LongHai Survivor Camp.

Also, the LongHai Survivor Camp group is not weak either. There are more than 6000 survivors in LongHai Survivor Camp. In addition to the military, there are still countless numbers of policemen, commandos, military police and several factions with power. Even if Yue Zhong tries to take them head on, he does not have any guarantee that he will be able to win the war.

But if he does not take control of LongHai Survivor Camp, he will need to leave at least half of his army to guard his camp. If he takes all his soldiers out with him on a raid, it is highly probable that the LongHai Survivor Camp will launch a sneak attack at his camp. All that he had worked to build up will be swallowed by the LongHai Survivor Camp.

Similarly, LongHai Survivor Camp also feel threatened by Yue

Zhong's group. They also dare not to take any large scale actions in the event that Yue Zhong's group attack them when all their forces were engaged with the enemy. They could only send small teams of men to go to the surrounding areas to search for more food.

Both parties are wary of each other, and are placed in a difficult position by the presence of each other. At the same time, they are locked in a stalemate. Neither of them dared to use all their forces to try to recover surrounding villages.

Looking at the pretty Guo Yu in front of him, he could not help feeling a bit better. "Yu Er, come here!" he waved.

Guo Yu approached Yue Zhong and sat on his lap.

Feeling the soft feeling of Guo Yu's body and the lovely smell of her fragrance as she slipped into Yue Zhong's arms, Yue Zhong felt very happy as he hugged Guo Yu. His troubles seemed to magically disappear.

Yue Zhong hugged Guo Yu, and slowly shared his troubles and frustration with her: "Yu Er, Longhai Survivor Camp is becoming an eyesore to me. I am hoping to move my soldiers and take the city by force, and remove this obstacle. What do you think?"

After listening to Yue Zhong, Guo Yu's big round eyes seem to widen in surprise. She smiled and replied. "Master, I feel that now is not the time to forcefully launch an attack. For LongHai Survivor Camp, there is only one man standing at the top – Chen JianFeng. All we have to do is to assassinate him. LongHai Survivor Camp will be in chaos as each faction fights for control of the city. All we have to do is to grab the opportunity created by the Chaos to attack LongHai Survival Camp. This will allow us to get what we want with half the effort."

Listening to Guo Yu, Yue Zhong eyes also widen in surprise. He looked at the pretty and seductive Lolita in his arms. Never did he imagined that Guo Yu would come up with this devilish plan.

But this plan is really not a bad idea. The officials in power LongHai Survivor Camp are corrupted and only care about their own powers. Only Chen JianFeng and a few other officials are holding the fort by themselves. Also, Lei Cheng, the military commander, is standing at one side, waiting for an opportunity to strike. If Chen JianFeng is assassinated, there will definitely be Chaos in LongHai Survivor Camp as various factions fought for power.

It is just that Yue Zhong did not expect that the pretty and innocent looking Guo Yu would come up with such a plan.

Guo Yu also looked at Yue Zhong. Her big pretty eyes did not even blink or show any trace of impurity. She had racked her brains to think of this scheme to assist Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong hugged Guo Yu tightly and softly replied: “We cannot do that!”

Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu has strong ties to Chen JianFeng. Ji Qing Wu is also one of the generals under Yue Zhong. If he tries to attack LongHai Survival Camp, Ji Qing Wu and Chen Yao will sit on the fence, and will not help either party. But if these two girls know that Yue Zhong had ordered a hit on and assassinate Chen JianFeng, they will not take this lying down and may attack Yue Zhong’s camp instead.

Only a few very loyal men from Yue Zhong’s team would be comfortable with the idea of Yue Zhong assassinating Chen JianFeng. But as for the rest of his men, especially the newly recruited men from LongHai survivor camp, it would be difficult to predict their reactions.

Guo Yu just smiled and said: “Then we have to wait for a chance. Lei Cheng is not willing to take orders from anyone, including Chen JianFeng. I estimated that we need not wait for long before he will stage a coup.”

Yue Zhong was playing with Guo Yu’s fingers, as he considered

for a moment, and agreed. “For the time being, we could only do this.”

Seeing that Yue Zhong had turned silent, Guo Yu is like a cat, as she enjoyed the pampering that Yue Zhong showers on her. Yue Zhong is often busy and seldom have much time to be with her. If he is not bringing men to search for more food supplies, he would be among the marksmen to practice his shooting skills. They have very little time spent together, and Guo Yu treasured each moment.

“Captain Yue! Captain Yue! Chen Zhiguang issued an urgent missive!” Da Gou shouted as he entered into the room without knocking. Seeing that Yue Zhong was hugging Guo Yu, he turned beet red in embarrassment and stopped moving and shouting.

Once Yue Zhong let go, Guo Yu discretely walked away from Yue Zhong’s embrace with a hint of disappointment on her face. She stood besides Yue Zhong, and her presence was like a pure and flawless lily.

Da Gou quickly informed Yue Zhong of Wisemen Chen’s missive: “Shang Lin county has a huge army of zombie that was marching towards LongHai Survival Camp. LongHai Survival Camp has requested for help from us, and request that we assign some soldier to protect the survivor camp!”

Yue Zhong raised his eyebrows and seemed to mull over this piece of news. Then he asked Da Gou: “How reliable is this piece of information? Has Chen Shi Tou verified this piece of information?”

Before the apocalypse, the population in Shang Lin county has a population of over 100,000 people. It is much bigger than Qing Yuan county where the Survivor Camp is located it. Although the number of people is lesser than Shang Lin county, it is also easier for Li Jian Feng to control the city.

Killing 5000+ zombies in Big Cliff village is already the limit of

what Yue Zhong's party could do. If there were 100,000 zombies, Yue Zhong feels that this is mission impossible.

A town has various ancillary facilities that were much better than that of villages. Yue Zhong also knows this fact. But the problem is that a town has insanely high numbers of zombies. Capturing a town will need a massive amount of ammunition. With the LongHai survivor camp watching at the sidelines, Yue Zhong dared not to lead his men to capture any town.

Da Gou quickly replied, "Chen Shi Tou has already verified that piece of information. There is indeed a massive throng of zombies that were making their wave towards LongHai Survival Camp."

Chen Shi Tou is a very careful man. He would definitely confirm the information before reporting it to Yue Zhong.

# Chapter 176

---

Each day, there were several teams that head out of the village to search for materials or to hunt zombies. In this evening, as soon as the search teams returned to the camp, their team captain was immediately summoned to a meeting in Big Cliff Village's conference hall.

“This is the problem that we are facing now! I would like to listen to your opinion.” In the conference hall, Guo Yu reported the news that Chen Shi Tou has sent to all the men.

Kong Tianyu spoke very loudly: “Captain Yue, we cannot send out soldiers. The LongHai Survivor Camp bastards dared to stop us from recruiting man, and they still expect us to send soldiers to save them? They think we are their servants?”

Kong Tianyu is a brave and mighty soldier. He is also loyal to Yue Zhong. This is the reason why Yue Zhong assigned him as the team captain for Close Combat team 1. He had won the right to participate in decision-making process.

Da Gou Zi (Big Dog) also mulled over the question, then he also gave his opinion. “Captain Yue, I also think that this is not the time for us to send our soldiers to help out. I feel that the men from LongHai survival camp just want to use us as cannon folder. If we go to rescue them, all the guns and bullets are all taken from our supply of ammunition. The men over there are ingrates, even if we saved them, they will also attack us at a later date.”

Da Gou Zi is the quartermaster, and he take care of supplies in the camp. Fighting the war in Big Cliff Village had expended a lot of supplies. Although Yue Zhong men had found some ammo in Big Cliff Village's police stations and armed forces, he still experienced a net loss as he ammo found was less than the ammo he used to capture the village.

Liu Yan also agreed: “We should let them fight the zombies first!

After the zombies had managed to enter the base, we can send people to save the survivors. At that time, those guys would no room for bargaining.”

Zhao Xing also spoke his mind. “Captain Yue, there are over 6000 men over there. Lei Cheng has a big military base, and 7 IFV. They also built a wall. Even if they had a battle with the zombies, they should be able to last for a few days. After they could not hold on, it is not too late for us to send soldiers to help them.”

Seeing that about half of the team captains opposed sending reinforcement, Wu Guang, Lang Zi and the men that Yue Zhong had recruited from the military faction in LongHai survival camp chose to keep quiet.

But against the backdrop of protests, Chen Yao stood up and say: “Yue Zhong, let’s help! There are over 6000 survivors in the LongHai Survivor Camp. If the zombies managed to break into the camp, 6000 people will die. “

Although Chen Yao was disappointed with the high ranking officials in LongHai Survivor Camp, but she was pretty concerned about the ‘normal citizens’ survivors. Should the zombies manage to break down the walls, there will be countless numbers of death among these survivors.

Yue Zhong mulled over Chen Yao’s words and did not say anything. He looked at Chi Yang, and asked “What do you think?”

All the eyes in the conference hall were on Chi Yang. They all knew that Chi Yang is Yue Zhong’s best friend and buddy. As the first search team captain, he is often in the front lines of battle, and he found a lot of food and other supplies. All the men also acknowledge his leadership and the value of his words.

“My view is that we should help.” Chi Yang explained. “Our relationship with LongHai is intimately interdependent. After the LongHai Survivor Camp, our village has the most survivors. After the zombie horde had destroyed LongHai Survivor Camp, it is

highly likely that their next target will be us. Once the LongHai survivor Camp is destroyed, we also find it hard to find more people to defend our bases. We have less than half the number of people in LongHai survivor camp. It will be very tough for us to face the zombies by ourselves.”

After the apocalypse, the worth of a man's life is cheaper than that of ants. The strong bullied the weak, and killed wantonly. A weak man who did not act accordingly to circumstances will be killed by the strong.

But at the same time, men is also a valuable resource. Without men, it is not possible to use the machines to create more weapons. Without men, there will be no soldiers. Man could not survive alone. Having enough man is required to prevent others from attacking. Therefore, after the apocalypse, it could be said that the value of a man's life could be cheap but valuable.

The LongHai survivor camp of 6000+ men is to Yue Zhong, a big piece of fatty meat. If he could swallow this up, his strength will increase by leaps and bounds.

Yue Zhong slapped his palm on the table and announce. “I have decided. We will bring our soldiers to help! Kong Tian Yu, Liu Yan, Xiao Ming, Wu Guang, Zhao Xing, Ji Qing Wu, Lang Zi team, Wang Shuang, Cheng Yu squad, all follow me to LongHai Survivor camp. The rest of the men remain on guard here. In my absence, Chi Yang will be the commander. Da Gou Zi, please prepare the required material. We will set off tomorrow morning. “

Chi Yang also said, “Yue Zhong, Let me go to the Longhai Survivor Camp with you.”

There are over 100,000 zombies that will be attacking the survivor camp. Among the 6,000+ survivors, less than 2,000 of them dared to fight with the zombies. In addition, the various powers in the Survivor camp are not united. They fight as much among themselves as they fought zombies.



This time, Yue Zhong will be bringing 6 squads and all the prisoners. Even then the number of men does not exceed 400 men. He not only need to navigate the sea filled with treacherous politics among the various powers in LongHai Survivor Camp, but also face the might of a 100,000 strong zombie army. Any mistake on his part will result in death.

Yue Zhong immediately rejected Chi Yang's request. "No, you can't. Chi Yang. It is not easy for us to come this far. We cannot stop the reconstruction efforts in Big Cliff village and Stone Horse Village. We must continue to clean up zombies so that we can return things to normal. I need you here."

Listening to Yue Zhong's decision, Chi Yang kept quiet. He had been buddies with Yue Zhong for so long, of course he knows that Yue Zhong will not change his mind once he made a decision.

"All of you go back and rest. Dismiss!"

After concluding the meeting, Yue Zhong returned to his villa.

"I also want to go to with you the Survivor Camp!" Once he returned to the villa, Lu Wenwho had kept her silence throughout the meeting suddenly hugged Yue Zhong and made this request. She wanted to be with Yue Zhong in this difficult period.

Zhang Xin was wearing a sexy black underwear and was massaging Yue Zhong's legs. Before the apocalypse, she often watched dramas about the struggle for power among the King's concubines. She knew that she is not very important in the heart of Yue Zhong, at least not when compared to Lu Wen and Guo Yu, and hence behaved herself.

Guo Yu was sitting to the right of Yue Zhong and just listened attentively to their conversation.

"No way, it is too dangerous!"

Lu Wen was not satisfied with Yue Zhong's answer: "I know how to cast offensive spells, and also can heal. I also have evolved to

Level 7. Why can't I go with you? Didn't I also help out during the raid against Big Cliff Village?"

Yue Zhong really lacked people who can fight the zombies. As the leader of the team, he is often fighting in the front lines. Guo Yu, Luo Wen, Chen Yao etc, all these female mages-in-training will occasionally take part in battles as well. On one hand, they can kill more zombies and gain more experience to evolve. On the other hand, they can help to conserve bullets.

Yue Zhong explained "This time, what we are experiencing is different from the time we attacked Big Cliff Village. This time we are not facing several thousands of zombie, but rather over 100,000 zombies. If we are not careful, all of us will perish. This is too dangerous."

# Chapter 177

---

100,000 zombies and several thousand zombies are completely different concepts. And these 100,000 zombies are organized.

The Z1 Commander Zombie in Big Cliff Village that organized several thousands of zombies had already given Yue Zhong a lot of pressure. A 100,000 strong zombie army with organization and hierarchy would be even more formidable.

Lu Wen pouted and asked: “Then, why can Ji Qing Wu go with you?”

Yue Zhong pinched Lu Wen’s cheeks and replied: “You also know about Ji Qing Wu’s strength. She can protect herself in a zombie horde. Even if she met with any danger, she is able to escape it by virtue of her skills. That’s why I allowed her to come with me.”

Ji Qing Wu was skilled in using the sword. After joining Yue Zhong’s team, she often took the initiative to bring men to search for more food supplies, and constantly gained experience and evolved. Right now, she is the 3rd strongest in Yue Zhong’s team.

“Let’s sleep.” Yue Zhong bent down and kissed Lu Wen and Guo Yu on their forehead and immediately closed his eyes. Although he had 3 beauties in his arms, he did not have the mood to engage in sex. He needs to conserve his stamina and energy for the events that will soon happen.

Guo Yu who was sleeping beside Yue Zhong keep looking at Yue Zhong’s face: “Power. If I have sufficient power to fight in battles besides him, how great would it be.”

The next morning, two IFVs, five military jeeps with artillery guns, a machine gun car installed with a type 14.7 mm dual-mounted machine gun, seven trucks, ten Hummers, a large tanker and six converted buses drove towards Longhai Survivor Camp.

From the sky, Little Greenie was using its sharps eyes to keep a

lookout for potential hazards.

This time, Yue Zhong took more than half of his elite forces and half of his ammunition supply to LongHai Survivor Camp. An army that is greater than 100,000 zombies is no joking matter. If there are insufficient preparations, most his elite forces will end up dead.

Of course, Yue Zhong is not so stupid as to offer his forces for free. He requested for the control of the North Gate in LongHai Survival Camp. All his men smoothly made their way into the LongHai Survival Camp.

But in Phoenix Street area, the LongHai Survivor Camp had deployed 5 IFVs in that area. As well, sandbags and barbed wires were formed to make a make-shift barricade. There were many soldiers standing guard over that street. The area outside of Phoenix Street has been rezoned to make way for Yue Zhong's troops.

The LongHai Survivor Camp may be using Yue Zhong's forces, but at the same time, they also need to protect themselves against Yue Zhong's forces. If not for the fact that there were massive numbers of zombie walking towards the Camp, the authorities in charge will never agree to let Yue Zhong bring soldiers into the LongHai Survivor Camp.

As soon as Yue Zhong disembarked from the vehicle, he immediately looked for Chen Shi Tou and asked. "What is the situation now? Quickly tell me whatever intelligence you have on the movement of the zombies!"

Chen Shi Tou eyes were bloodshot. For the last few days, he had not slept well. As soon Yue Zhong asked, he immediately replied. "The zombies are moving towards us, but their speed is very slow. If they continue to approach us at this pace, I estimated that they will reach here in about 10 days."

Listening to Chen Shi Tou's words, Yue Zhong could not help

raising his eyebrows.

Shang Lin County is about 100 km away from LongHai Survivor Camp. Although these zombie's movement speed is very slow, they are able to move continuously non-stop around the clock. They do not need to rest, nor do they feel tired. Yue Zhong could not help being sceptical that the zombies need 10 days to reach LongHai Survivor Camp.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Shi Tou and asked, "How many able-bodied survivors have you recruited?"

Chen Shi Tou replied, "400 men"

After getting news of the movement of the zombies from Shang Lin County, Chen Shi Tou immediately started a mass recruitment for all able-bodied man. After some training, they would be able to fight against the zombie.

After the apocalypse, man and woman are both valuable resources. The women represent mankind's future. The men represent mankind's present.

Women can do what men cannot do: they can give birth and increase the population of humans. Without women, humanity has no future. Men could not increase their population and humans will die out.

Men are naturally stronger and more aggressive than women. Hence, this usually makes men more suitable for fighting than most women. At present, men are needed to fight, and Chen Shi Tou naturally recruited the stronger and able-bodied men.

Yue Zhong replied: "Make arrangement for these men to eat, then begin training as soon as possible. If you need more equipment, request it from Wang Shuang."

When trained, 400 men is a powerful weapon against zombies.

Chen Shi Tou replied: "Understood! Tonight there is a gathering in the Special Administrative Region. Various factions and powers

in LongHai survivor camp will attend this gathering. Lei Cheng had sent an invitation, and hope you can attend. They said the purpose of this gathering is to discuss the zombie invasion.”

“Noted! Please let someone inform them that I will be on time.”

Yue Zhong walked towards Little Greenie and mounted it.

Although Little Greenie can not be compared to its parents, it is also a massive Mutant Beast with a wingspan of 15 m. It is not a problem for it to carry a man.

Yue Zhong patted Little Greenie on its back, and Little Greenie immediately flapped its wings and soar up towards the sky, and head in the direction of Shang Ling County.

Chen Shi Tou could not help looking at Yue Zhong with envy. He also wanted to have such a magnificent beast. Then he turned around and walked towards the 400 men he had recruited.

400 survivors were gathered in an empty field. Each of them had a bowl of porridge in one hand, and a bun in the other hand, and was eating their meal.

Chen Shi Tou walked in the front of these men, and coldly shouted: “You have 30 seconds to finish your meal, and then assemble here immediately!”

After Chen Shi Tou’s announcement, the 400 survivors immediately wolfed down their bun, and washed down the bun with the porridge, and assembled.

After raiding Shang Lin granary, the lives of all survivors did not improve by much. The relief gruel was a bit thicker, but that all.

Raiding Shang Lin granary had provided very rich returns for LongHai survivor camp, they have accumulated a lot of food, and even ½ of their gains from Shang Lin granary is enough for 10,000 people to eat for 2 years. But after the apocalypse, all the seeds could not germinate. To ensure that humanity can survive for a longer term, LongHai Survivor Camp did not distribute the food

for all the survivors. And there are some people in positions of power who felt that if the survivors are well fed, it will become much harder to control them.

It is no wonder that most of the survivors in LongHai Survivor Camp are hungry and dressed in rags. Having good food to eat (the bun and porridge are so much better than gruel) is a blessing for these survivors, and they will not easily let go of this marvellous opportunity.

Chen Shi Tou waved his hands, and several men carried in carts full of machetes and steel shields. There was a small mountain of these products.

There are 400 machetes, and 400 shields. These items were all created from Big Cliff Village. From the first day that Yue Zhong had conquered Big Cliff Village, the steel factory has been churning out all sorts of weapons and armours, and have not stopped production.

Chen Shi Tou shouted: “Each of you come and get one machete and one shield!”

All the survivor was surprised to see these items, but all of them stepped up to get their machetes and shields.

# Chapter 178

---

Chen Shi Tou announced: “Some of you might have guessed – We are allocating machetes and shields to you because we want you to fight against the zombies. If you do not have the guts to do so, put down your weapon and your shield and walk out of here. From this moment onwards, you have nothing more to do with us. But if you are willing to fight against the zombies, I will guarantee that each of you will have enough to eat every, and you also have a chance to earn meat to eat.”

After listening to Chen Shi Tou, many men among the 400 survivors turned pale. The machetes and shields in their hands dropped to the floor as they shook uncontrollably.

Fighting with zombies is not that easy. These zombies look horrible, and there is a high chance of being infected with the zombie virus. One hit is all it takes to turn you into a zombie.

One survivor threw down his machete and shield and walked out. Even if he could have more food to eat, he also refused to fight against the zombies. This is especially true if he is armed with just a machete and a shield to fight.

As if the first man leaving the camp had opened the floodgates to leave, one by one, more and more men chose to leave the camp. After a short while, over 200 men have chosen to leave. Only 100+ survivors remain.

The most important aspects of this team were courage and guts. Without courage and guts, it is impossible for these men to fight. If Yue Zhong has more time, he will not allow a single man to leave this camp. He will make sure that all of these men will be brave and willing to fight the zombies.

But at this moment, time is what Chen Shi Tou lacked the most. Slowly but surely, these zombies are coming. Right now, he can only let those without guts to fight to leave his camp.



Those who left are all survivors that joined LongHai Survivor Camp relatively recently. They had not experienced hunger for a long, and still believes that the authorities will not ditch them and will provide help to them.

But the men who stayed are all pioneers who had stayed in LongHai Survivor Camp for a long time. They were already so hungry and oppressed until they could not withstand the hunger. As long as there were food for them to eat, they were ready to do anything.

If forced into a corner, a human will show extraordinary strength as he retaliates. However, if given a choice, almost all man will not chose to fight with their lives on the line. Now that these men had experienced hunger and were cornered by the authorities, these men were willing to fight. To kill zombies in exchange for food? Not a problem! Dying in combat is so better than dying of hunger!

Chen Shi Tou looked at the 100+ remaining men, and said: “Excellent! Now swing your blade downwards 100 times!”

All the 100+ remaining men began practicing swinging their machetes.

Chen Shi Tou was assigned as the trainer for these 100+ men. He was the best hunter in Chen Family Village, and have experience numerous battles with Yue Zhong with his Tang Imitation Sword. This gave him some knowledge of using a sabre. Although his skills are not as good as a master of a sabre, but he had no problems teaching new recruits the correct way to swing their machetes for maximum impact.

After the last survivor who refused to fight the zombies had left the camp, Wang Shengwalked towards a man who was recording down the details of these survivors, and asked: “Did you record down their name and particulars?”

“Yes, Sir! We had recorded all these information already!”

Wang Shuang had a cold look in his eyes as he said “Very good! These cowards! When we recruit more men, make sure we don’t recruit these rubbish.”

Wang Shuang was one of the men who had followed Yue Zhong since the apocalypse. His combat ability and qualifications was considered mediocre. But after experiencing the hash and cruel world after the apocalypse, his mind-set and personality slowly changed, and he had managed to evolve to level 9.

“Understood!”

== Meanwhile, in the skies ==

Yue Zhong was seated on Little Greenie’s back and soaring freely in the sky.

Being able to fly is a dream for many man. But the feeling of flying on the back of a great eagle is far from the ideal landscape of freedom that was painted by false expectations and imagination.

In reality, Little Greenie is very fast. In the sky, hundreds of meters away from the nearest land, the wind resistance was like hundreds of blade of knives cutting into Yue Zhong, and threatened to push him off Little Greenie’s back and fall to his doom. Even with Yue Zhong’s strengthened body, he also felt very pressurised by the wind resistance.

Yue Zhong lie down on his front to minimise the wind resistance, and gently patted Little Greenie and said: “Fly slowly, please.”

Little Greenie understood Yue Zhong words, and slowed down, and leisurely flew towards the direction where Shang Lin County lain in.

After about 2 hours, Yue Zhong was able to see the army of zombies.

From Shan Lin County, the army of zombies was as thick as ants, and there seemed to be no end to the number of zombies. From the sky, it look like a massive black-coloured tidal wave that was

slowly moving forwards, destroying everything in its path.

In the land where the tide of zombie had moved over, it was eerily empty. There was no sound of insects, no mutant beasts, nothing at all. All that remains were bones of various beasts, and blood-stained ground.

In front of the massive, colossus army of zombies, all the mutant beasts in front of the army could be seen fleeing in all directions.

From the zombie horde, hundreds of speed-enhanced S1 and S2 zombies broke apart from the zombie tide, and hunted down all the fleeing mutant beasts. Then they ate these creatures.

Not all Mutant Beasts choose to run although. Some chose to fight. After all, the normal zombies that made up the bulk of the army were only level 1 and were much weaker than them.

A Mutant Bull was charging among the zombie horde, and sent several zombies flying with its stampede. After sending about 10 zombies flying, its horns impeded itself on to the massive body of an L2 zombie.

The massive L2 smashed its fists on the head of the Mutant bull. The impact of the force smashed a dent in the thick skull of the bull and crushed its brain, killing it immediately.

Once the mutant bull is dead, the normal zombie swarmed upon on the Mutant Bull's body as if they were flies attracted a corpse, and began to eat it. In a short while, only the bones and the blood spilled on the floor were all that remained of the Mutant Bull.

A Mutant Cat Beast with a body like a leopard was constantly hunting down as many normal zombies as possible that had wandered into its territory. Each bite or claws would kill a zombie and it would retreat immediately after each hit. The normal zombies had no way to stop the hit and run tactics employed by the Mutant Cat. They were far too slow to keep up with its speed.

Suddenly, seven S2 zombies rushed out from the zombie crowd,

and with their terrifying claws, made short work of the Mutant Cat. In no time at all, the mutant cat joined the Mutant bull as nothing but a pile of skeleton and pool of blood.

As the zombie horde passed by the river, a water python emerged from the waters. It begin to swallow the zombies and help itself to a feast.

The normal zombies could not even scratch its scales as it wrecked carnage on the zombies. To the water python, the zombies are like snacks to be enjoyed at its leisure.

From the zombie horde, sixty S2 zombies each held a H1 zombie [1] high above the rest of the zombies. The sixty H1 zombies opened their mouths and sixty balls of fire blew apart the head of the water python. It collapsed lifelessly onto the ground.

Although the water python scales may be immune to the attacks of normal zombies, the scales could not withstand the might of H1 fireball.

A massive horde of zombies rushed up, and devoured the Water Python. In a few minutes, all that remained are some bones and some scales.

“This is bad! If we engage these zombies in a battle, we need to destroy all the H1 zombie at the earliest opportunity.” Yue Zhong was worried about his subordinates after witnessing the death of the water python.

Even a massive and powerful water python mutant beast whose scales are immune to most physical attacks also ended up being nothing more than food for the zombies. His subordinates who were dressed in Water Python Snakeskin armour would also be unable to withstand a single hit from the H1 zombies.

Yue Zhong patted Little Greenie and requested for Little Greenie to fly lower. Little Greenie flapped its wing and immediately flew down towards the H1 zombies.

From the sky, a fireball spell and a cone of ice runes suddenly appeared. In the next moment, a fireball and a cone of ice was launched and hit 2 of the H1 on their heads, and killed the two H1 in one hit.

# Chapter 179

---

Having killed the two of strong, Yue Zhong took out his stinger gun and fired three shots at the strong below.

In moving at high speed on top of Little Greenie, Yue Zhong's accuracy was significantly affected. Of the three bullets he fired, 2 of these bullets ended up hitting the L2 zombies that were supporting the H1 zombies. Only 1 of these bullets managed to kill an H1 zombie.

Seeing that his accuracy had been affected, he waved his hand and kept the stinger gun. From his hands several hand grenades appeared, and he tossed them towards the group of zombies without a thought.

“BOMB!!! BOMBBB!!”

One explosion after another continuously resounded from the area, and seven to eight H1 and L2 were torn apart by the blast.

After tossing about seven to eight hand grenade, Yue Zhong's danger-sense triggered. He immediately patted Little Greenie and roared “Fly upwards with all your speed!”

Little Greenie flapped its massive wings and seemed to tear through the sky as it flew into the clouds.

After Little Greenie has flown into the cloud, several H1 zombies were also hosted up by L2 zombies, and aimed towards the direction Yue Zhong escaped in. This time, there were about 50 of these H1 zombies. If Little Greenie were to be hit by 50 fireballs, it would also be killed instantly.

“So hard to kill! If only we have a bomber plane, that would be much easier!”

In the clouds, Yue Zhong frown as he looked at the sea of zombies.

The zombies were packed tightly together. Before the apocalypse, several bomber planes with heavy bombs could easily blow these zombies into oblivion. But, let's not mention bomber aircraft, Yue Zhong did not even have an armed helicopter.

Yue Zhong did not continue to toss out his hand grenades. After the battle with the Mutant Rat Horde, his supply of grenades has dropped by a lot. He was unwilling to waste these valuable explosives on the regular zombies.

Yue Zhong was lying flat on Little Greenie back as he observed the zombies' movement. He finally found the reason for the slow movements of these zombies.

The sea of zombies did not make a direct beeline towards LongHai survivor camp. Rather, they walked towards the surrounding villages. For each village the zombies passed over, all the zombies in that village would shakily walk out and join the zombie army, making the number of zombies increase significantly with each village passed.

The zombie horde was moving so slow because it continuously gathered more and more zombies from the surrounding area.

"If this continues, after ten days, the number of zombies we face will definitely be a lot more than just 100,000." Looking at the number of zombies that crawled out of each village to join the sea of zombie, Yue Zhong felt very depressed.

Although the zombie tide may be very slow, the general direction of its movements seemed to indicate that it is moving towards LongHai Survivor Camp. Yue Zhong estimated that at most, it will take ten days for the zombie to arrive.

"Where are the Z series of zombies?" From the sky, Yue Zhong kept a sharp lookout, trying to find the Z type of zombies from among the sea of zombies. But the Z series of zombies are short, and there were like 100,000 zombies. It was like looking for a needle in a haystack.

After a fruitless search, Yue Zhong directed Little Greenie back toward LongHai Survivor Camp. Along the way, he grabbed the opportunity to observe the surrounding landscape.

To fight in any war, the timing, geography of the land and the men are three important factors. The geography is of particular importance. Throughout Chinese history, many generals have used the terrain to their advantage to win a battle even though the enemy troops outnumbered them. Yue Zhong had not been to these locations before. Therefore, he wants to observe the surrounding lands as he made his way back to LongHai Survivor Camp.

That night, Yue Zhong brought Ji Qing Wu and Cheng Yu through the deadlock in Phoenix Street into the Special Administrative Area to attend the Banquet.

Once he reached the outskirts of the villa where the banquet was held in, Cheng Yu seemed to vanish into the shadows. He is an assassin. The darkness his best protection. His sneak attacks from the darkness are ten times as efficient as ordinary men.

Under the canopy of bright lights, many sharply-dressed waiters and waitresses in clean and neat uniforms were shuttling among the banquet and serving the guests. Smartly-dressed men in suits and women in gowns formed a small circle as they chatted among themselves, while holding glasses of wine in their hands.

In the middle of the hall, there was a long table, filled with fruits, cakes, pastries, salads, drinks, and a variety of meat dishes, and about two dozen vegetarian dishes.

The scene inside the villa makes it very hard for anyone to imagine that they were living in a post-apocalypse world. The lavish feast seemed to ignore the fact that in the fields, seeds could not germinate, and there was a severe food shortage. The world inside the brightly lit villa is in stark contrast to the lives of the survivors outside the villa, where there was a widespread lack of



food, and many survivors were wearing rags. Things were so bad that many women were willing to prostitute themselves for a slice of bread.

“Yue Zhong, you arrived!” Once Yue Zhong entered the villa, a handsome man by the name of Gu Yan Yi’s eyes seemed to shine, as he walked towards Yue Zhong.

Gu Yan Yi stopped in front of Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong was wearing a simple warrior outfit, and a Tang Sabre hanged from a scabbard attached to his waist. Besides him stood the ever-lovely and beautiful Ji Qing Wu.

Gu Yan Yi eyes seemed to flash with mixed feelings as he smiled and said: “Isn’t this Ji Qing Wu? Yue Zhong, is she your girlfriend? You are really accomplished! Ji Qing Wu is the dream woman for many men in LongHai Survivor Camp.”

Ji Qing Wu and Chen Yao are also residents of the Special Administrative Region. The spoilt, wealthy men from the Special Administrative Region naturally know about this beauty.

Yue Zhong just returned the smile and replied, “It a pity, but you guessed wrong. We are just good friends.”

Ji Qing Wu eyes seemed to flash with a strange light, but she did not say a word, and quietly stood beside Yue Zhong.

Gu Yan Yi smiled as he led the two guests towards a corner of the great hall.

Ji Qing Wu was dressed common casual clothes, while Yue Zhong was wearing a warrior’s outfit. Their attire stands out from the crowd of well-dress men and women in suits and evening gowns.

Most of the glares that looked at the attire of Yue Zhong were snobbish, and had a hint of contempt at first. But when these glares saw Yue Zhong’s face, most of the contemptuous gazes immediately disappeared to be replaced by one of awe and respect.

All of the men who attend this banquet were heads or leaders of

the various factions within LongHai Survivor Camp. They had either directly participated in or sent their men to participated in the raid on Shang Lin granary. They were very familiar with the strength of Yue Zhong and his team, and dare not to look down on Yue Zhong. After all, Yue Zhong's team was the only team that escaped from the Mutant Rats without a single causality. Also, Yue Zhong was the one who hunted down the Mutant Rat King, and hence scattered the horde of rats.

Many of these leaders instead wanted to find some way to deepen their relationships with Yue Zhong. The future is uncertain, and nobody knows what will happen in the zombie attack. But all of them agreed on one thing. In this post-apocalypse word, having good relationships with a powerful evolver backed by a team of elite men is not a bad thing to have.

Just when Yue Zhong and his date were casually chatting with some of the guests, a gorgeous, voluptuous lady wearing a red dress cut in the conversation. Her hair was very neatly style, and she was wearing makeup on her face. But her attitude was cold as she sneered "What country bumpkins! To come to this high-class banquet dressed in casual clothes. Tssk... You two do not know what etiquette is."

# Chapter 180

---

Another coquettish-looking woman decked in jewellery joined in to heckle at Yue Zhong. She threw cold look towards Yue Zhong, and spoke the man who Yue Zhong was chatting with, “Young master Gu, are two hillbillies friends of yours? They seemed to have no common sense. This is battalion commander Lei’s banquet. How could you let these two commoners come in dressed like this? Isn’t that being too disrespectful to the commander Lei?”

Flame King Gu’s team is a relatively strong faction in LongHai Survivor Camp. But in LongHai Survivor Camp, there are too many factions fighting for power, and there is always someone more powerful. Although Flame King Gu is an evolver, in the eyes of the bigger factions, he is considered insignificant.

Here, the military controlled weapons and bullets with an iron fist. If Flame King Gu dares to use his skills to attack any man from the Special Administrative Region, a type 40 rocket is more than enough to send him to heaven.

The two pretty women are the women of the Green Wolves Clan’s leader and the Big Knife Clan’s leader. These two Clans were created by Lei Cheng to do all the dirty deeds that Lei Cheng cannot publicly do. These two clans often clashed with Flame King Gu’s faction.

The voluptuous lady wearing a red dress is the woman of the Green Wolves Clan’s leader, Wang Tian (Sky Wang). Her name is Zhang Yan.

The other lady decked in jewellery is the woman of the Big Knife Clan’s leader, Xu Yi Dao (One Blade Xu). Her name is An Yan Hua.

Listening to the two ladies’ chatter, Yue Zhong raised his eyebrows, and coldly stared at Green Wolves Clan’s leader, Wang Tian (Sky Wang).

Wang Tian (Sky Wang) noticed the cold look on Yue Zhong's face, and immediately slapped Zhang Yan on her face and scolded her: "Bitch! You better watch what you say! The one in front of you is Captain Yue! Quickly kneel down and apologise to Captain Yue!"

Green Wolves Clan's leader, Wang Tian (Sky Wang) had also participated in the fight against the Mutant Rats Tide. He had personally witnessed Yue Zhong's might with his own eyes. As a subordinate of Lei Cheng, he is also aware that this man had the strength and power to fight on par with Lei Cheng's forces. At the same time, this man is also the man that his boss, Lei Cheng, wants to rope in. Furthermore, he knew that Yue Zhong was responsible for the overnight destruction of Ice King Group. He had no desired whatever to become the second Ice King.

To Wang Tian (Sky Wang), Zhang Yan is only one of his toys. He did not place particular importance on her. After all, he had many more toys.

Zhang Yan's face swell from the force of the slap, and she immediately turn pale. She cried and kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and beg for forgiveness. "Sorry, Captain Yue! I have eyes, but failed to see you, and even offended you."

Although Sky Wang will not do anything to her during the banquet, Zhang Yan knows Sky Wang's character. He is a man who would not hesitate to kill or torture his women if these women displeased him. Zhang Yan dare not to disobey Sky Wang's words, for fear or recuperations after the banquet.

Sky Wang also apologises, "Sorry, Captain Yue! I am Green Wolves Clan's leader, Wang Tian (Sky Wang). It is my fault for not being strict enough!! Please forgive my mistake."

Yue Zhong then stared at Big Knife Clan's leader, Xu Yi Dao (One Blade Xu) coldly.

Xu Yi Dao (One Blade Xu) felt a chill creeping up his spine. But he

had long accustomed to being a leader in his clan, and is not willing to follow Sky Wang and beg for forgiveness. He just silently stood there, and did not let his woman An Yan Hua apologise to Yue Zhong.

An Yan Hua saw that Zhang Yan was kneeling before Yue Zhong, and knew that today, she had offended someone she should not have. She also turned pale and walked towards One Blade Xu, and hope that her man can protect her.

Yue Zhong saw that One Blade Xu had kept silent, and he step forwards and hit One Blade Xu. The force of his blow was such that One Blade Xu's mouth was covered with blood and his head was swimming with stars. "You better teach your woman what they should not say!" Yue Zhong coldly said.

"You are asking for death!" Ever since One Blade Xu had followed Lei Cheng and became the leader of the Big Knife Clan, everything goes smoothly for him. He had never been this humiliated before. His eyes turned red with fury, and he launched a blow at Yue Zhong in retaliation, without considering the difference in strength.

Before the apocalypse, he was a Muay Thia Kick Boxing instructor in a martial arts school. His fists are heavy and quick. Normal humans find it hard to withstand his fists. He had joined Lei Cheng early, and, as a result, he was given the leadership of the Big Knife Clan.

"Idiot!"

One Blade Xu's fist may be useful against low-level evolvers. But against someone who has seven times the speed of a regular human, the fist is slow as a turtle.

Yue Zhong stepped aside and easily dodged the punch. He kicked One Blade Xu's legs, and forced One Blade Xu to fall onto the floor. Then he stomped his foot heavily on One Blade Xu's back.

One Blade Xu spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, and was pinned down like a dog under Yue Zhong's foot.

Although Sky Wang and One Blade Xu are both Lei Cheng's subordinates, they get along like oil get along with water. Both of them secretly plot against each other in their struggle for power. Looking at his rival who was pinned dog and unable to get up, he felt conflicted. On one hand, he gloated at his arch-rival's misfortune. On the other hand, he could not help feeling afraid.

Seeing that One Blade was pinned below Yue Zhong's foot, An Yan Hua immediately kneel and beg for forgiveness: "Captain Yue, it is me that had a foul mouth! It is me that talked rubbished! Please spare One Blade Xu! I am begging you! I am sorry. I am so sorry!"

After the apocalypse, human lives are as cheap as ants. An Yan Hua may be pretty, but if not for the fact that One Blade Xu had protected her, she could not have such a good life. One Blade Xu had treated her quite well, and is not like Sky Wang who discarded woman like objects after using them. She also had some feelings for One Blade Xu. Therefore, upon seeing One Blade Xu in trouble, she unhesitatingly swallowed her pride and begged for forgiveness.

This event had attracted the attention of the security guards, and seven men dressed in security suits quickly made their way to the scene and surrounded Yue Zhong and One Blade Xu.

"What happen?" A burly, well built and dark-skin man stepped forward from among the guards and asked.

Sky Wang also stepped out and smiled at that security guard. "Captain Fu, this is just a minor misunderstanding. Stone Horse Village leader, Captain Yue, and Big Knife Clan's leader, One Blade Xu, had a minor misunderstanding. There is no trouble."

Sky Wang quickly pointed out Yue Zhong's status. Lei Cheng wishes to have Yue Zhong serve him and control Yue Zhong's power. His ambition is not a closed secret. Sky Wang do not wish

to create any conflicts between Yue Zhong and any direct subordinates of Lei Cheng. If not, Lei Cheng would not forgive him

This guard is one of Lei Cheng's strongest evolvers, Fu Ming.

After hearing Yue Zhong's name, Fu Ming looked at Yue Zhong, as if asking Yue Zhong to confirm the words.

Yue Zhong then lift his leg and smiled towards Fu Ming and said: "This is really a minor misunderstanding!"

One Blade Xu also slowly get up. With eyes full of poisonous hate for Yue Zhong, he swallowed his anger and killing intent and said: "This is a misunderstanding."

# Chapter 181

---

One Blade Xu finally cleared his mind of any rage he felt when he was punched. He is not an idiot. He knows of Lei Cheng's plan, and must endure this humiliation. If not, Lei Cheng will give him a hard time. Although Big Knife Clan leader sounds good, in the eyes of Lei Cheng, it is no better than a dog.

“Do not make any trouble here. If there is a next time, we will escort you out.” Fu Ming glared at Yue Zhong. Then he led his subordinate out.

One Blade Xu sucked in a deep breath, and with great difficulties, humbled himself as he apologised to Yue Zhong. “Sorry, it is my fault for not teaching my woman!”

Although One Blade Xu had apologised, it did not clear the resentment in his heart.

“Look after your woman properly!” Yue Zhong did not even put One Blade Xu in his eyes, as he walked off with Gu Yan Yi.

“Let's go!” One Blade Xu had lost a lot of face in his skirmish with Yue Zhong, and had no face to remain in the same area. He pulled An Yan Hua towards a corner of the banquet. At this moment, the looks of pity on each and every man's face were like daggers stabbing into his body.

Sky Wang is relatively thick-skinned, and did not care about the looks of the men as he mingled with the crowd with Zhang Yan. Although Zhang Yan face has swollen, she was able to socialise well with the rich ladies as they eased into polite gossip and chatter.

Yue Zhong met a lot of people he recognised in this banquet.

Gu Fei Fei, Ning Zi Xuan, Ma Bu, Gu Li and Zhang Yang [2] entered the villa next, followed by four more women.

The four women were dressed in evening gowns and look absolutely stunning as the heads of several men turned to look at



them. These four of women sat next to four men, and engaged the men in lively conversations. Soon, the sound of laughter and chatter from these group of beautiful women liven up the heavy atmosphere.

Ning Zi Xuan was immaculately dressed, and well-groomed. From his looks, no one could tell his personality would change that much when he was drunk.

Gu Fei Fei was dressed in a purple night gown. Her face has some light makeup, and made her look a bit more matured. With her thick, sexy lips, it give her a wild, matured charm.

Seeing Yue Zhong walking over towards her, Gu Fei Fei's face seemed to break into a strange smile as she said: "Yue Zhong, you had really created a big storm."

Gu Fei Fei has seen how Yue Zhong had taught One Blade Xu a lesson. One Blade Xu and Sky Wang were very proud men and did not even put her dad Flame King Gu in their eyes. But they submitted to Yue Zhong so easily. She could not help to but take a dig at Yue Zhong.

"You flattered me." Yue Zhong just shrugged and did not seemed to care as he sat on the sofa, and helped himself to an apple.

Gu Fei Fei looked at Ji Qing Wu who was standing next to Yue Zhong. She seemed unhappy as she asked: "Where is Fang Chu? Why isn't she here with you? It has been but a few days, and you already changed your woman? You changed your woman like you change clothes."

Gu Yan Yi heard his sister's sharp remarks and immediately said in a strict voice: "Fei Fei, mind your manners!"

Gu Yan Yi is not a man who did not understand the current situation. Yue Zhong is now a man who holds the envy and fear of the men in LongHai Survivor Camp. He has 3000 survivors, weapons that are not inferior to the military, and many evolvers

under his command. Although their father, Flame King Gu, is a man with some power in LongHai Survivor Camp, his might could not be compared with Yue Zhong's strength.

Gu Fei Fei may be rebellious, but she is not stupid. As soon as the words left her mouth, she already felt a tinge of regret. But she could take back the words that she had already said. Therefore, she immediately apologised to Yue Zhong.

The scene of Yue Zhong teaching One Blade Xu had left a mark of fear in Gu Fei Fei's heart as she re-evaluated her attitude towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong just smiled, and did not intend to pursue the matter. "It's all right!"

From their first meeting, Yue Zhong knew that Gu Fei Fei's character is a bit rebellious. He had purposely picked a fight with One Blade Xu to show off his might so that others dare not offend him.

After the apocalypse, all order had collapsed, and a new law was formed from the chaos – the law of the jungle. Or the survival of the fittest. The weak will be bullied time and time again by the strong. To survive in this world, you need to show your strength.

In the LongHai survival camp, there were many factions fighting for power. If Yue Zhong had not displayed his feat of strength, many people would think he is weak and try to take his advantage. Many people will try to challenge him time and time again as they probed his strength in a struggle for power.

Even if Yue Zhong is relatively strong, but there were many factions. Like a pack of hungry wolves, they would work together and tear him apart if he shown the slightest trace of weakness.

By displaying his powers, no one dares to challenge him anymore.

Gu Fei Fei was just impulsive, and Yue Zhong would not turn the

cheek on her just for her slip of the tongue.

Gu Yan Yi looked at Yue Zhong and asked “Yue Zhong, do you think we can defend LongHai Survivor Camp?”

Hearing Gu Yan Yi’s words, Ning Zi Xuan and the rest of the men in the surrounding area all looked towards Yue Zhong. It is an open secret that a massive number of zombies from Shan Lin County are headed towards LongHai Survivor Camp. The issue in most people’s heart is whether LongHai Survivor Camp can be defended from the zombie attack.

If it is impossible to defend, then all of them need to make preparations. Otherwise, they would die in the zombie attack.

Among all the men in the villa, only Yue Zhong had brought soldiers to fight against the zombies and freed two villages. He words are the most trustworthy among all the men here.

Yue Zhong considered for a while before replying. “There is only a 20% chance of us successfully defending the base. This assessment of 20% is only if each and every one of you are willing to join and fight together as one. If we do not unite, then we don’t have even have 10% chance of successfully defending this base.”

Ning Zi Xuan interrupted: “It is not possible, right? Yue Zhong, last time Lei Cheng just brought one camp of men and he manage to clear Qing Yan County (Qing Yan County is where the LongHai Survivor Camp is located in). But now that he had more than one camp of soldiers. And the LongHai Survivor Camp also have so many men. How come you feel that it is not possible to defend LongHai Survivor Camp.”

Shortly after the apocalypse, Lei Cheng had just used two platoons of soldiers and managed to clear the Qing Yan County, and set up the LongHai Survivor Camp. Therefore, it comes as no surprise that most of the people here believed that LongHai Survivor Camp can be defended.

Yue Zhong explained: “The zombies are continuously evolving. I think all of you know this. This time, there are over 100,000 zombies. The number of zombies that have evolved twice would be in the mid-hundreds range. The number of zombies that have evolved just once would be in the range of several thousand. Among the zombies, there are commander zombies with high intelligence that organise these zombies into a powerful army. With a commander, all the zombies are at least ten times more formidable than previous.”

“As for us, we have expended most of the ammunition. Looking at the big picture, I think that it would be very difficult to defend LongHai Survivor camp. “

After listening to Yue Zhong’s words, all the men were stunned in silence. If Yue Zhong’s words can be trusted, then the Survivor Camp would be in great danger.

While most of the men were mulling over Yue Zhong’s words, Lei Cheng and his son, Lei Sheng, walked into the banquet hall with several military evolvers.

Once Lei Cheng walked to the stage, all the lights in the room were turned off, except for a ray of light shining at him.

“Thank you for coming to this banquet” Lei Cheng was wearing a military uniform. Looking at the smiling man who seemed to be full of heroic spirit, no one was able to tell from his appearance that he is a narrow-minded and petty man, and excel in backstabbing others.

# Chapter 182

---

After speaking some polite words, Lei Cheng immediately drove straight into the main issue: “I think all of you should know by now. There is a 100,000 zombie army that is approaching us from Shang Lin County. Now our Survival Camp has reached a point where its survival is at stake. I hope everyone will be able to put down their grudges and join hands together to fight against this threat.”

Lei Cheng seemed to be a naturally born actor as he said: “If we humans can join hands together, we will be able to defeat the zombies. Right now, right here, I swear in front of all of you. I swear that our military will fight to protect everyone. I, myself, will fight alongside each and every one of you, and live and die with LongHai Survivor Camp.

After Lei Cheng finished his speech, there is a sound of thunderous applause from the audience.

The fact that there are over 100,000 zombies from Shang Lin County that are making their way towards LongHai Survivor Camp is not a secret. If not for the support of the military and government officials who chose to make a stand in LongHai Survival Camp, most if not all of these survivors would have fled at the first whiff of this news.

Truth to be told, most of the survivors had wanted to flee and leave the camp. Nobody is willing to stay. However, a majority of the survivors do not have much stamina and strength to do so. After entering LongHai Survivor Camp, they did not have much food to eat, and were often hungry. As a result, even if they managed to leave the survivor camp, they do not have the energy to go too far.

In the survivor camp, almost all the weapons and tools attained from the [System] must be handed over the government, military

or various faction heads. The regular survivors do not have any equipment to protect themselves. Even if they want to flee, they will not be able to survive out there without any tools to defend themselves with.

Lei Cheng's words brought hope and reduced the anxiety of many heads of factions. Lei Cheng had control of a full camp of soldiers, and eight IFVs, giving them more confidence.

Hearing the thunderous applause, Lei Cheng finally revealed his true colours: "In this time of danger, we cannot allow conflicts among the various factions. We need to unite, and stand together to overcome this crisis. But it is not possible to do so with a strong leader. To ensure that every one will work together, we should choose a leader that will bring everyone to lead everyone to overcome this danger."

As soon as Lei Cheng has finished speaking, Sky Wang immediately said in a loud voice: "Commander Lei Cheng is right! As he said if we all remain distributed like grains of sands, we have no hope of standing against the zombie army. We need to choose a leader to ensure that all of us fight together as one and overcome the zombie horde. I elect Commander Lei Cheng as our leader to direct this battle."

One Blade Xu announced: "Commander Lei is not wrong. We cannot continue like this. I second the nomination of having Commander Lei Cheng as the leader of the expedition against the zombies."

Among the men in the villa, there were also about ten others who supported Commander Lei Cheng as the leader.

But the rest of the other faction leaders chose to remain silent. They knew about having a single commander would be of great help to fight against the massive army of 100,000 zombies. But none of them was willing to be directed under the command of Lei Cheng.

Knowing Lei Cheng and his methods, Lei Cheng would surely send them to the frontlines without regards for their life. Even if the zombies were repelled, almost all or all of their men would undoubtedly die in battle. Without men, their power will be greatly reduced.

Each of these men hoped to conserve their forces and power. To these men, it would be best if others and the zombies were both gravely injured in this battle. Only then will they step in to reap the harvest.

Seeing that many of the men in the villa had chosen to remain silent, his eyebrow twitched. But he continued to smile as he announced: “Since everyone had supported me, I will step up and take leadership of all of you, and make sure everyone can overcome this crisis.”

Seeing that Lei Cheng just assumed leadership on his own without their approval, each of the leaders of the factions was appalled. They glanced at one another, and their eyes seemed to speak volumes. But not a single one of them dared to object to Lei Cheng’s seizure of power.

Lei Cheng represents the Military, and is the strongest power within LongHai Survivor Camp. He not only had a camp full of soldiers, but he also had supported many factions such as Big Knife Clan and Green Wolves Clan from behind the scenes. It is rumoured that he has close to of one-sixth of the population of LongHai Survival Camp working with him.

Among the rest of the men, only Yue Zhong has the power to challenge Lei Cheng for the post of the leader. If Yue Zhong did not object, none of the men is willing to jump out and face the wrath of the Lei Cheng. After all, Lei Cheng is a narrow-minded man and will get back at them in some way or another.

Gu Fei Fei was in a panic as she quickly asked Yue Zhong: “Yue Zhong, why didn’t you speak up? Right now, only you have the

power to stop Lei Cheng.”

Gu Fei Fei is not stupid. She knew that once all the powers had been united under Lei Cheng, her father’s group’s power will be greatly reduced after the fight with the zombies. It is also possible that Lei Cheng will swallow the entire power.

The only one who can stop Lei Cheng from uniting all the factions under his despotic rule is the man who is sitting in front of her – Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at Lei Cheng who was standing high on the stage. He calmly replied to Gu Fei Fei. “Lei Cheng is not wrong. Only if all the factions work together can we overcome this crisis. Scattered grains of sand could not even hope to stop the massive numbers of zombie. Did you not notice that not even a single government official attempt to stop him? If I am not wrong, they have already made an agreement with Lei Cheng, and approved of his action. Right now, our biggest enemy is not Lei Cheng, but rather, it is the zombies.”

Although Yue Zhong did not like Lei Cheng’s character, at this moment, Lei Cheng is the only one that could unite all the various factions and powers in LongHai Survivor Camp. Yue Zhong’s strength is not inferior to Lei Cheng, but he is an outsider. Both the government and military in LongHai will not allow him to take control of the various factions in LongHai Survivor Camp.

Yue Zhong could only close an eye to his dislike of Lei Cheng in the interest of the bigger picture – the army of zombies that will be attacking the survivor camp. LongHai Survival Camp has less than 7,000 survivors, and not all of these survivors are willing to fight. In contrast, the army of 100,000 zombies is united. Each and every one of the various factions and powers in LongHai Survivor Camp must stand united if they were to survive.

Yue Zhong could only watch in silence as Lei Cheng united the various factions under his banner.



Gu Yan Yi broke out in a bitter smile, and stopped Gu Fei Fei from saying anything else. “Fei Fei, stop it! Yue Zhong is not wrong. Right now, our mutual enemy is the zombie horde. If the zombies breach our defences, we will lose everything. Lei Cheng is not a good person, but he is the only one with the qualifications to unite the various factions and powers in LongHai Survivor Camp.”

Ning Zi Xuan and the rest of the men also kept quiet. After Lei Cheng had united the various factions in LongHai Survivor Camp, his power will grow by leaps and bounds. The government will be greatly pressurised. But as Gu Yan Yi had pointed out, if LongHai Survivor Camp is overrun with zombies, they will lose everything.

The scenario of the day of the apocalypse was all chaos break loose reappeared in the minds of these men.

Lei Cheng glanced at Yue Zhong, and saw that Yue Zhong had no intention of standing out to challenge his leadership. He smiled in happiness, and announced: “Now that everyone is one family, some words are better said in advance. Right now we are in a crisis. A refusal to listen to orders may lead to the destruction of our camp. If anyone dares to disobey my orders, they will be punished under military law. I hope all of you are well-prepared (to follow my orders).”

Sky Wang and One Blade Xu dared not to be rash with Yue Zhong a moment ago as they were worried about spoiling Lei Cheng’s chance of assuming leadership. If Yue Zhong had chosen to step up, it is debatable if Lei Cheng would win the support of the men.

Once Lei Cheng is angered, Sky Wang and One Blade Xu will be killed. After all, there are many more men who are willing to be Lei Cheng dogs.

Listening to Lei Cheng’s words, each of leaders of various factions within LongHai Survivor Camp also felt a chill. But not a single one of them dared to say a word. Even the government did not say a word. Yue Zhong also did not stand out. Of course, they

would not dare to say anything. They all knew that Lei Cheng would not hesitate to kill the first one who step out as an example to silence the rest of the critics. No one is willing to be the one who step out and made an example of.

Lei Sheng walked towards Yue Zhong, look at Ji Qing Wu, and politely invited Yue Zhong: “Captain Yue, my father invited you for a short discussion.”

“Excuse me!”

Yue Zhong followed Lei Sheng towards a room inside the villa.

Lei Sheng led Yue Zhong towards a secret room, and then left him.

In the secret room was Lei Cheng and Chen Jian Feng.

Lei Cheng smiled as he saw Yue Zhong, and introduced himself: “You are Yue Zhong? I am Lei Cheng.”

Looking at Lei Cheng, Yue Zhong eyes seemed to flash with a strange light, but he smiled and said, “Pleased to meet you, Commander Lei!”

Now that the two strongest men in LongHai Survivor Camp are seated in front of him, Yue Zhong would only need to reach out and could kill them at his leisure. But he did not do so. Because he is aware that if he kills them, the entire LongHai Survivor will erupt in chaos. Right now the most pressing issue is still the zombies.

As well, being the heads of the respective factions in LongHai Survivor Camp, they should have some [System] equipment that will enable them to protect themselves. If Yue Zhong failed to assassinate them, the Survivor Camp would also be in chaos.

Lei Cheng is a cunning man. He tried to test Yue Zhong’s loyalty to him by asking: “Yue Zhong, what did you think of one commander commanding all the men?”

Yue Zhong seemed to be thinking over his question, before he finally said: “Having one commander is a very good thing. It can unite all units to combat the zombies. Commander Lei is really superb today. In one move, you have for uniting all the factions and powers in LongHai Survivor Camp under your leadership. During the time of war, I am sure that they will be a great asset in battling the zombies.”

Yue Zhong had avoided mentioning his forces in his reply. Also, in saying that Commander Lei had united all the factions and powers in LongHai Survivor Camp, he is implying that his forces are not under the command of Lei Cheng. After all, his forces are not a faction nor power within LongHai survivor camp.

Lei Cheng is not a fool, having played politics for years. He could infer what Yue Zhong is saying from his speech. He looked very unhappy and tried to grab Yue Zhong’s power by saying: “Yue Zhong, you are willing to bring soldiers to support our camp. This indicated that you were a man who has his country in his heart, and a hero who is willing to fight to protect his fellow man and country. Right now, you should be aware of the situation. If we cannot stand together as one, it would be impossible to fight against the 100,000 throng of zombies.

Only by having a single chain of command can we maximise the use of troops to defeat the zombies. I hope you can reconsider the big picture, and follow my orders. Let us fight as one to protect the citizens.”

Lei Cheng was hoping that Yue Zhong will gift command of his soldier to him. Yue Zhong forces were quite strong, and is very good cannon fodder.

Yue Zhong just ignored Lei Cheng words and immediately state his terms and conditions. “3,000 tonnes of food, 100,000 ammunition, 30 Tang Imitation Swords, 20 newbie staff, 5 tonnes of petrol. If you want me and my men to fight against the zombie with all I have, you must give me all these items. If you don’t, I will

immediately take all my men with me and leave the camp.”

Lei Cheng’s face become green with rage as he barked out: “You are taking advantage of the situation to rob us!”

Yue Zhong just coldly replied. “I have no relationship with this camp. Why do I need to bring my men and I to fight with these zombies and die? I am just a mercenary group that you hire to bring my troops to fight with you. The fact that I am willing to risk my life for your camp is already an act of mercy. As a mercenary group, did you really expect me to expend my own food and ammunition supplies to fight for you for free? Are you still dreaming? “

As far as Yue Zhong is concerned, all the talk that Lei Cheng had said is nothing but bullshit. If he really becomes the hero as spoken by Lei Cheng, the only fate waiting for him is the life of a vagabond. After Lei Cheng had used him, Lei Cheng would not hesitate to discard him.

Yue Zhong was willing to bring his troop to help the survivor camp is because of the 6,000 survivors. He did not come here to die. If Lei Cheng tries to use him and his troops as cannon fodder, he will immediately forget about defending the camp, and retreat.

If there are insufficient ammunition, in the future all of Yue Zhong’s troops could only engage in close combat with the zombies. Even if each of Yue Zhong’s men took down 100 zombies before being slain, Yue Zhong would feel very heartbroken. After the apocalypse, each man is a valuable resource, and an elite troop is even more valuable.

After listening to Yue Zhong’s speech, the room temperature seemed to drop by several degrees. All three men did not say another word, and just watched each other silently.

Chen Jian Fong broke the silence as he gave in partially: “Yue Zhong, your demands are too excessive. 3000 tonnes of food and newbie staff I can give to you. But I can only provide 10 Tang

Imitation Swords, 30,000 ammo, and 2 tonnes of petrol. This is already the best we can give. I cannot give you any more than that.”

Ammo and petrol are both valuable resources. 30,000 ammo and 2 tonnes of petrol are not a small sum. Chen Jian Feng could not give Yue Zhong so many items before the fight with the zombies.

Yue Zhong seemed to consider before nodding his head. “All right. Considering your relationship with Chen Yao, I will give you some face today.”

After Yue Zhong had agreed to fight the zombies together with LongHai Survivor Camp, the atmosphere in the room seemed to brighten up. Each of the three men had their own reasons for wanting to defend the camp but all of them were united in this.

After this discussion, Lei Cheng also knew that he had no say in directing Yue Zhong’s army. Both of them were only working together.

Chen Jian Feng knew that Yue Zhong had already scouted out the zombies. He asked, “Yue Zhong, what did you think about the fight against the zombies this time?”

“It is going to be a very hard fight. Today I have just investigated the zombies’ movement. They were continuously increasing their numbers by absorbing all the zombies from the surrounding regions. I guess that after ten days, when they reach here, we will be facing a massive sea of zombies that numbered over 120,000 and above.”

“May I suggest that we recruit all the men in this survivor camp, and train them. Then we arm them with weapons and have them fight the zombies. This is the only way we can protect the camp.”

In Big Cliff Village, I have a steel factory that can produce 150 machetes and 150 shields a day. If I focus on production on machetes, I can increase the output to 300 machetes a day. After

ten days, I should have 3000 machetes. This is enough to arm 3000 survivors. If you want, I can sell each machete to you for 50 bullets each. 3000 machete is 150,000 bullets.”

Although Yue Zhong hopes that the survivor camp can overcome this crisis, he is not willing to give out his weapons for free. Big Cliff Village was taken with great difficulties. As well, making each machete requires a lot of effort. He will not give them away at a loss.

The survivor camp has close to 7000 people. About half of these are able-bodied men. If Chen Jian Feng is willing to issue an emergency order, he will be able to get 3000 more men to fight against the zombies.

# Chapter 183

---

After listening to Yue Zhong's words, Chen Jian Feng's and Lei Cheng's eyes seemed to shine with a bright light, then go dark again. This is a good idea, but 150,000 ammo is not a small sum. They were unwilling to give so many bullets to Yue Zhong.

Chen Jian Feng seemed to consider for a moment before he said: "No way! We do not have so many ammunitions to barter with you in exchange for the machetes. How about this, I will arrange for 1,000 survivors for you to train, and you will arm these men. These 1,000 survivors will be your man from now on. As an exchange, you gift us with 1,000 machetes. "

Yes Zhong nodded and agreed without a thought: "Sure!"

Previously, the survivor camp had restricted Yue Zhong from recruiting more men, and continuously inferred when Chen Shi Tou was trying to recruit more men. Even now, Yue Zhong finds it hard to gather more men to his camp.

The survivor camp lacks weapons, while Yue Zhong's team lack men. Now that Chen Jian Feng had taken out 1,000 survivors to exchange for 1,000 machetes, both parties had engaged in a win-win situation.

Yue Zhong continued: "But these 1,000 survivors, I only want young and healthy men. "

After the apocalypse, regardless if it is men or women, both are valuable resources. Men are usually, but not always, stronger than women, and trend to make better warriors. Women can do what men can't: give birth to children and increase the population. But right now, Yue Zhong needs more fighters. Therefore, he chooses what he thought made better warriors – young and healthy men.

It would not matter if they were young and healthy man or middle-aged man or woman, mate. They all can fight. One hit from

a zombie will result in zombie virus.

Chen Jian Feng's eyebrows twitched. He actually wanted to take advantage of Yue Zhong, by sending 1,000 old folks and the sick to Yue Zhong. On one hand, he could save on food supplies. On the other hand, he could prevent Yue Zhong from getting stronger. But Yue Zhong did not take the bait, and immediately asked for man who could directly fight.

Chen Jian Feng reconsidered, and re-negotiate: "I give you 500 young men, 700 women and 600 children."

In the age of apocalypse, the children only eat up the food supplies and are a liability. In this survivor camp, the food is insufficient, and the living conditions suck. Many children will mysteriously disappear or are captured by men for carnal pleasures. Chen Jian Feng knows that Yue Zhong treats the kids relatively well, and wish to hand over the kids to Yue Zhong's side.

It is because of these 600 children that Chen Jian Feng offered to give 200 more women more than the agreed amount of 1,000 survivors.

"Ok", Yue Zhong had seen through what Chen Jian Feng was thinking of, and did not press Chen Jian Feng further.

Right now, the situation is not very favourable for all parties, and Chen Jian Feng had already shown some sincerely. Yue Zhong did not want to pressurise them too much. After all, both sides have a common enemy.

Yue Zhong said: "I have a personal request: I hope that the survivor camp can allow all survivors to have enough to eat during these ten days. If needed, we can round them up and enable them to fight against the zombie as a last resort."

The majority of the survivors in the camp in the camp seldom have enough food to eat and have no strength to fight. If this goes on, after the zombie breached the gates, these survivors do not



even have the strength to flee or fight back.

LongHai survivor camp may have jointly captured the granary in Shang Lin county and received a lot of food. But there is no new supply of food as the seeds could not germinate. The Survivor camp only allow survivors to drink some watery porridge to preserve their lives. Most of the survivors were hungry until they were nothing more than skin and bones. In the entire camp, other than the men from the special administrative region, there is no fat people.

What about Lei Cheng? He is fat like a pig. He lives in the military camp and not the S.A.R

Chen Jiang Feng considered for a moment, and then he agreed.

But he was thinking “If we allow the survivors to eat, then they can work faster and harder to build barricade and walls. In this way, the main force can focus on attacking the enemy instead of creating these trenches, saving time and effort.”

The three parties struck an agreement, and all of them left the secret room.

The next day, 500 men, 700 women and 600 kids were rounded up by Chen Jian Feng and handed over to Yue Zhong’s side.

Yue Zhong immediately sent the women and children to Big Cliff Village and Stone Horse Village.

At the same time, Big Cliff Village continuously delivered machetes in batches to Yue Zhong and Chen Jian Feng.

Chen Jian Feng also rounded up 1,000 men and handed these men to Lei Cheng.

Lei Cheng assigned military trainers to train these men. He does not require these men to become elite fighting troops, but just hope they would be of some use against the zombies.

Also, Chen Jian Feng also rounded up all the remaining men to

dig holes and trenches, and there were many trenches surrounding the camp.

The zombies are stupid and attack in swarms. Although these holes are useless against human, but it should trap several hundreds of zombies.

From Shang Lin County to the Survivor Camp, there is nowhere to defend in safety. Yue Zhong did not wish to engage the zombies in an open field, where they had the advantage of numbers. Even he had several IFVs, the zombies have numerous H1 zombies that could blow these vehicles apart. If there are trenches, this will make it easier for the defenders.

The evolved zombies had complicated matters. If it just regular zombies, 100 IFVs with enough ammo should be sufficient to destroy these rubbishes. But with the evolved zombies like H1 zombies, they could fight back.

Ten days later, Yue Zhong was looking out of the wall of the camp when he heard a sharp cry from Little Greenie. Yue Zhong turned pale, and told Kong Tianyu: "The zombies are here, inform all of them to retreat inside the city walls."

Kong Tianyu immediately left and carried out the command.

All the people who were digging trenches outside quickly and fearfully rushed through the doors of the camp.

In the mad scramble to get back to the city, several men were knocked onto the floor and trampled to death by the horde of men. Nobody cared about those who died. Everyone was focused on their own safety as they rushed into the city. There was no order, and no queue as everyone jostled to get to safety.

At the gates, it quickly became chaotic as there were sounds of scuffles, crying and shouting. The zombies had not even appeared, but the survivors were already in a state of Chaos.

After a while, the survivors finally had some resemble of order

under the leadership of the government officials, and entered into the city.

The survivors had just entered the city when the sentries on duty at the city wall notice the horde of zombies.

When they saw the sea of zombie that seemed to sweep aside all in its path, all the men on the city walls could not help feeling scared. There zombie horde was very massive, and seemed to be never ending, and it brings with it a feeling that could swallow everything in its path as it crept towards LongHai Survivor camp.

Seeing the approach of these legions of zombies, almost everyone turned pale and began to shook uncontrollably.

Once they thought that they must engage the zombie that were as numerous as colonies of ants, many of the men were frightened out of their wits.

Only Yue Zhong's elite team of men who had fought against the zombies on numerous occasions could look at the sea of zombie with a keen and calm eyes.

Even the 700 men who just been trained by Yue Zhong's team immediately turned pale, and they trembled uncontrollably.

With each step the sea of zombies advance, the more pressure the men on the walls felt. If not for the 6m tall wall, almost all the men would be scared senseless and have long fled.

"Captain Yue, there are surely more than 100,000 zombies?" Kong Tianyu, who was standing by Yue Zhong's side, remarked. His face looked very grim.

The number of zombies was much more than when Yue Zhong first encountered them. It was like the march of a colony of army ants. The zombie horde in Big Cliff village could not be compared to this threat.

"I think so" Yue Zhong also felt a suffocating pressure from the

number of zombies. Seeing the sea of zombies, even with the wall, he had no confidence in successfully defending the camp.

Although there were 6,000 survivors in the camp, those who have the courage to fight against the zombie numbered less than 1,000.

1,000 vs 100,000. Each man must kill 100 or more zombies. This is really mission impossible!

Luckily the Z series of zombies were not too smart. They only know of one tactic: To overwhelm with numbers.

As they proceed forwards, Chen Jian Feng's trap of building trenches and holes went to work. Each zombie that fell into the trap ended up falling prone. Then the zombies behind them continued to fall into the pit on top of them and so on, crushing the ones at the bottom of the pit.

This continues until each trench was filled to the brim with the bodies of zombies. Then the zombie horde behind will step on the corpses of the fallen to cross each trench.

With the massive number of zombies crushing those who had fallen, those that fell into the trap never got up again.

About 2,000 zombies were stuck in the trenches, and their corpses were used to fill the trenches. But the throngs of zombies did not even faltered or slowed at all. The loss of 2,000 zombies were quickly forgotten as the sea of zombies continued to surge forwards.

When the zombies are about 100 m away from the wall where Yue Zhong was supposed to guard, Yue Zhong immediately commanded "Fire at will!"

From Yue Zhong's team, each elite marksman continuously shoots towards the zombies, and many zombies were taken out of with headshots and collapsed lifelessly onto the ground.

Yue Zhong is in charge of guarding the East gate, while the

North, West, South gates are under the supervision of Lei Cheng's subordinates.

The majority of Lei Cheng's men are new soldiers who have not experienced combat with zombies nor have much military training. As soon as the zombies were in sight about 200 m away, they immediately panic and madly fire all their weapons at the zombie horde.

Under the hail of bullet, many zombies were cut down by the heavy fire.

But it also depleted Lei Cheng's ammo at a very rapid pace. Most of the soldier used up a magazine of bullets and quickly changed their magazines with trembling hands. After a short while, they emptied their clip and changed their magazines again.

The hail of fire in the West, North and South wall never ceased. Each of heavy machine guns did not even rest once. Hundreds of zombies were torn apart by the bullet storm "Stop firing! You are not allowed to fire without my orders. Those who failed to obey orders will be shot!" a veteran soldier was able to see that something is wrong, and immediately started shouting orders.

Mankind has made rapid technology advancement, especially with firearms. The guns of today can continuously shot out a steady stream of bullets at a very rapid pace. If these untrained soldiers did not exercise restraint and continued to frantically shoot, all the bullet supplies in Long Hai Survivor Camp will be used up in one day.

Without bullet, LongHai survivor camp could not hope to withstand the might of a 100,000 zombie army.

Most of the soldiers had been given less than 2 months of training. Each soldier only had 50 bullets. The sea of zombie were thick and everywhere. Even if they blindly shoot, their bullets would hit a zombie. But to have a headshot is a different matter. Their accuracy at a pace of 200 m away was still lacking.

Under the command of the veteran soldiers, the soldiers stopped firing blindly and begun to shoot at the zombies in short bursts.

With a brief respite, many zombies that were shot down by the bullets storm slowly got up and walked shakily towards the walls.

Seeing the shooting of these recruits has little to no effect on the zombies, the officials began to change their strategy. “Do not shoot! Let them come closer before we shoot!”

The walls around the area are 6m tall. The 6m wall is their best defence.

Under the command of the officials, the West, North and South Gates all stopped firing and allow the horde of zombies to get closer and close to the gates.

Not long after, there are countless numbers of zombies outside these three gates.

These zombies tried to use their claws to strike at the city walls, but it was ineffective. Without the evolved zombies, even 100,000 normal zombies will not be able to break down the city door.

“Open Fire”. At this time, Lei Cheng’s officials finally give the command to engage the zombies.

Seeing that the terrifying zombies could not do anything but to remain outside the gates, the soldiers then relax a bit. Under the command of the officials, they begin to fire at the zombies below.

At this distance, with a height advantage, each bullet quickly struck the zombies on their head, and these zombies collapsed.

After seeing the scary zombies were easily killed by their bullets, the soldiers were more at eased, and began to muster their courage.

Lei Sheng was on a city wall, and watching the zombies being slaughtered like dogs, he started to relax. “These zombies are not scary at all. Don’t say 100,000, even 200,000 of them is nothing.”

“After killing these zombies, all I had to do is to raid the Shang Lin military camp, and get the guns and ammo. Thereafter, I just need to capture each town by cleansing it of zombies. If we continue like this, my dream of conquering the entire country is not just a dream.” Lei Cheng’s ambition is getting bigger and bigger. At first all he want is control of LongHai Survivor Camp. Now he wants to control all of China.

Just when the soldiers got things under control, there was suddenly change. From the horde of zombies, 200 L2 zombies appeared near the wall. Each L2 zombies had an L1 zombie in their hands.

As soon as they were within range, these L2 zombies threw the L1 zombies up towards the top of the wall.

These L2 zombies were all massive hulks and possessed incredible strength. Under their throw, the L1 zombie were like cannonball as they were launch on top on the walls.

A few L1 zombies went ‘splat’ on the city walls and decorated it with a ketchup stain. But most of the L1 zombies were successfully launched among the defenders on top of the wall.

“Zombies!”

Seeing the zombies that managed to drop among the mean, most of the new soldiers turned pale. Many of them immediately dropped their weapons and ran away.

# Chapter 184

---

If it was just shooting zombies from afar, it would be fine with the novice soldiers. But taking on zombies in close combat requires a lot of guts. Guts that these new soldiers do not have.

Lei Cheng's soldiers were mostly comprised of new soldiers who only been trained for three months, and have zero practical combat experience. Asking these soldiers to shoot at the zombies is all and well with them. But to get them to engage the zombies in close combat, that is mission impossible.

The veteran soldiers immediately turned annoyed and shot the soldiers who fled, while shouting: "All deserters who flee will be shot on sight!"

The veteran soldiers killed several soldiers. Under the threat of death, the new soldiers dare not run away, and took up their guns and shoot at the L1 zombies.

Some of the L1 zombies managed to land on top of a group of soldiers, and smashed them into a pulp. Then these L1 zombies immediately began a biting spree as the zombies chomped down on the soldiers nearby. Each bite creates a horrifying wound, and the soldiers' flesh were ripped off. The soldiers cries of pains and struggles under the L1 zombies' bite only seek to add fear to the atmosphere.

The rest of the troops proved to be merciless towards the men who were bitten as a hail of bullets ripped towards the L1 zombies and the eaten men, tearing them into a bloody mash. Even more L1 zombies had yet to get up from the floor before a stream of bullets were fired at them.

But the zombies are different from men. As long as their heads were not hit, they were able to get up and fight again. Even if the L1 bodies were filled with countless bullet holes, as long as its head or its spine is not broken, these creatures have no problems getting



up again.

At the same time, the L2 zombies began to grab the normal zombies around them and toss these zombies towards the wall. Many of these zombies were thrown into the ranks of the men, creating even more chaos.

But the regular zombies were different from the strength and toughness enhanced L1 zombies. These ordinary zombies were relatively weak, and most of the standard zombies were either smashed into meat paste from the impact, or had their vertebra shattered.

Those standard zombies that had their bones broken from the impact could not stand up, but they continued to crawl towards the men in their insatiable lust for blood.

These common zombies were not as dangerous nor as threatening as the L1 zombies. But seeing the zombies restlessly crawling towards the men with faces filled with bugs and maggots were especially terrifying to the fresh recruits. Many of these recruits face turned white with fear, and they involuntarily peed in their pants. If not the fact that the veteran soldiers would shoot them if they try to run, they would have fled long ago.

The zombies on top of the wall continued to increase in numbers as more and more zombies were lurched into the wall. The death count of the soldier continued to rise steadily. Not long after, the death count had risen to thirty men, and the defenders' situation look more and more hopeless. The tide of the battle seemed to shift towards the zombies.

“Fire the cannons and concentrate all fire towards the L2 zombies!”

Under the roar of the commanding officers, the heavy artillery team finally let loose their power, and several explosive shells were launched towards the L2 zombies.

“Bomb! Bomb! Bomb!!!”

Following the sound of the massive explosions, many of the L2 zombies and the zombies surrounding the L2 zombies were blown apart into dust.

As if the heavy shelling had set off a chain reaction, all the firepower the military possessed were crazily fired at the sea of zombies. Under the scary golden hail of bullets, many of the zombies within the range of the weapons were like as if a massive invisible scythe mowed them.

At the same time, the evolvers within the military began to take action. They grabbed their Tang Imitation swords and rushed towards the zombies that managed to get on the wall, and began the grim task of clearing these zombies.

Under the firestorm of bullets, the tide of the battle began to change and shifted towards the human's favour.

In the east gate where Yue Zhong was guarding, the elite marksmen were unable to stop the tide of zombies from advancing. Other than the elite marksmen, Yue Zhong had not allowed his men to open fire at the zombie horde. Therefore, Yue Zhong faced the same situation as the rest of the gates – a massive swarm of zombies soon filled the area below the walls, and several L1 zombies were launched into the top of the wall.

Yue Zhong was surprised by this tactics employed by the zombies. But he was very pleased with this outcome, as he yelled, “Close combat team 1 and team 2, these are all yours!”

Twenty-four men wielding Tang Imitation Sword and dressed Water Python Snakeskin armour immediately took action as they rushed forwards and hacked at the L1 zombies.

These L1 zombies had not even regained their footing before they were cut down by the close combat team members. Each of the L1 zombies was a level 10 creature. With each kill, a vast experience

orb flew into the level 6 close combat team members, and allowed these men to evolve.

Without the threat of regular zombies distracting them from fully utilizing their teamwork skills, killing an L1 zombie did not pose much of a threat to the team of close combat evolvers.

At the east gate where Yue Zhong was guarding, fifty L2 zombies continuously launch standard zombies towards the walls. The twenty-four close combat team members did not have sufficient time to clear all the zombies that attacked in the first wave before the second wave of zombies were flung towards them.

White Bones began to move, and attacked the normal zombies tossed by the second wave of attack.

Seeing the number of zombies was steadily increasing, Yue Zhong immediately ordered, "Close combat team 5 and team 6, engage this new threat!"

Close combat team 5 and team 6 are new close combat team. Each of these team members was only about level 2. Although they could not be compared to the first four teams regarding evolution and battle ability, they were made up of men who have shown bravery and skills.

After the close combat team 5 and 6 entered the fight, the clean-up of the regular zombies proceed relatively smooth. These zombies could only crawl on the ground and were to the faster-moving men, an excellent source of experience orbs. As soon as the regular zombies landed on an area, the men surrounding it will quickly rush up to kill it.

"Luckily these zombies are relatively stupid, or we would be in great danger." Yue Zhong was looking at the zombies that were thrown at the walls, and he could not help but to think in this way.

If the zombies combined all their strongest forces and focused on one of the walls, two hundred L2 zombies can toss two hundred

zombies at once into the wall. If this happens, the Lei Cheng's team would be in grievous danger.

Lei Cheng has 600 men, but these men were divided into three gates. Therefore, each gate only had about 200 men. Also, he needed to leave aside some men for emergencies. Stopping the advance of these zombies would be a colossal task for him.

If one observed the battle from the sky, they would find a strange sight. Only in the East gate would the sounds of gunfire occasionally and rhythmically rang out in short bursts. But in the other three gates, the sound of gunfire and cannons were deafening and fierce.

The firepower of the weapons of today was extremely vicious and powerful. The zombies were all mowed down by the best firepower that modern technology can boast of.

In particular, the heavy artillery guns that use massive bullets were exemplary in mowing down scores of zombies. Each bullet can tear a huge hole through the body of humans, ripping apart flesh and bone in a single hit. These zombies could not hope to withstand the might of technology's finest firearms.

The zombies in the West, North and South gates were completely suppressed by the firepower, and most of the zombies within the range of the firearms were swallowed up in a sea of explosion and bullets.

Xu Zhenggang saw the battle situation and immediately ordered his men. "Stop firing! Stop firing!"

While the effectiveness of these firearms is indisputable, it is also a fact that these firearms were consuming the limited bullet supply at a very rapid rate. It was like there was a big hole in the bottom of a massive jar filled with water, and the bullets were gushing out of the jar extremely quickly like water. If this continues, all the bullets would be quickly used up.

Under the command of the officers, all of the men in the West, North and South gates stop firing. Only the snipers in the army continued to pick off the zombies by firing at the head of each of zombies.

Once there is a ceasefire, many of the zombies slowly crawl up again. Many of the zombies had holes in their bodies. Some of the zombies have lost an arm or leg, or their guts were dangling out of their bodies, but still they got up, or crawled towards the gate. As long as their heads and spine were intact, they would be able to get up again and again.

If these bullets were to be used against men, the men will be gravely injured and would be unable to fight anymore. However, the wounds were nothing to the zombies that uncaringly crept towards the walls again.

The L2 zombies also got up from the ground. Although the cannon fire was very powerful and had a huge blast radius, it was not very good when it comes to directly targeting of zombie's head. Only about slightly more than ten zombies were blown into shreds by a direct hit from the cannons. The rest of the L2 zombies were sent flying by the force of the explosion. But the majority of shrapnel pieces that explode outwards landed on their massive body or hands, and did not otherwise affect them at all.

Of course, the standard zombies that were caught in a cannon's blast radius had been long turned into dust. But the L2 zombies had enhanced strength and toughness that allowed them to survive an indirect hit from the explosion and shrapnel bits.

Looking at the L2 zombies that continued to get up, most of the men felt their hearts sank. Many of the soldiers were terrified. If the cannons could not kill these L2 monsters, they have no idea of what they need to use to kill the L2 zombies.

As soon as the L2 stood up, they immediately walked towards the wall, and continued to throw zombies at the wall.

“Evolvers, all attack!”

This time, the military had already made preparations. Under their command, the evolvers from various factions of Longhai Survival Camp were assigned to fight against the zombies that were thrown onto the wall.

There were over 100 evolvers from both the military and the various factions in LongHai Survivor camp. Once these evolvers joined the battle, the regular zombies were quickly slain. Each evolver is different from the recruits – they had experienced combat with the zombies before, and was not afraid of the standard zombie. Killing the regular zombies that had been thrown onto the wall is but a mere matter for these evolvers.

It was like giving these evolvers more experience orbs.

The tide of the battle slowly returned to a standstill. Each of the four gates rang out occasional sounds of gunfire. These are from the gunshots from the elite marksmen and snipers.

If one bullet could kill a single zombie, the ammunition in the Survival Camp is more than enough to destroy the zombies many times over. But in reality, other than the snipers and elite marksmen, the rest of the men need to expand about twenty or more bullets to hit a zombie on its head.

The throng of zombies was clustered tightly together. Hitting a zombie is not a difficult issue. But hitting the head of these zombie is the difficult part. The bullets that landed on other regions of the zombie body were ineffective against the zombie horde.

Yue Zhong’s team of elite marksmen had been continuously shooting at the zombies with their type 03 rifles. Their marksmanship is superb, and within 100m, each shot of their gun could blow apart the brains of a zombie with unerring accuracy. Several zombies were continuously fell from their headshots.

The twelve elite marksmen were very calm and composed as they

continually adjusted the aim, reload and pick up new targets. Under their shooting skills, scores of zombies had already fallen.

Of these twelve elite marksmen, about seven of these are former professional soldiers who had joined Yue Zhong. Five of the men are survivors who had shown extreme promise with their marksmanship during their encounter with the zombies.

These professional soldiers had all participated in the battle to free Qing Yuan County (where the survival camp was currently located in) and have survived various dangerous missions. Almost all of them are used to battle. If not for the fact that Yue Zhong needed some of them to operate the IFVs and heavy weapons, Yue Zhong could have got more marksmen.

“First shooting team, get down!” Yue Zhong had just shot a zombie when he saw that L1 zombies hosted several H1 zombies in their hands. He immediately felt a sense of danger and roar out the warning. Immediately after, he lay on the floor, flat on his stomach.

The twelve marksmen heard Yue Zhong’s order, and although they did not understand why, they complied with Yue Zhong command and immediately lie flat on the ground.

At the next moment, over 20 H1 zombies launched series balls of fire on the walls. Each ball of fire was devastating effective, and blasted several shallow potholes, with the debris scattering everywhere. Had they act a second later, the marksmen would be killed by this attack.

With the danger sense of Yue Zhong, the men in the East Gate was much better off compared to the men in the other gates. The attack of the H1 zombies had killed twenty-three snipers and elite marksmen, dealing a heavy blow to the military.

Under the covering fire of the H1 zombies, several Level 20 boss hunters crawled out of the zombie horde, and quickly reached the wall. Each boss Hunter had a long tail, four limbs filled with

sharps claws and a sleek black body.

These agile Hunters climbed onto the hands of the L2 zombie, and using the great height of the L2 zombies and their hands as a ladder, quickly jumped up and reached the top of the wall.

Many S2 zombies also followed after the hunter zombies, and used the L2 zombies as a ladder to climb on the wall.

As soon as the first hunter entered the wall, White Bones immediately rushed up with its massive axe and cleave apart a hunter. As well, Little Greenie also pecked a hunter to death with its sharp beaks. Yue Zhong was also alarmed by the hunters and immediately fired his stinger gun, and with three shots, managed to kill three hunters.

Ten hunters made it to the East Gate. Yue Zhong, White Bones and Little Green had managed to kill five of these zombies. But the remaining five of the zombies rushed forwards toward the rest of the men.

The four teams of evolvers also bravely charged towards the hunters.

Three of the hunters were quick and silent as a ghost and entered in the midst of the men in the span of a few heartbeats. Their claws flash out, and three low-level evolvers were send flying for 7 to 8 meters and were seriously injured by strength of each blow.

Two of the hunters opened their mouths, and their dexterous tongues immediately impaled itself on the brains of two of these evolvers, and killed them outright.

It was the first time that Yue Zhong's team have a casualty.

At this time, several S2 zombies also joined the battle. Yue Zhong, White Bones and Little Greenie were locked in fierce combat against these new threats and were unable to make their way towards the hunters that were slaughtering their men.

“Damn it” Yue Zhong immediately launched his shadow step



skills, and his speed increased exponentially. Like a ghost, he wove in and out of the zombies as he decapitated an S2 zombie with each swing of his Tang Blade.

In the span of a breath, three S2 Zombies were killed by Yue Zhong.

# Chapter 185

---

Little Greenie and White Bones also continuously killed the S2 zombies that scampered up the wall. The problem is the number of S2 zombies was too many, and they could not kill enough of these zombies.

After activating the shadow steps, Yue Zhong continuously killed numerous S2 zombies, while protecting the vulnerable elite marksmen. These twelve elite snipers were not equipped with Water Python Snakeskin armour, and if they were hit by an S2 zombie's claws, they would be infected.

The death of each elite marksmen will hurt Yue Zhong significantly. The most the important aspects of these snipers is that their skills are equally useful against zombies or human beings.

The regular evolvers are very helpful when fighting against zombies, but against marksmen, one bullet is all it take to kill them.

The [System] level up only enhanced the physical attributes of a human, but it does not strengthen the body to withstand bullets. Without the aid of protective items, it is impossible for an evolver to resist a shot from a firearm.

“Team 13 and Team 15, come and assist!!” Yue Zhong continued to kill zombies as he shouted out aloud.

Team 13 is under the leadership of Ji Qing Wu, while Team 15 is under the guidance of Chen Shi Tou. Under Yue Zhong's command, they swiftly entered the battlefield.

With a swipe of its mighty claws, it swats aside one of the close combat team members as if it was swatting a fly. Three Tang Imitation Swords cut into its flesh, and created three long wounds. But these swords lacked the strength to cut any deeper into its

body. The Hunter flipped its tail and sent two of the men flying with but a single blow.

“Go and die, you fucker!” at the time, Kong Tianyu activated his Surge in Strength +1 skill. The ability granted Kong Tianyu a colossal amount of strength for a short duration of 5 minutes. With his enhanced strength, his blade easily craved apart the skull of a Hunter.

A massive orb of experience entered into his body.

After Ji Qing Wu entered the battlefield, she immediately activated her Cutting edge enhancement skill, as well as her Increased agility skill. As she charged past a Hunter, there was a flash of light and the Hunter was immediately cut into four pieces, and its blood and body parts were scattered in all directions.

Another Hunter flicked out its tongue and like an arrow, aimed towards Ji Qing Wu.

Ji Qing Wu immediately cut off the tongue of Hunter with her blade, and moving very rapidly, closed in on the Hunter that attacked her.

The Hunter was enraged with pain as its tongue was sliced off. It immediately strikes out at Ji Qing Wu with a claw, and at the same time, its long flexible tail immediately lashed out towards Ji Qing Wu's head.

Unlike normal zombies, the Hunter had evolved some ability to think. In fighting with the humans, it had learnt that these men are unique. Their bodies are robust and are difficult to hack apart. But the brains of these humans are unprotected.

Against the Hunter's deadly attack, Ji Qing Wu did not show a trace of fear. At the time when the Hunter and Ji Qing Wu passed by each other, there was a flash of light. Then the Hunter was spilt into four pieces, and its blood spurted in all directions.

Under the effects of the cutting edge enhancement skills, the

Tang Imitation Sword in Ji Qing Wu's hands was a weapon with unparalleled sharpness. This ability, combined with Ji Qing Wu's swordsmanship skills, created a superb close combat fighter that is without peer.

Of the five Hunters that made it among the men, three of them were killed by Ji Qing Wu and Kong Tianyu. The remaining two Hunters did not engage in further combat with Yue Zhong's troops and immediately tried to creep down towards the residents.

Yue Zhong raised his stinger gun at a Hunter and pulled the trigger. The stinger bullet was fired with unerring accuracy and it blew apart a Hunter's head into bits. The last remaining Hunter leapt down from the wall in an attempt to escape.

But there was still an IFV that was waiting down below, and as soon as the Hunter leapt down, the men manning the IFV immediately used the type ZPT 90 25 mm autocannon and sprayed a thick chain of bullets towards it.

The Hunter was unable to withstand the might of armour piercing rounds of the autocannon, and was shredded apart by the hail of fire.

Yue Zhong has placed the IFV and two jeeps armed with type 89 QJZ 8mm heavy machine guns as the second line of defence against the zombie horde.

After killing another S2 zombie with his blade, Yue Zhong roared a command "All units fire and destroy the L2 zombies!"

If the L2 zombies continued to send more and more zombies into the city, it would be impossible to defend. The S2 zombies that poured into the city are not what regular evolvers can handle.

Under Yue Zhong's command, the three type 89 QJZ 8mm heavy machine guns mounted on the walls let it rip.

These bullets landed among the zombies, and most of the zombies were knocked down from the firepower of these heavy

machine guns. Standard zombies would have a massive hole where the bullets hit them, and it is common for a string of three to four bullets to separate the top half of the zombie from its bottom half.

These L2 zombies may be extremely robust, and it could withstand gunfire from most ordinary weapons, but its tough skin could not withstand the bullets from this heavy machine guns.

One by one, the L2 that acts as a bridge was shot down. Although these L2 zombies had fallen, they were not killed. It just provided a brief respite from the unending stream of S2 zombies.

Without additional reinforcements, Yue Zhong and the close combat men the six teams finally destroyed all the S2 zombies.

This wave of zombies attack with its uncommon methods of siege warfare had cost Yue Zhong dearly. Two of the twelve elite marksmen had been scratched by S2 zombies, and must be put down. Also, the 4 of the men from the close combat team has been killed, and seven men were seriously injured. In one wave, Yue Zhong had lost 13 valuable men.

But Yue Zhong's team had killed nine Hunters and thirty-two S2 zombies, and managed to hold the line.

The Second Generation zombies are somewhat rare, and are elite troops. Having killed so many evolved zombies, the men guarding the East Gate can finally breathe a sigh of relief.

“Hello, Yue Zhong! Is that Yue Zhong? The West Gate could not hold on. Please, can you bring some soldiers to help out. Please? If you do not help out, the West Gate could not be defended.”

Just as Yue Zhong killed all the evolved zombies, the walkie talkie rang out with Lei Sheng's shouts for help.

Yue Zhong immediately replied. “All right, I will bring men to assist immediately.”

In this time of crisis, where there is an army of over 100,000 zombies, all of the men must be united, or they could not even hold

on for one day.

“Kong Tian Yu. You are in charge of defending this area! Cheng Yu, close combat team 1 and team 2 members follow me!”

The first combat team and the second combat team members are all the elite members of Yue Zhong's team. After experiencing the last battle, many men had reached Level 10. Yue Zhong also gifted these men with an assortment of skill books, and allowed all the men who broke through the level 10 bottleneck to learn a skill, hence increasing their combat effectiveness.

Two military trucks containing all the men steadily made their way towards the West gate. The streets were clear and there were no obstacles in the way. As a result, they quickly reached the West gate.

As he disembarked from the vehicle, he found that the West Gate had already been breached. The military had already retreated towards the area under the West Gate walls, and there were two IFV, steel mesh wire fence, heavy machine guns and light firearms that were frantically trying to stop the horde of zombies from overrunning the defences and pour into the city.

One by one S2, S1, L1 as well as regular zombies continuously pour down from the West Gate walls. After that, most of the zombies were torn apart by the heavy firepower.

Several Hunters, recognising the danger on walking on the street, chose to crept on rooftops as they stealthily made their way past the barricade.

A burly middle age man seemed to cast a spell, and five balls of fire appeared in the air, and flew towards one of the Hunters.

The Hunter was very agile and managed to avoid four of the fireballs. But it was hit by the last fireball, and the fireball created a large hole in its body. It lost its balance and dropped down from the roof.

The next moment, countless numbers of bullets created a barrier of ammunition, and sent the hunter to meet its maker.

The two Type 90 ZPT 25 mm autocannon on top of the two IFVs had not ceasefire all these while. The massive firepower was particularly effective against zombies, tearing huge holes in regular zombies' bodies. Even the S2 series of zombies will be split apart if it is hit with an armour piercing round from the deadly weapon.

Lei Sheng walked towards Yue Zhong, and faintly heaved a sigh of relief. "Yue Zhong, you are finally here. Thank you for bringing soldiers to help out!"

The zombie horde suddenly activated H1 zombies, Hunters, S2 zombies, etc., and within a short span of time, the number of soldiers in the West Gate that were lost to the zombies were terrible. The military and the various factions had lost more than 80% of their men, and all the snipers had been destroyed.

The West gate was deemed as lost, and Lei Sheng brought his soldiers and retreated to the second line of defence.

The other two gates also suffered heavy lost in the zombie attacks. But one of the gates was defended by government commandos, polices and military police. The reserved military forces secured the other gate. Both sides were engaged in fierce combat with the zombies, and have no men to spare.

That was why Lei Sheng requested Yue Zhong for help.

The wall is very important to the defenders. As long as there is a wall, the normal zombies could not swarm into the city, and use their numbers to overwhelm the defenders. With the wall, the defenders are more likely to breathe easy and are more willing to fight. Therefore the importance of the wall could not be stressed enough.

"Who is that man?" Yue Zhong looked the man who

continuously launched fireballs at the hunter.

Lei Sheng just take a quick look and immediately replied: “He is Flame King Gu”

“His strength is indeed extraordinary!” Yue Zhong thought.

Flame King Gu continuously launched one fire ball after another on the evolved zombies and Hunters, and killed these evolved zombies. Those that were injured were immediately torn into shreds by the rain of covering fire.

But Flame King Gu was heavily panting, and perspiring heavily. After a short while he sat down on the ground, and no longer had the strength to stand out.

Releasing each type of powerful attack had a drawback: It will rapidly drain stamina and spiritual power. Flame King Gu had expended a considerable amount of stamina and spiritual power to lay covering fire and to buy time for the last 20% of the defenders to retreat. Right now, he was totally drained.



# Chapter 186

---

If not for the assistance of Flame King Gu, all the men guarding the West Gate would be wiped out by the horde of Hunters and S2 zombies.

Yue Zhong asked, “How many more evolvers do you still have?”

Lei Sheng pointed towards five men who were sitting down with shocked expressions on their faces, and replied, “Only these men remains.”

Hunters and S2 zombies were really too strong. If not for the fact that Yue Zhong’s men had Water Python Snakeskin Armour, there would be a lot more casualties. Also, a single strike from the Hunters or S2 zombies will immediately infect the soldiers. Once the soldiers are infected, there is only death waiting for them.

Lei Sheng’s men did not have the luxury of equipping Water Python Snakeskin armours. Therefore, the casualty were nothing short of horrible. Having proper equipment is essential for the men to fight well.

Yue Zhong thought for a moment before replying. “Cheng Yu, Gu Tie, Zhao Ming, the three of you stay here and protect Lei Sheng. Let them stop firing. Also, let me take command of these five evolvers. I will bring some men to get back the wall.”

Yue Zhong and Lei Sheng may be working together, but Yue Zhong could not trust Lei Sheng. If Lei Sheng fired at them with the IFVs while Yue Zhong and his team are engaged in close combat, the entire team would be wiped out.

The Water Python Snakeskin armour may block normal bullets, but it would be useless against the armour penetrating bullets of the ZPT 90 type 25mm autocannon.

Lei Sheng also understood why Yue Zhong had left Cheng Yu and the other two men. In this critical junction where the zombie

horde is at risk of overrunning the West Gate, he chose to turn a blind eye. Instead, he asked the five evolvers over, “Li Zhou, from now on, the five of you are under the command of Yue Zhong. Understand?”

“Yes!” Li Zhou replied loudly, and cast his sights on Yue Zhong and his men.

About 80% of the men in Yue Zhong’s team have evolved beyond level 10, and killed numerous zombie. Each of the men radiates killing intent from their body and look ferocious and terrifying.

“Woahhh.... Under a tiger’s leadership, there can be no helpless animals.” Thought Li Zhou, as he brought his team of four evolvers to join up with Yue Zhong’s men.

“Stop firing!” Lei Sheng gave the command to stop firing.

All the men immediately stopped firing. At the same time, the zombie horde began to move again.

After the loss of the West wall, numerous zombies have taken advantage of the Chaos to enter the city. The zombie horde now includes normal zombies, S2, S1, L1 as well as Hunter zombies.

The East gate also had ten Hunters that sneaked into the Survivor camp to attack. These Hunters are far more cunning and proficient in battle compared to the other zombies.

In guarding the East Gate, Yue Zhong and company only managed to kill five of the hunters, while the remaining five sneaked towards the rest of the men, and used the rest of the men as a cover to prevent further attacks. It is fortunate that Ji Qing Wu, Kong Tianyu, the IFV and Yue Zhong managed to finish off the last five hunters before they escape and wreak more carnage among the defenceless population in the Survivor camp.

“Charge!!!” Yue Zhong led his team and White bones towards the wall and ran up to meet the zombies.

Very quickly, Yue Zhong and his team clashed with the zombies.

Yue Zhong's speed is almost seven times the speed of ordinary men. Although his swordsmanship skills are not as remarkable as Ji Qing Wu's, his speed and strength are extraordinary. The Level 2 Tang Sabre in his hand did not cease as it relentlessly attacked, and with each swing of his blade, heads of zombies flew out in all directions. Even the mighty S2 zombies could not withstand a single blow from Yue Zhong's Sabre.

Not a single zombie could halt the descent of Yue Zhong's blade. His sabre was insanely fast, so fast that the men who were watching did not even see him attacking. They only saw flashes of reflected light from his sabre, and then zombies near Yue Zhong would instantly be decapitated.

White Bones who was standing next to Yue Zhong seemed to be a whirlwind as it swings its massive axe in a vast circular motion. As zombies around stepped into the whirling vortex, their flesh parted and their bones shattered. These body parts would be sent scattering in all directions.

With Yue Zhong and White Bones leading the charge, they soon cleared a small path for the men to follow. But the men in Yue Zhong's team are not any less fierce or deadly. Each of them would occasionally strike out at zombies that got too close to them, and was able to kill zombies easily with just a regular swing of their sword. The standard zombies seemed to part like a hot knife through butter under their onslaught.

"Wow! That is incredible! What valour! No wonder he could bring soldiers to reclaim two villages!" Flame King Gu was shocked by the sight of Yue Zhong and his team as they get to work on the zombies. He could not help feeling awed. The same zombies that wiped out most of the West gate defenders could not even hold back Yue Zhong and his team.

If it were just a comparison of power, Flame King Gu would be much more powerful than most of Yue Zhong's men. But he is only one person. His team may have six other evolvers, but the six

evolvers were trained by killing zombies that he had caught and rendered incapable of fighting back.

Compared to Yue Zhong's men, their performance in today's battle could be described as miserable.

Sensing that Yue Zhong is the biggest threat to them, four of the five Hunters that were hiding among the buildings rushed forward. They flicked out their tongue, aiming for Yue Zhong's head.

The dexterous tongues seemed to have a life of its own as it twisted and turned while heading towards Yue Zhong as fast as an arrow.

White Bones immediately stood in front of Yue Zhong and used its body to shield him. The four tongues landed on White Bones and were repelled by the toughness of its bones.

Yue Zhong raised his Stinger gun and fired two shots at the Hunters.

Each of the Stinger bullets hit a Hunter on its head and blew the brain apart.

White Bones also glared at the other two Hunter, and with a blazing ghost fire in its eyes, it launched two sharp bone spikes at these creatures. The bone spikes immediately penetrated into the Hunters' brains, and exited from their spine. In the process, the Hunter's brains, flesh and muscles were all smashed into pulp. The Hunters collapsed lifelessly onto the ground.

As Yue Zhong aimed for the two Hunters, two more S2 zombies appeared near Yue Zhong like a gust of wind, and their mighty, sharp claws threaten to cleave Yue Zhong into pieces.

Yue Zhong is wearing a cloak. Underneath the cloak is a Water Python snakeskin armour. Inside the Water Python Snakeskin Armour, he was also wearing a leather cloth made from the hide of the Mutant Rat King. As well, he had a level 3 protective vest that

he secretly wore inside the leather armour. Under so many layers of protection, he did not even put the S2 zombies' attacks in his eyes.

Yue Zhong felt the claws of the S2 zombies as they landed on his body. He lashed out with his sabre, and immediately slain the two S2. Two large experience orbs entered into his body.

Without any Hunters threatening the soldiers, Yue Zhong and his team seemed unstoppable as they massacred their way up the walls. Along the way, hundreds of zombie corpses littered the street. Unlike the aftermath of a bullet storm, none of these zombies was even moving nor did they get up again. If you observed carefully, each of the zombies was decapitated, or missing part of their brain.

"That's incredible!" As Lei Sheng watched how Yue Zhong led the two teams of evolvers up the city wall and destroyed all the zombies in his way, his eyes sparkled, and a dark killing intent emerged from his body. Right now, the Military and Yue Zhong were only using each other. Neither of them has the power to resist the zombie horde on their own. They may even become opponents later.

The more powerful Yue Zhong is, the greater the threat he will be to their future plans.

As soon as Lei Sheng leaked out his killing intent, a stronger killing intent emerged from a figure next to him. He was shocked and turned around, only to see the cold stare of Cheng Yu looking back into his eyes. Lei Sheng was frightened by what he saw. Looking into the eyes of this cold-blooded assassin, he was dead sure that if he dares to make any moves against Yue Zhong, he would be killed before he can even take action.

"Recapture the Wall!" Lei Sheng immediately discarded any notion of harming Yue Zhong and his men as he refocused his efforts on the current battle.

Now is not the time to betray Yue Zhong. At least, not yet. Although Lei Sheng is domineering and full of arrogance, he was also aware of this fact. If the city is breached, Lei Sheng will lose everything.

One hundred men armed with machetes slowly walked up the city walls, accompanied by several soldiers wielding assault rifles.

The Military evolvers were largely decimated, and Lei Sheng does not have enough men to retake the wall. Therefore, he could only rely on the conscripted survivors who had just a few days of military training. The soldiers with assault rifles were what remained of his soldiers.

Just as the men entered the wall, a Hunter quickly jumped onto the roof of a building, and charged ahead like an arrow, towards the survivor camp.

Once the Hunter appeared, the men with assault rifles began to panic, and wildly fired at the Hunter.

But the Hunter appearance was too sudden, and it did not have any intent to fight. Most of the bullets hit empty air, and only a few bullets hit the Hunter.

The Hunter continued to flee, and disappeared into the survivor camp.

“Aren’t you going to chase after it?” Lei Sheng asked Cheng Yu who was standing next to him, as he looked at the retreating figure of the Hunter. Lei Sheng could feel that Cheng Yu is also a powerful evolver.

Cheng Yu was a former assassin, and is familiar with various weapons. After joining Yue Zhong’s team, he had participated in numerous battles and is now a level 13 evolver. Against a Hunter beast, Cheng Yu would be able to hold out on his own.

Cheng Yu’s replied sent a chill down the spine of Lei Sheng. “My job is to ‘protect’ you. Anything else is none of my business.”

“Not good! The Hunter is heading towards the Special Administration Region!” Lei Sheng’s eyebrows twitched, and his face changed. He immediately climbed the stairs leading to the top of the wall to find Yue Zhong.

On top of the wall, the zombies in the area had all been annihilated by Yue Zhong and his men. Everywhere was strewn with the corpses of the zombies. He had also reached level 34, and he put one point into agility and one point into stamina.

The survivors who came to the top of the wall found the area filled with various heads, arms and other body parts of the zombies. Many of them turned pale, and some of them even puked at the sight. Some of the men were frightened out of their wits, and their machetes slipped out of their trembling hands onto the floor. They had not seen the aftermath of a battle with zombies before.

Lei Cheng walked up to Yue Zhong and spoke in a hurry; “Yue Zhong, one of the Hunters had managed to charge into the Special Administrative Region. Please help to get rid of it.”

Yue Zhong raised his eyebrows as he inquired: “Hunter? When did this happen?”

Hunter beasts carry the zombie virus, and it is relatively powerful. Once it reached the men, it could cause massive carnage as it infects most of the men.

Lei Cheng bitterly smiled as he replied: “Just a moment ago. The Hunter was too cunning, and escape through the roofs of buildings.”

Yue Zhong immediately ordered: “Xiao Ming, you lead all the men in Team 2 and stay here to protect the area. Cheng Yu, protect Lei Cheng’s safety. Team 1 immediately returns to the East gate. If there are any problems, immediately inform me via the walkie-talkie.”

In this wave, most of the evolved zombies had been sent out, and Yue Zhong reckoned that there should not be any more threats to the West gate. After all, his close combat team two should be more than enough to deal with ordinary zombies.

Lei Cheng saw that Yue Zhong had two teams of elite men. He wanted to ask Yue Zhong to gift him command of one group of men. After all, he had gifted Yue Zhong with five evolvers just now. But Yue Zhong had already disappeared he rapidly chased the Hunter.



# Chapter 187

---

Yue Zhong drove to the Special Administrative Region, and found that the two guards that were supposed to protect this area from the zombies were already dead. Each of the two guards had a big hole where their heart was meant to be. There was no sight of the hearts. Without a doubt, this is the handiwork of a Hunter beast.

Most of the men in the Special Administrative Region had not experienced the horror of the apocalypse. They were all in a panic when they received news of the Hunter beast. Very quickly all of them fled towards the exit of the Special Administrative Region. For the first time, the Special Administrative Region that was full of life seemed to be empty as all the people fled.

In the chaos, many people were trampled on when they fell. At the same time, too many people were trying to get out of the Special Administrative Region, and throngs of people blocked the narrow exit.

To ensure that they have a place to escape to, many of the evolvers had used their powers to push aside anyone in their way.

Many children and women were shoved onto the cold hard floor. They laid there wailing, and the scene was nothing short of utter Chaos.

“Damn it!” Looking at the stampede of humans, Yue Zhong could not help frowning. If this goes on, the death count of the people who were trampled to death in the jostle to get out of the area would be much higher the number of people killed by the Hunter.

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong activates his skill “Art of the Fear”. This skill has the effect of making people lose their will to fight. A massive wave of spiritual power radiated from Yue Zhong’s body. With haste, he reached the area where most of the men were in, and roared out: “Shut up! All of you queue and leave

here in an orderly matter!”

The Art of the Fear is really impressive. The men seemed to fear Yue Zhong more than the Hunter, and listened to Yue Zhong and left in an orderly manner.

As he walked forwards, the men around him felt indescribable fear, and they unconsciously went out of their way to create a path for him to walk on. At the same time, the men behaved themselves and began to exit the area in an orderly manner.

After the men had made way for him, Yue Zhong was startled to see that the Hunter was covered in blood. It was chasing and killing the survivors in the Special Administration Region. The Special Administration Region was relatively untouched by the apocalypse. As such, most of the men do not have much ability to hide nor fight the Hunter. It was like a herd of defenceless, fat sheep.

The Hunter flicked its tongue, and penetrated a hole in the chest of the child.

The little boy was not bigger than ten years old, and his eyes shown a trace of fear. He struggled feebly for a few moments, and collapsed onto the ground as his heart was ripped out of his body.

“Damn it” Seeing this, Yue Zhong eyes turned cold, and he aimed his Stinger gun at the Hunter.

The Hunter is brilliant. Having seen how Yue Zhong killed scores of zombies and other hunters, it immediately chose to retreat rather than to fight. It flicked its tail and sent a corpse flying towards Yue Zhong. While Yue Zhong was distracted by the dead body, the Hunter had hidden itself in a small alley.

Yue Zhong stepped to one side to avoid the dead body, and chased after the Hunter.

If the Hunter had rushed towards Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong was confident of finishing it in one shot. But the Hunter opted to run

instead. With its incredible speed, it is not easy for Yue Zhong to kill it.

The Hunter proved to be extremely cunning, as it dodged into the maze of alleys and corridors.

Yue Zhong fanatically chased after the Hunter with all his speed. His agility had reached a frightening value of 69, and he was able to close the distance between them. If not the fact that the hunter kept turning and changing its path, Yue Zhong would have already caught up the Hunter.

As Yue Zhong rushed into a small alley, suddenly his passive skill Danger Sense rang out a warning. A tongue seemed to have been lurched from the sky and was rapidly closing towards his head.

The Hunter had suddenly climbed the walls of the alley with its dexterous claws. From high up in the wall, the Hunter suddenly made a surprise attack on Yue Zhong, hoping to catch its pursuer unawares.

Yue Zhong's eye flashed with cold light. He reached out his hand, and caught the Hunter by its tongue on his right hand.

The Mutant King Rat hide protected Yue Zhong from the attacks of the Hunter, and its tongue could not penetrate through the thick hide. Yue Zhong pulled the tongue with his right hand, while using his left hand to aim the Stinger Gun at the Hunter and pulled the trigger.

A massive "Bang" rang out from the empty alley, and echoed in the surrounding street. The shot had been a head hit, and the head of the Hunter was blown apart by the force of the Stinger Gun. The headless corpse collapsed lifelessly from the wall. With a massive thud, it dropped to the floor, and dropped a green colour treasure box.

"The chance of having any items seemed to be getting lower and lower." Yue Zhong thought as he walked forwards and retrieved

the box. Then he kept the box in his spatial ring.

When Yue Zhong and Ji Qing Wu defeated four Hunters in the newbie village, each of the Hunters dropped a skill book and an item. This time, Yue Zhong had killed over ten Hunters, but there were only two green colour treasure boxes. The rest of the items were white colour treasure boxes.

Not long after, a team of special police force finally reached the area, and began to maintain order in the region.

The forces in the survivor camp were spread too thin, and most of the special police force members had been assigned to defend the walls. Otherwise, the Hunter would not find it so easy to enter this area.

“Save me. Save me! I am Secretary Zhang’s wife. You cannot treat me like this! Save me, I don’t want to die!”

“I was not scratched by the Hunter! This injury was due to me tripping on the pavement as I tried to make my escape. I am a delegate! How dare you arrest me!”

“I am the Chairman of the Ning Group. Chen Jian Feng is my friend. If you dare to touch me, I will skin you alive!”

“.....”

These special police force immediately began to act on the orders of their superiors, and arrested all the men who were injured. If these men were normal survivors, these police would have immediately shot them. But the people from the Special Administration Regions are all V.I.P.s, and many of them have close relationships with their bosses. These special police could only handcuff them and restrain them.

Even then, many of those who were arrested began to cry loudly. Some of them shouted as they tried to explain their wounds. Some of them tried to intimate the Special Police Force members with their status, and the entire area erupted in Chaos.

A captain of the Special Police Force was perspiring heavily as he shouted: “Everyone remain calm. All we are doing is to detain you for half an hour. If there are no unforeseen changes, everyone may leave.”

If these people were ordinary survivors, the Special Police Force members would have used their baton to knock out the teeth of the survivors to get them to shut up. But the Special Police Force members dare not to use force against these men who had connections to their superiors.

“Bang!”

At this time, from the side, there suddenly rang out a gunshot. A white dog was shot dead as the bullet tore a hole in its head.

The captain of the Special Police Force turned his head and saw Yue Zhong holding a type 54 handgun, as he mercilessly shot the dog.

“Oh, my precious! My darling!” A woman who was about 32 -33 years old, with fair skin suddenly wailed out aloud in a shrill moaning voice, as she rushed towards the corpse of her dog.

The gorgeous woman’s eyes were bloodshot with rage, and at the same time, seemed to be full of grief. She rushed towards Yue Zhong, and tried to slap him. “You demon! You killed my precious! I will not forgive you!”

The dog is her most treasured pet, and she had treated the dog like a daughter. Although this was after the apocalypse, the dog was still fed the most exceptional dog food. This high-class dog food was made from high-quality beef. If the dog food were placed in the survivor camp among the regular survivors, that would be a feast. For just a can of dog food, many men were willing to kill.

“Fuck you! This thing has been infected. If I don’t kill it, it will kill you all.” Yue Zhong had been fighting all day since this morning, and had to travel around the Survivor camp to save as

many people as possible.

He had rushed all the way here to save the people in the Special Administrative Region from the Hunter, only to yelled at by a woman who could not differentiate if her pet was infected or not. His heart was too tired to remain calm. Anger burned within him as he easily dodged the slap and instead, slapped the woman. His slap knocked out several of her teeth. The woman's face also immediately turned swollen.

This rich lady was knocked down onto the ground, and her eyes were filled with disbelief. She pointed towards the captain of the Special Police Force and shouted loudly, "You dared to hit me? How dare you! Zhang Jie, if you still want to be the captain of the Special Police Force, you better arrest this bastard."

The Captain of the Special Police Force walked forwards with two more men. When they saw Yue Zhong's face, they immediately turned pale and they walked towards the wealthy woman and discreetly whispered, "Madam Shi, this man is the Yue Zhong from Stone Horse village."

Listening to Zhang Jie words, the woman also turned pale. But with eyes full of poison she glared at Yue Zhong and screamed, "So what if you are Stone Horse village's Yue Zhong? Does that mean you can anyhow hit anyone? You hit a woman, are you still a man? You are now in LongHai survivor camp and not Stone Horse Village. If you have the ability, come and kill me!"

The woman is the wife of the Deputy Secretary of LongHai Survival Camp. If Yue Zhong kills anyone here, then the men holding power in LongHai Survival camp will not sit still. If he wants to work with the Survivor Camp, then she would not be in any danger.

Yue Zhong just glanced at the woman and smiled. "Since you desired to die, I will grant you your wish!"

Zhang Jie felt a chill and drew his gun and stood in front of that

woman. He wants to prevent Yue Zhong from hurting anyone.

Yue Zhong moved at the same time as Zhang Jie, and he kicked Zhang Jie. The force of his kick sent Zhang Jie flying for a few meters.

“Oh shit!” Zhang Jie had just landed when he quickly get up.

“Save me, Save me”, at the same time, the woman was screaming aloud.

Zhang Jie turned his head and saw a zombie cat that was fanatically attacking the woman. With each bite, it tore apart a large chunk of the woman’s flesh.

The woman eyes were filled with fear, and she sobbed as she tried to drive away the infected cat. But she was frail and weak, and try as she might, she could not shake off the infected cat.

At the same time, all the other people in the area all avoided her and cleared the area near her. Not one of them was willing to help the woman. The zombie cat was infected and now carry the zombie virus. If the cat had scratched them, they would also be infected. Nobody was willing to do such a dangerous thing!

# Chapter 188

---

“Zombie Cat. Agility type. Special Skill: Viral infection.”

Yue Zhong coldly stared at the zombie cat, and this information seemed to flash in front of his eyes.

“Save me! Save me!” the gorgeous lady saw that the rest of the men had retreated to a safe distance away, and she despaired. She tried to fend off the cat while asking Yue Zhong for help.

Yue Zhong just glanced at the struggling woman and stepped back, while replying “Sorry, saving you is not part of my mission.”

Yue Zhong is a petty man who bore grudges, and he refused to save this woman who did not appreciate the fact that he had saved her from her infected dog.

Zhang Jie immediately shouted out a command to his men who were standing close by, “Kill the darn cat!”

The man replied, “Captain Zhang, the cat is currently on top of Madam Shi’s body. We have no confidence that we can kill the cat without hurting Madam Shi.”

The infected cat was on top of Madam Shi. If the men shoot the cat, there would be no guarantee that the bullet would not accidentally hit Madam Shi.

Zhang Jie considered for a moment. He gritted his teeth before approaching Yue Zhong for help, “Yue Zhong, please help to kill the zombie cat. Not for her, but for the rest of the men. Please, I am begging you.”

Right now, Yue Zhong is the only one capable of killing the zombie cat without hurting Madam Shi. Zhang Jie is not willing to risk his men’s life to attempt to save Mdm Shi, who had been infected with the zombie virus. He is also not prepared to shoot the cat and kill the cat and Madam Shi, at least not before Madam Shi had transformed into a zombie. He had no desire whatever to face



the wrath of her husband.

Yue Zhong glanced at Zhang Jie, and looked at the crowd of the frightened survivors. Then he stepped forwards, and a flash of light from his Tang Sabre appeared, and the zombie cat was chopped into two.

“It hurts! I want a doctor! I want a doctor!” As soon as she discovered that the zombie cat was dead, she immediately cried out aloud, requesting for medical aid. By this time, her body was missing chunks of flesh, and she was covered with blood, scaring the onlookers.

Yue Zhong looked the woman and immediately turned towards Zhang Jie. “She is already infected. You know that. Why didn’t you shoot her?”

Zhang Jie face was full of bitterness as he replied, “She is the wife of Secretary Gu. If I shot her before she turned into a zombie, I can forget about being a police officer.”

Yue Zhong looked at the various animals in the Special Administrative Region, and raised his eyebrows as he advised, “In my opinion, you should shoot all the cats and dogs here. There is a high probability that these creatures are all infected with the zombie virus.”

The cat and the dogs transformed to turn into zombie very quickly once they are infected. And their changes are very scary. A standard zombie is level 1, but an infected cat is level 10. Just one infected cat was able to create chaos in the area.

“I can’t do that! These cats and dogs are the pets of these influential men and women. Without the orders from the top, I cannot kill them.”

Each of the men in the Special Administrative Region had high status and participated in the decision making of LongHai survival camp at the executive level. All of the men in the Special Police

Force had no intention to offend anyone here, at least not without orders from their superiors. This matter concerned their survival – they might lose their job and starve to death like the commoners in LongHai Survivor Camp.

Yue Zhong's eyebrows twitched, but he did not say a word as he left the area. Right now, he is not Big Cliff village nor Stone Horse Village. In these two villages, just a word from Yue Zhong, and men will swiftly carry out the task.

Currently, he is standing in LongHai Survivor Camp. Right now, the two parties are in a joint alliance to fight against the zombies. He is not willing to compromise their current partnership just because of a small matter. At this moment, Yue Zhong's team could not withstand a horde of 100,000 zombies by themselves. The alliance is needed to fight against this formidable, common enemy.

The Special Police Force will have their hands full circumnavigating the swamp of politics while keeping the residents safe. As far as he is concerned, he had already achieved what he had set out to do – kill the Hunter. Let these men deal with whatever else crop out.

Seeing that Yue Zhong had turned to leave, Zhang Jie was about to say something, but he hesitated. In the end, he did not say anything and watched Yue Zhong as he left the area.

As he returned to the East Gate which he guards, he found that several zombies had been thrown onto the wall, and was immediately hacked apart by the men guarding the gate.

Yue Zhong silently observed the situation, and found that most of the zombies were your standard, everyday zombies, and posed little threat to these men.

Only the evolved zombies could present problems for these men who were protected by their Water Python Snakeskin Armour.

After watching for a while, he informed Kong Tianyu, “Please get the prisoners from the prisoners’ first platoon.”

Kong Tian Yu immediately carried out the order, and very quickly, thirty-six prisoners of war arrived.

Strongman Gao was also assigned to the first platoon. He and the rest of the prisoners stood in an orderly manner in front of Yue Zhong, and await Yue Zhong’s orders.

Yue Zhong activated his Art of Fear skill. Instantly a terrifying aura emerged from him.

All the prisoners were cowed by the skill, and felt as if they were tossed into the sea of zombies and being eaten alive. They could not stop trembling and shaking.

“So scary! Is this Captain Yue’s power? It is really frightening.” Strongman Gao was a brave man, but under the effects of the Art of the Fear skill, he could not help feeling weak in his legs. He dropped onto the floor and panted heavily as he tried to fight off the fear. But his eyes reveal his fears.

The rest of the prisoners did not fare any better. Many of them also collapsed onto the ground and whimpered in fear. Some of the men even peed in their pants.

Seeing that all of the men had been cowed into submission, Yue Zhong deactivated his skill. He spoke, “All of you had committed grave crimes. Normally I would shoot you. But I made a promise that if you surrendered, I would not kill you. Now I give you a chance to redeem yourselves. All you have to do is to kill 30 zombies to redeem yourselves. Once you hit the target, I will grant you the same rights as an ordinary citizen, or maybe, you could be a warrior.”

“Given your current strength, thirty zombies is not a small number. Most of you could not even reach this number with your current strength. Now, I will grant you the keys to unlock your

potential. Take these items, and fight. Then you will grow stronger as you evolved. If you are willing to be my men and sell your lives to me, you will be well fed, have a home and even a wife!”

As soon as he finished his speech, he waved his hand, and Thirty-six Tang Imitation Swords appeared in a pile in front of the men.

Once Strongman Gao saw the weapon, his eyes flashed with a gleam of light, and immediately grabbed a sword. “This is a weapon from the [System]”, he thought Weapons from the System is a key to the door of evolution. Without items from the [System], even if they killed hundreds of zombies and mutant beasts, they will not evolve.

All of the prisoners understood this point. They immediately picked up a Tang Imitation Sword, and their eyes shown their will to fight. If they fight, they will have a chance to grow stronger. The thought of growing stronger gave them the courage to take a risk.

“Remember, do not touch any skill books, treasure boxes or coins that were drop! If you do, you will be shot!”

“I recommend that after you have evolved, put your points on strength and stamina. Now, go and kill the zombies!” Yue Zhong pointed at the zombies on the wall.

The prisoners shouted out a weird battle cry as they took a steel shield and Tang Imitation Sword and charged towards the wall.

The third and fourth close combat team members retreated to rest.

These prisoners madly and crazily hacked apart the zombies with a fierce passion. Most of the men had some experience in fighting the zombies, and were no longer afraid of these slow moving creatures. Now that they have a Tang Imitation Sword, they must kill zombies to evolve and grow stronger. In this post-apocalypse world, having more strength means a better life.

After Zhao Xin had retreated, he asked Yue Zhong, “Captain Yue, why did you let us retreat?”

Now that the wall does not have any evolved zombies, the third and fourth squad was having a merry time killing the zombies. To them, slaying a zombie was no different from killing a chicken or a dog. Also, they could gain experience orbs. Many men could not understand why Yue Zhong made this decision.

Yue Zhong explained, “Our strength is currently too weak! We need to continuously strengthen our forces. You guys take a short rest first. We will need you and your team in battle again soon.”

Zhao Xin did not quite understand, but still he led his men away to rest.

“Skill book!” After killing a zombie, a skill book dropped from the corpse of the zombie.

Once the skill book appears, all the men in the nearby area seemed to turn green with jealousy and greed. They crept nearer towards the skill book. One of the prisoners’ eyes appeared to be full of desire as he stretched out his hands in an attempt to grab the book.

A skill book represents a powerful skill, and all of the men knew about this. The lure of power tempted many prisoners.

“Bang!” a shot rang out.

The prisoner who grabbed skill book suddenly had a bloody hole in his head, and as he collapsed, his eyes were filled with shock and disbelief.

The rest of the prisoners were surprised, and they looked towards the direction where the bullet was fired from. They saw that there were men who had type 03 assault rifles pointed towards them.

The prisoners’ heart turned cold, and they dare not even to take another glance at the skill book. Instead, they focused on killing

more zombies.

A soldier walked up and took the skill book and all the surrounding [System] coins. Many men also continuously dragged or tossed the corpses of zombies down the wall.

Thankfully the zombies' commander had no more new tactics and could only try to overwhelm the defenders with sheer numbers. Zombies after zombies were continuously lurched at the gates, and killed by the defenders.

The corpses of these zombies were tossed into a massive bonfire.

The battle continued until nightfall, and Yue Zhong rotated the prisoners, and newly trained soldiers to take turns to slay zombies.

A few men were careless and were injured by the zombies and became infected. They were shot immediately. Most of the prisoners and newly trained soldiers had evolved to level 2. At the same time, they overcome their fear of the zombies.

A typical human only needs to kill about three zombies with a weapon from the [System] to evolve to level 2. But the level 7 evolvers needs to kill tens of zombies to gain a level. For high-level evolvers like Yue Zhong, he needs to kill thousands of zombies to gain a level.

Having the prisoners and the recruits use Tang Imitation Swords and take turns killing the zombie horde could raise their level quickly. To ensure that they could withstand the might of a 100,000 zombie army, Yue Zhong had no choice but to allow them to become evolvers.

## Chapter 189 – The Zombie Horde Retreats

---

After carefully observing the zombies, Yue Zhong suddenly activated his encompassing body armour skill. White Bone immediately merged with Yue Zhong to form a bone armour. Then he immediately ordered, “Fire all weapons!”

Under Yue Zhong’s command, the men guarding the East Gate immediately let all hell break loose upon the sea of zombies.

Under the combined storm of the machine guns mixed with heavy artillery shells, many of the zombies seemed to drop down by the dozens. The carnage among the zombies was fields of wheat being harvested by sickles. Everywhere the bullet flew, zombies would drop down. Even the massive and extremely tough L2 zombies were also mowed down, as the armour penetrating bullets ripped holes in their bodies.

“Cease Fire! All elite marksmen, support me with covering fire. Our target are the H1 zombies!”

After Yue Zhong gave the order, he quickly stretches out his hand, and a bone spike reaches into the ground and quickly formed a bone ladder. With this bone ladder, he quickly descended the wall and faced the horde of zombies.

Translator notes:

Holy shit! Did he just do a Superman?

Little Greenie was soaring in the sky when it spot an opportunity. It also took advantage of the bullet storm where most of the zombies were still struggling to get up. Like a bolt of green lightning, it tore apart an H1 zombie.

As soon as Yue Zhong landed, he immediately rushed at full speed towards where the H1 zombies were. These H1 zombies who can shoot fireballs with devastating effectiveness are the greatest threat to Yue Zhong’s army. With the H1 zombies providing

covering fireballs, the elite marksmen dare not to raise their heads too high to snipe at the zombies. Also, the power of the fireballs could not be disputed. Each fireball had the terrible destructive power that could bomb a jeep into oblivion.

If these zombies continued to remain in the sea of zombies, even Yue Zhong's team would have a hard time with them.

Without the oppressive power of the hail of bullets, many of these zombies slowly picked themselves up from the ground. For those that had their body cut into halves, their upper body continued to crawl towards Yue Zhong.

The area surrounding Yue Zhong was filling with the scene of zombies that were rising again.

For each step that Yue Zhong took, he would involuntarily step on some limbs, rotten body parts or disgusting bits of shredded flesh. With the numerous zombies that were slowly getting up, it was as if Yue Zhong had stepped into hell.

The L2 zombies recovered much faster than the normal zombies, and got up relatively quickly. They attempt to surround Yue Zhong.

The group of H1 zombies also change their aim as they turned their heads towards Yue Zhong.

The next second, Yue Zhong sense of danger kicked into overdrive as he sensed impending doom coming his way. He immediately activated his shadow steps skill. This skill grants him a massive increase in agility, and like a ghost, he seemed to disappear from the area as he navigated through the sea of zombies.

Twenty fireballs emerged and shot towards Yue Zhong.

Although his speed was outstanding, he did not manage to escape unscathed from chained attack. Two of the fireballs landed on his body.



The Mutant King Rat hide armour managed to prevent the fireballs from piercing holes in his body, but even then, the force behind the two fireballs was no joking matter, as the impact sent Yue Zhong flying for 7 to 8 metres. Many of his bones were fractured, and he felt pain all over his body.

If not for the fact that Yue Zhong's body is thrice as sturdy as a typical human, even with the Mutant King Rat hide armour, this blow would have shattered all the bones in his body, killing him instantly.

“Bang! Bang!”

After the H1 zombies had fired their fireballs, the sounds of several gunshots rang out. One after another, holes suddenly appeared in the heads of the H1 zombies. Each H1 zombie that were hit collapsed lifelessly onto the ground.

The snipers on the wall had engaged the H1 zombies and took the opportunity to snipe at them.

Each H1 zombie may possess incredible attack power, but they were physically fragile. Even regular bullets can penetrate their bodies, not to mention the sniper's specialised rounds.

Each of the snipers had unerring accuracy. After three rounds of shots rang out, all of the H1 zombies had been decimated.

But the hides of L2 zombies were too tough. Only at a very close range would the sniper rifles be effective. Or only specially made explosive bullets that would blow apart the head with each hit could hurt them.

Yue Zhong had a limited supply of large-calibre shells and large-calibre sniper rifle bullets. Therefore, if there is no need to, he prefers not to let the shooters use these bullets to bomb the L2 zombies' head.

“Looks like when there is a chance, I must also improve my Vitality attribute as well.” Thought Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong crawled up from the ground, and equipped the Tang Sabre. With this weapon, he was easily able to cleave through the standard zombies around him. He was very pale. The bone where the fireball had struck is likely to be shattered. His clothes were in tatters, and the pain screamed out each time he swings his sabre.

The Tang Sabre is much sharper than the Tang Imitation Sword by at least five times. It cut through the zombies like a hot knife through butter.

The evolved L1, S1 and L2 zombies also surrounded Yue Zhong from all directions.

On the wall, the sound of gunshots unceasingly rang out. Other than the L2 zombies, most of the evolved zombies were shot dead by the elite marksmen.

Without the threat of H1 zombies, Little Greenie shows off his might. It dived and ripped off the head of an L2 zombie, and escaped before the slow zombies could retaliate. Then it repeated its actions on other L2 zombies.

Yue Zhong charged at full speed towards the L2 zombie. In no time at all, he reached the front of an L2 zombie

A massive towering fist crushed towards Yue Zhong as the L2 zombie tried to smash the puny human in front of it into pieces.

With a very slight movement, Yue Zhong managed to avoid the blow, and chopped his Tang Sabre at the neck of the L2 zombie.

The sharpness of the sword and Yue Zhong's enhanced strength could only open a large hole in the neck, but did not manage to fully decapitate the L2 zombie.

Another massive fist punched out towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong kept his sabre, and stepped aside, narrowly avoiding the death blow.

"The L2 toughness is really extraordinary! Looks that a level 2

Tang Blade is not enough to finish off an L2 zombie. I need to have a much higher strength to cut off its head with one blow.”

Yue Zhong used his superior speed to reach the back of the L2 zombie, and kicked at the L2 zombie with all his might. He was able to knock the L2 off balance and the L2 fell heavily to the floor, crushing a few zombies in its fall. He immediately stepped on the L2’s head and activated his Devil Fire skill, and burned the L2 head into ashes.

Keeping the items that the L2 had dropped with a single swipe, Yue Zhong continued to wave his Tang Sabre, and easily cleaved apart an L1 and an S1 zombie that charged towards him. He then grabbed the opportunity to rush towards another L2 zombie.

Like a panther, Yue Zhong used the L2 zombie’s legs as leverage to climb to the back of the L2 zombie. He reached out with a hand and placed it on the massive L2 zombie’s head. A blast of Devil Fire emerged, and the L2 zombie’s head also turned into ash.

Without the threat of H1 zombies, under the protection of the snipers, Yue Zhong was like a shark in the sea of tiny fishes.

There were too many zombies for Yue Zhong to avoid, and many zombies had managed to land a hit on him. However, the attack of the standard zombies could not even scratch the bone armour, while a swing of his Tang Sabre would readily cleave apart all but the mighty L2 zombies.

Yue Zhong only dared to dive into the ocean of zombies as he had multiple layers of protective clothes. He had the bone armour that was formed from merging with White Bones. He had a Water Python Snakeskin Armour. Also, he was wearing the Mutant King Rat’s hide armour. As well, he was wearing a Level 3 vest from the system to protect him. With so many layers of protection, he was quite safe, even among the horde of zombies. Without these protections, he would have long been infected with the zombie virus and turned into one of them.

As Yue Zhong used his Devil Fire to burn off the head of the 20th L2 zombie, suddenly the sea of zombie seemed to retreat like it was experiencing low tide.

The evolved zombies were the fastest to run. They ran at the head of the pack, as if spearheading the retreat. These evolved zombies are the main weapons that the Z series of commander zombie use to kill the men. Without the evolved zombies, it would be tough, if not impossible to destroy the walls of the Survivor Camp.

Little Greenie was not going to let go of this excellent opportunity. Like Yue Zhong, it had no qualms about stabbing retreating zombies in the back. It rapidly drove down like lightning on the retreating zombies, and managed to slay three more L2 zombies before flying back to the city wall in satisfaction.

It is unclear that there were how many H1 zombies among the sea of zombies, but Yue Zhong was not willing to risk the life of Little Greenie to find out.

Looking at the retreating zombies, Yue Zhong finally heaved a sigh of relief. He used another bone spike to create a bone ladder to return to the top of the wall.

After the wave of zombies were driven back, it is time to examine the loss and gains, clear up the battlefield, eat and rest, and so on.

After the first day of battle, the entire survival camp had destroyed close to 15,000 zombies. But at the same, more than 400 men were lost. The West, North and South gates had lost the most number of men. Most of those who perished were killed in new tactics that launched the first wave of zombies, where the S2 zombies, Hunter zombies and L1 zombies attacked in force. After these zombies had been taken care of, the number of men who fell in battle dropped significantly.

But this fight was very costly for the LongHai Survival Camp regarding resources. In the span of one day, about one-third of the

ammunitions were spent. The biggest waste of ammo was when Lei Cheng's new troops did not have much combat experience, and madly fired at the zombies from afar, losing an enormous number of bullets. After the evolvers and survivors had entered the fray, the wastage of ammunition was kept to a minimum.

In this battle, Yue Zhong had gained 13 skill books, 42 white colour treasure box, 4 green colour treasure box, and 2,000 [System coins].

Of the 13 treasure books, There were:

Two Level 1 "Earth spike" skill book.

One Level 2 "High-speed movement."

One level 2 "Solid as rocks."

One level 2 "Mastery of languages."

One level 3 "Night Vision."

Three level 1 skill book, "Accelerate."

Three level 1 skill book, "Summon Skeleton."

One level 3 skill book, "Illusion".

Of the 42 white colour treasure box, 10 of the boxes were empty. The rest of boxes yield 20 Tang Imitation Swords, 2 level 1 protective vest, three pairs of white gloves, three pairs of strength enchanting shoes, and two sticks of beginner's staff.

The four green boxes yield a level 2 Tang Sabre, a level 2 protective vest, a level 2 white cloak and a level 3 strength enhancing ring.

Level 1 Earth Spike: You may summon a 2 m spike of earth of attack your enemies. Cost 6 spiritual power points. The non-mage class may only cast this spell once a day, unless the user level the skill up to level 2. Will consume 100 [System] coins if you learn this skill.

Level 2 Solid as rocks. Using this skill will allow you to increase your Endurance by 30 points for 30 seconds. Using this skill will cost 15 stamina points.

Level 3 Night Vision. Allow you to see in the dark. Passive skill.

Level 1 skill: Summon Skeleton. This skill will summon a weak skeleton to fight alongside you. Each summons will cost 5 points of Spiritual Power. You are limited to summoning five skeletons.

Level 3 Ability: Illusion-this skill can make enemies panic and create chaos and confusion among enemies. Activating this skill will cost 5 points of Spiritual Power and 5 points of stamina. Each second of maintaining this spell will drain 4 points of spiritual power. This skill is not effective against creatures who have more spiritual power than yourself. The greater the difference between your spiritual power and your target's spiritual power, the more effective the illusion seemed to be.

“Level 2 item: White cloak. Wearing this cloak increase your Endurance by +3.”

“Level 3 item: Strength enhancing ring. Wearing this ring increase your strength by +6.”

# Chapter 190

---

Yue Zhong gave all the items to his men, but he kept the Strength Enhancing Ring, and the White Cloak.

Having received the skill book and items, Yue Zhong's men seemed to grow in power. Ji Qing Wu's Tang Imitation Sword had been swapped with the much sharper Tang Sabre. With her enhance cutting-edge skill, even the Mutant Rat King would find it hard to resist being slice apart by her skill.

That night, after Yue Zhong had his dinner, he brought the first team and the second team to observe the situation. The Z series of zombies had suddenly displayed intelligence and was able to use the evolved zombie to spread chaos among the defenders. If not for the powerful evolvers in the Yue Zhong's team guarding the East gate, the Survivor Camp would have fallen by now.

Yue Zhong dared not to underestimate the Z series zombie. The Z series zombie may not be as smart as humans, but with an army of 100,000 zombies; it could overwhelm the defenders with sheer numbers. Just one mistake and the Survivor Camp would be overrun.

In a large villa, Lei Cheng looked at his son Lei Sheng, and asked, "Have you finished your preparations?"

Lei Sheng raises his eyebrows as he spoke, "Dad, do we really need to do this? Now, we should still be able to hold on."

Lei Cheng scolded his son, "You idiot! Had you not seen the reality? If we go on, all our men will be killed. Even if we protected the Survivor Camp, if all are men are killed, there is no meaning to this. While we may not necessary need to leave, we need to make the appropriate preparations so that in the case of emergencies, we will be ready to flee."

Lei Sheng immediately fled from the room, "I will immediately

make the necessary preparations.”

Lei Cheng sighed. He stood up from the chair and walked towards the window. He stared at the moon outside, and his eyes seemed to flash with countless thoughts.

Under the cover of that night, although all seemed to be calm in LongHai Survivor Camp, under the facade, the schemes and ploys of men were set in motion.

In the morning, at the first light, the sea of zombie returned like the high tide, and surround the area on all sides.

With the benefit of their previous experience, all the commanders guarding the gates only allow their men to shoot at the zombies, and aim for the head of the zombies. The zombies were nothing but target practice for the new soldiers to gain more shooting experience.

“What is happening? Why are there no evolved zombies?” Yue Zhong observed the situation, and immediately discovered something is wrong. Although there are throngs of zombies there, there was no sight of a single massive L2 zombie.

Without any L2 zombies, the standard zombies did not pose any threat to the soldiers. And were nothing more than target practice for Yue Zhong’s men.

Just as Yue Zhong could not make heads or tails of the situation, at the West Gate, suddenly over 160 L2 zombies and L1 zombies appeared. They host up over 70 H1 zombies.

As soon as the 70 zombies appeared, only 10 of these zombies fired the fireballs. These fireballs burn with searing intensity, and in a short while, three new soldiers and two snipers were turned into ash.

The 160 L2 zombies immediately caught S1 zombies near them and hurled them towards the top of the wall.

In a few moments, suddenly slightly over 100 S1 zombies were



successfully launched at the wall.

In the west gate, there were three evolvers and 46 survivors wielding machetes.

The defender killed only slightly more than ten S1 zombies. The rest of S1 zombies were like an unstoppable tornado as they ripped into the ranks of the evolvers and the survivors. Along the way, the defenders who were in the way of these whirlwinds of death were promptly torn to shreds.

As the S1 zombies reached the ranks of the men, they used their claws to stab at the soft belly of the men, and then gorge on the intestines and stomach that spilled out from the wounds. The survivors that did not die from the hit howled in agony, and their screams lowered the morale of the other survivors.

Seeing how fierce and scary these S1 zombies were, the rest of the survivors lost their will to fight and rushed down the wall like a torrent of water.

“Damn it! The situation had developed accordingly to what my dad had predicted!” Lei Sheng thought.

Seeing this situation, Lei Cheng turned pale and immediately grabbed Xu Zhenggang by the collar, and shouted out aloud, “Platoon Leader Xu, I command you to hold the fort. Even if all the men were killed, and you are the only defender left, you must not allow these things to enter the Survivor camp. Do you understand?”

Xu Zhenggang face was full of determination as he replied, “Yes, Commander Lei!”

As Xu Zhenggang returned to the camp, Lei Cheng immediately sat in a military jeep and drove off.

Not long after, the doors of the South Gate was opened wide, and 5 IFVs, 12 machine guns installed car, 26 hummers, 12 Dongfeng lorries, 7 modified bus, and four tankers sped out of the LongHai

## Survival Camp.

Looking at the vehicles, numerous zombies surrounded the vehicles, and sought to block the road in front of the cars.

The type ZSL92 armour IFV was covered in thick armour. Along the way, it flung aside all the ordinary zombies as it knocked them down and crushed them underfoot. Regular zombies could not penetrate the armour of this vehicle.

Under the might of the IFVs, the standard zombies could not even have the strength to resist. The reason the military could clear Longhai survivor camp of zombies was, in no small part, due to the might of these vehicles.

The vehicles behind closely followed after the bloody path that the IFVs had open up, and escaped out of the survivor camp.

Once the vast number of cars left, they left the south gate wide opened, and massive swarms of zombies entered into the city.

“Captain Yue! Captain Yue! Lei Cheng had fled with his men!” Just when Yue Zhong was suspicious of the behaviour of the zombies, the walkie-talkie suddenly rang out. From the other end was the voice of a team member who was shocked and disappointed.

“Damn this bastard!!!” hearing this report, it was like a bomb had detonated inside Yue Zhong’s head.

Lei Cheng may not be a good man, but his military soldiers are not to be underestimated. If not for Lei Cheng’s putting in all his strength to resist the zombie invasion, it is likely the zombies would have overwhelmed the survivor camp on its first day. Yue Zhong could not hope to defend the entire camp by himself. His men may be top notched, but he did not have enough men.

“Which gate did he escaped from? What is the situation there?” With great difficulty, Yue Zhong forced himself to remain calm, and asked the one who reported the situation.

If all three gates were breached, Yue Zhong could only immediately led his men to leave the area.

Without the walls, nothing is stopping the zombies. Without preparations, there is no hope of fighting a 100,000 zombie army.

“The South Gate is lost. A massive number of zombies had entered the city, and it is chaos in the city.”

“I understand!”

As soon as the sound had stopped, from the walkie talkie came the urgent voice of Xu Zhenggang. “Yue Zhong, I am Xu Zhenggang. The situation in the West gate is critical, I could only hold on for five more minutes. I need your help!”

Yue Zhong replied, “You hold on for five more minutes. Within 5 minutes, I will definitely bring men and arrive to help you!”

He immediately made his decision: “Kong Tianyu, Chen Shi Tou, Zhao Xing, Xiao Ming. The four of you bring all your men with you to the South gate. Lang Zi, bring two squad with you and follow Kong Tianyu. Your job is to maintain order. If you see anyone setting fire or robbing or raping, etc., kill them immediately!”

“Ji Qing Wu, Bai He and I will bring the first, third and fourth evolvers squad to support Xu Zhenggang. Wang Shuang, you are the highest ranked commander over here. If there are any refugees, accept them. Check for any injuries and shoot them if you suspect that they are infected. Also, kill any animals you see immediately!”

After giving out the commands, Yue Zhong brought four teams of evolvers towards the West Gate.

Along the way, there were chaos everywhere. The survivors had gone crazy and lost all hope. They begin to kill, rob, commit arson, snatch items, rape, etc. It was as if all hell had broken loose, and the worse of humanity had emerged.

Looking at the zombie entering the city, most of the survivors

had lost all hope. They could not see tomorrow, and were carrying out their darkest desires.

A man's eyes were red as he ripped apart a woman's clothes, as if he intended to rape her in front of everyone in board daylight.

The woman screamed for help, and was in tears, as she shouted with her might, but nobody appeared to help her. Instead, her screams brought forward two more men who were similarly driven insane with lust.

Looking at the two men, the first men just smiled, and said, "Let's gang rape her."

The two men nodded their heads, and rushed forwards. One of them tore off the rest of the clothes of the woman, while the other men took off his pants.

"Bang!" A shot rang out. One of the would-be rapists collapsed as a bullet hole emerged from his head.

Looking at the dead man, the other two men, immediately fled in all directions.

The woman who was saved looked up and saw a car driving pass at high speed, and it did not show any intention of stopping.

Yue Zhong had killed the man, but he did not step up to save the woman. Because right now, the situation is critical. He needs to bring men to support Xu Zhenggang. He did not have the luxury of time to stop the car and rescue the woman. He could only leave this task for Lang Zi and his team.

Very quickly, Yue Zhong brought his men towards the west gate.

At this time, many of the guns had turned white hot from overuse. The IFV had stopped firing. Flame King Gu continuously launched fireballs after fireballs to kill S1 zombies.

The steel wire net and the steel wire trap had rendered great service, as the net caught several high-speed S1 zombies. Some S1

zombies fell prone as they tripped on the steel wire trap. The men quickly killed each S1 that were trapped.

# Chapter 191

---

In engaging the S1 zombies in close combat, many survivors had been scratched by the S1 zombies, and cried out in pain. These S1 zombies were far more powerful than regular zombies.

If Yue Zhong did not have various armours protecting him, he also dared not to fight with more than twenty S1 zombies at a time. Even if he is very careful, it is inevitable that he will be hit by at least one S1 zombie. The unlucky survivors found out the scariness of the S1 zombies the hard way.

If not for the fact guns were being pointed at the survivors and that all who retreated will be shot, many of the survivors would have fled a long time ago. The steel wire nets, the trip wire trap and supporting covering fire had helped some survivors to last a bit longer. Even then, once the heavy weapons stopped firing, more and more S1 rushed forwards, and the defence line is at risk of being overwhelmed.

Yue Zhong immediately made his way to Xu Zhenggang, and pointed towards an IFV and asked, “Why did you not use the autocannon?”

In this critical time, the Type ZPT90 25 mm autocannon is a magnificent weapon. One swept could kill most of the zombies.

Xu Zhenggang face was full of sorrow as he explained, “No more ammo! If you were just a bit later, we would have been overrun with zombies.”

Without ammo, the IFV is just an armour carrier, and could not show off its power. The lack of ammunition is a deciding factor in swinging the tide between men and zombies.

“Ji Qing Wu, Team 1, Team 3 and Team 4, follow me!” Yue Zhong immediately led his forces to attempt to hold the line.

Bai He is a one of the snipers who took command of the armed

squad. He was very calm as he continuously provides covering fire. Each shoot of his will take out an S1 zombie with a headshot.

The place seemed to be overran with S1 zombies. Yue Zhong led his team towards the S1 zombies. His speed is incredible and with a flash of his Tang Sabre, three S1 zombies were instantly destroyed.

White Bones who was standing besides Yue Zhong, took out a massive white bone axe, and destroy all incoming S1 zombies like a whirlwind of destruction.

Ji Qing Wu was not inferior to either of them, as the Tang Sabre in her hands waved a deadly dance that decapitate a zombie with each hit.

Yue Zhong's Tang Sabre continuously lashed and chopped out, cleaving apart S1 zombies with each hit. He did not use any special skills, and just constantly hack and slash with his sabre. More and more S1 zombies perished until his blade. Occasionally, an S1 zombie got lucky and landed a hit on him, but his armour negate any damage done to him.

The rest of the men fared no better, and was hit several times by the horde of S1 zombies. But with the Water Python Snakeskin armour, the strikes of the S1 zombies could not hurt them. Instead, any S1 zombies that hit them were slain in the brief period these zombies stopped moving.

Each of the S1 zombies are all level 10 beasts. Their deaths dropped large experience orbs for the men, allowing the team to evolve further. This is especially so for the weaker team members in team 3 and team 4 squad members. Each kill often results in an instant level up, giving them a huge morale boost.

Under Yue Zhong, White Bones and Ji Qing Wus' leadership, the four teams continuously kill as they pushed forwards. Each addition step forward was extremely difficult, due to the chaos and massive numbers of S1 zombie.

Yue Zhong team may be powerful, but outside of the gate, there were more than 100 L2 zombies that were unceasing tossing zombies into the city. The number of zombies they killed could not keep up with the rate at which the L2 zombies toss more zombies onto the wall of the city. Each step forwards were getting increasingly difficult.

“Retreat!” Yue Zhong saw that the tide of zombies were unending, and it is impossible to continue this way. Therefore he sounded the order to retreat.

If this continues, the four squads will exhaust all their stamina. It would be impossible to climb to the top of the tower gate this way.

Under Yue Zhong’s command, the four squadrons of men immediately retreat towards the makeshift fortification where Xu Zhenggang was.

“Ji Qing Wu, come with me!” Yue Zhong activated his skill combined body armour, and carried Ji Qing Wu with one hand. Then he fired a bone shard, and extended it as he flew up towards the wall.

On the wall, Yue Zhong was able to see more than 100 L2 zombies that continuously tossed more and more zombies onto the wall. The wall was already filled to brim with zombies, and the number of zombies continued to increase.

Almost all the zombies were evolved zombies. While the first few waves of zombies were all S1 zombies, the later waves of zombies were all L1 zombies. In an army of 100,000 zombies, there were only hundreds zombies that had their 2nd evolution. But there were thousands of zombies that had their first evolution, and these zombies filled the wall.

The Z series commander zombie seemed to have learnt a lesson from yesterday’s failure. It sent a large number of normal zombies to surround the entire area to prevent the leaders of the four gates from allocating more soldiers to help the other gates. Then it



gathered all its forces to attempt to break down the weakest link – the west gate. In no time at all, the west gate was overwhelmed.

Yue Zhong tossed a hand grenade into the wall. With a loud “Bang”, the hand grenade cleared a large circle in the walls, as many zombies were blown into pieces.

Yue Zhong carried Ji Qing Wu and landed on the cleared area.

Below the wall, the H1 zombies continuously fired balls of flames onto the walls, and created large debris.

All the surrounding zombies surrounded Yue Zhong.

“Protect me”, Yue Zhong took out a Type 89 QJZ 8 submachine gun, and fired madly at the H1 zombies.

Under the barrage of fire from the powerful weapon, several H1 zombies were shot and dropped onto the floor.

Ji Qing Wu stood by Yue Zhong’s sides, and waved her Tang Sabre as she slay several S1 and L1 zombies. She guarded Yue Zhong’s back.

Little Greenie also reached the wall, and with a flap of its massive wings, 7-8 evolved zombies would be sent flying. Its beak can smash apart an evolved zombie’s head and kill it.

As Yue Zhong was aiming at the H1 zombies, he suddenly felt a warning of danger from his danger sense skill. He immediately squatted down.

The next moment, three balls of fire landed on the spot where Yue Zhong was standing a second ago, and one of the balls of fire destroyed the Type 89, QJZ 8 Submachine gun.

“Damn it!” Yue Zhong was sadden by the loss of this weapon. This weapon had very good power, and could be deployed in numerous situation. He only had two of these firearms in his spatial ring.

Yue Zhong took out his last Type 89 QJZ8 Submachine gun and

madly fire at the H1 zombies again.

In a short span of time, over 30 H1 zombies had been slain by the bullets. The H1 zombie fire at Yue Zhong again.

This time, Yue Zhong was well prepared. As soon as the danger sense was activated, he immediately grabbed the gun and crouched down.

After the fireballs had missed him, Yue Zhong then picked up the submachine gun and continued to fire at the H1 zombies.

Seeing that the H1 zombies were being wipe out by Yue Zhong, the L1 zombies hosted the remaining H1 zombies. From the mouth of these H1 zombies, fireball after fireball were launched and struck the wall.

“All the 90 H1 zombies should have attacked by now. I should have about 15 mins grace.” Yue Zhong was shooting at the zombies. But at the same time, he was also counting the number of fireballs that were lurched towards him.

He turned around and found that Ji Qing Wu was perspiring heavily and seemed to be panting. Although the time spent is not very long, but she had to handle a massive number of zombies. This used up her stamina very quickly.

“Do you still have any more stamina?” Yue Zhong stepped up and killed two L1 zombies, before asking Ji Qing Wu.

“Yes.” Ji Qing Wu looked at Yue Zhong, and continued to decapitate another S1 zombie.

Yue Zhong laughed and carried Ji Qing Wu and jumped down from the wall, towards the zombie side.

In the sky, Little Greenie also took advantage of the time when the H1 zombies could not fire any more fireballs and flew down and destroyed an L2 zombie.

Under the wall, everywhere was filled to the brim with standard

zombies. There was nowhere to land nor was there any safe space. Yue Zhong continuously shoots out bone shards and using a series of bone shard ladders, made his way towards the group of H1 zombies.

The H1 zombies are the greatest threat to Yue Zhong. As long as there is even one H1 zombie, his escape path would be filled with danger.

After several bone spike ladders, Yue Zhong reached the cluster of H1 zombies. He immediately land down and with a single stroke of his sabre, sliced an H1 and the L1 zombie that was supporting the H1 into two.

The area was full of zombies, and Ji Qing Wu began her waving her sword dance and start a massacre. 6-7 zombies were killed immediately. But the number of zombies were unending, and continued to creep forwards. She could smell the disgusting thick smell of the zombies' rotten flesh.

In the sea of zombie, everywhere was filled with standard zombies. It is very hard for agility type evolvers like Ji Qing Wu to battle. If Ji Qing Wu was the only one who fell into the tide of zombie, she would, without a doubt, drown in the sea of zombies. This is not because she is not strong enough, but rather because the number of zombies is too overwhelming and did not give her any space to move about to take advantage of her agility.

Yue Zhong's right hand fired a shard of bone, and immediately took him and Ji Qing Wu away, towards another H1 zombie that was lurking nearby. He easily cleaved the zombie into two.

Little Greenie also followed Yue Zhong, and attacked continuously, and destroy several H1 zombies.

Under Yue Zhong's and Little Greenie's hunt for the H1 zombie, the H1 zombies dropped like flies. Just when approximately 10 H1 zombies were remaining, the H1 zombies suddenly jumped down from the heads of the L1 zombies and hid themselves among the

zombie horde.

With the number of zombies in the area, looking for an H1 zombie is like looking for a needle in a stack of hay. Yue Zhong did not continue to chase the H1 zombies, but instead used the bone ladder to go towards the L2 zombies.

These L2 zombies are the main siege machines that lurched more and more zombies to the wall. If these L2 zombies fall, it will reduce the pressure on the defenders within the wall.

In a few seconds, Yue Zhong reached an L2 zombie. He raised his gun and burst apart an L2 zombie's head.

After destroying the L2 zombie, Yue Zhong continued to move around and kill more L2 zombies.

“Congratulations on reaching Level 35. You have gained two attributes points.”

After Yue Zhong had killed about 15 L2 zombies, he finally gained another level and became level 35.

# Chapter 192

---

Yue Zhong chose to put his attribute points into agility and stamina, and carried Ji Qing Wu as they continued to slay L2 zombies with his stinger gun. Then they would go to the next L2 zombie by swinging from bone spikes ladder to bone spikes ladders. After so many days of practicing his shooting, he could hit the head of an L2 zombie with 100% accuracy within a range of 50 m.

Having discovered this great enemy, the L2 zombies nearby shoved aside the zombies in their way as they charged towards Yue Zhong.

With great speed, Yue Zhong carried Ji Qing Wu and arrived in front of an L2 zombie.

The L2 zombie fists connected on the bone ladder, and shattered it in one hit. Ji Qing Wu and Yue Zhong began to descend from the sky.

Ji Qing Wu immediately activated her Cutting edge enhancement skill, and her Tang Sabre seemed to flash out a ray of light. The extremely tough L2 zombies that could resist bullets could not resist the sharpness of her Sabre and was cleaved in two.

“Amazing! Her special skill is indeed the bane of these L2 zombies.” Looking at the ease in which Ji Qing Wu sliced apart the L2 zombies, Yue Zhong could not help praising Ji Qing Wu.

As soon as Ji Qing and Yue Zhong landed on the ground, the surrounding zombies all crept forward to attack.

Yue Zhong ignored these zombies, and again, he held on to Ji Qing Wu’s waist as he fired another bone shard and rose upwards. Then he charged towards the next L2 zombie.

The L2 zombie also quickly fell to Ji Qing Wu’s sword, and a massive globe of experience orb entered into Ji Qing Wu’s body. Ji

Qing Wu finally leveled up.

Under Yue Zhong's guidance, Ji Qing Wu continuously used her blade to kill the higher level L2 zombies. Her level continued to raise, and she reached level 20.

After Ji Qing Wu, Yue Zhong and Little Greenie killed about 80 L2 zombies, Yue Zhong carried Ji Qing Wu and jumped onto Little Greenie's back. Little Greenie carried them back towards the city.

At this time, Ji Qing Wu was running very low on stamina, and she could not continue to battle. Although the cutting edge enhancement is very powerful, it also drains stamina rapidly.

In one attack, over 100 L2 zombies were killed, and only about 60 L2 zombies remain. These L2 zombies continued to throw more zombies towards the wall, but the rate at which they were throwing had decreased by a lot. The pressure on the defenders also reduced by a corresponding amount.

When Yue Zhong returned to the West Gate, he found that the four squads of evolvers were still fighting the zombies, but many of them looked exhausted.

In fighting with a huge number of zombies, the stamina and spiritual power deplete at an astonishing rate. Most of the evolvers can kill over 100 zombies in a day. But only if there are periods of lull time in between for them to rest and recharge their stamina. Against a horde of zombies, they could only kill about 20 each. When facing a group of zombies, they must continuously attack, and hack apart the zombies without any breaks. The pressure is very taxing on them physically and mentally, and the rate at which their stamina and spiritual power get drained is also very rapid.

Looking at the situation, Yue Zhong immediately summoned Wang Shuang and ordered, "Quickly make arrangements for men to bring two higher-level squads of prisoners."

He needs to have two more squad of men before he could

retaliate against the zombies and regain control of the West gate.

“Yes, Captain Yue!”

Not long after, two vehicles carrying the prisoners arrived. After equipping the Tang Sword and the Steel Shields, the prisoners charged towards the wall.

Yue Zhong had been investing his points into stamina at each level. At this time, he still feels energetic. He took the lead together with White Bones and brought his men to attempt to take back the wall.

Without the threat of H1 zombies attacking it, Little Greenie continuously destroyed L2 zombies with its sharp claws.

It took Yue Zhong over 1 hour to kill all the zombie and retake the West wall. But twelve of the prisoners were infected with the zombie virus.

L2 zombies continued to perish under Little Greenie’s might. When there were only about twenty L2 zombies left, Yue Zhong allowed Little Greenie to hunt the zombies as it desires.

Twenty L2 zombies could no longer post any threat to the West Gate.

Yue Zhong had not even taken a rest, when the walkie talkie sounded out Kong Tianyu’s distress signal. “Yue Zhong, I am requesting support at the South gate. Right now, we managed to stop the zombies from continuing to enter the city, but we do not have enough men to retake the South Gate. Please send us some support!”

“Is there a lot of evolved zombies in the South Gate?” Yue Zhong asked.

Kong Tianyu replied, “No. There are no evolved zombies. However, the number of normal zombies is way too many. No matter how many we killed, there are always more to be killed. We were forced to retreat due to their overwhelming numbers.”

Kong Tian Yu's four squads of men were all evolvers. But the number of zombies is unending. They were severely outnumbered and could only retreat.

"All right, I understand! I immediately bring some soldier to support you. Before that, help me stop the speed at which the zombies enter the city!"

Yue Zhong had just finished his conversation with Kong Tian Yu when he spied the IFV. He immediately asked Xu Zhenggang, "Is this still operational?"

Xu Zhenggang replied, "It can still move for about 60 km more."

"Drive! We need to support the South Gate!" Yue Zhong grabbed Xu Zhenggang leapt into IFV.

The IFV was quickly started and driven towards the South Gate.

All exits along the main road from the South Gate had been sealed with Steel Wire Mesh. The alleys and streets branching from main road were blocked and sealed. There was only one way in which the zombies may travel on – the main road.

The main road was about 1000 m long, and it was filled with massive numbers of zombies.

At the front of the zombie horde, 46 evolvers were like monkeys as they jumped forwards to kill the zombies at the front of the zombie throng, and immediately leaping back to avoid the retaliation of the zombies.

There were too many zombies, and the zombies seemed to pour into the street like a river. Those zombies that collapsed were stepped on by the next wave of zombies and continued to advance.

Yue Zhong's men also dared not to charge into the river of zombies. They were afraid of being surrounded. Although each of them was wearing Water Python Snakeskin armour, they would also be smashed into meat paste if they were continuously attacked on all sides, or even worse, stepped on by so many zombies.



This type of attack and retreat tactics, while effective, trended to deplete stamina at a very fast rate. Many of the men were breathing heavily. If not for the fact that they all have continuously improved on their strength and stamina, they could not have last so long.

Just when the men were feeling totally exhausted, an IFV charged in and rammed against the zombies.

The standard zombies that knocked by the IFV fell onto the floor. The IFV weigh several tons. Therefore, it is no surprise that the zombies were crushed into meat paste under the wheels of the vehicle.

The IFV seemed to open up a path among the zombies as it charged through the middle of the road and mowed down the zombies in its path. Only the zombies on left or right side of the road remained standing.

Seeing this, the morale of the men all rose sharply.

Kong Tian Yu shouted loudly as he rushed towards the remaining zombies, "Captain Yue had brought reinforcements! Attack!"

Under the leadership of Kong Tian Yu, the four squads of men renewed their vigour as they hacked the zombies apart.

Under the might of the IFV, most of the zombies were mowed down. Under Yue Zhong's command, the IFV continued to charge out of the gate, and continued to trample zombies in front of it. Right now, there were too many zombies, and the IFV could thin out the herd.

Not long after, two more squads of men arrive, and joined Kong Tian Yu to decimate the remaining zombies.

After making sure the situation is stable, Yue Zhong then allows the men to drive the IFV back into the city, and closed the gate.

The battle was physically exhausting. Even with 66 points of stamina, Yue Zhong was fatigued.

Kong Tian Yu was covered with blood, as he greeted Yue Zhong. “What is our next step?”

Yue Zhong replied, “You lead a squad of men to defend here. If there are too many zombies, and you could not withstand the attack, you may retreat anytime.”

Yue Zhong had too little men. He also could not afford to spend too many soldiers in guarding the South gate. The East Gate is his camp. In the East gate, there were a lot of food, ammo, and other items, and would not be easily lost.

Kong Tian Yu thought for a moment, and immediately brought some men towards the walls of the South Gate.

When Lei Cheng fled with some soldiers, the entire camp became a sea of chaos as anarchy reigns. Across the survival camp, many survivors displayed disorderly and violent behaviour, such as rape, murder, rob, arson, etc. Everywhere was chaos.

Four men were carrying torches and continued to burn whatever they could. As they watched the fire burned everything down, they laughed as if they were mad. Only this crazy act of arson could let them settle the fear and unease in their hearts.

“Bang” a shot resounded, and a hole appears on a survivor’s head. As it dropped onto the floor, its facial expression was showing complete disbelief.

The other three survivors turned around, and saw Lang Zi and five other armed men rushing towards them.

The three survivors saw the gun in Lang Zi’s hand and turned pale. They tried to flee.

“Bang!” Another shot rang out, and another survivor was also shot died by Lang Zi.

“Please don’t kill me, I surrender. Don’t kill me!”

The last two survivors saw their friend who was killed, and they

immediately stop running and squatted down while begging for their lives.

“Captain, do we send these men to the prisoner camp?” One of the team members asked Lang Zi.

Lang Zi’s eyes were cold as he replied, “Kill them all. We don’t have so many people to look after these massive number of assholes.”

After receiving Lang Zi’s command, two of the men walked forward with a knife each and proceeded to slaughter the two men who surrendered.

# Chapter 193: Grinding with the Zombie Hordes!

---

Many survivors watched Lang Zi and his team kill the four other survivors like slaughtering chickens and dogs. Their hearts felt a cold chill and they watched from far away; many of the survivors hiding in their homes secretly watched Lang Zi and his team too.

Lang Zi shouted a few words of abuse,

"Kill the rapists, kill the murderers and arsonists, kill the looters- if you lot of bastards want to stay alive, all of you behave a bit better for me. Right now, the city has not been broken into yet. You can @?!%\$ sensibly stay here, or go to the East Gate side and wait for arrangements upon entering. You people are under the command of Captain Yue and so we will protect your personal safety."

After he finished speaking, Lang Zi brought people with him to continue advancing, shooting the violent survivors dead whenever they saw them.

With Lang Zi's efforts, the city's chaotic situation gradually became under control and stability was restored. At the same time, a large number of survivors approached in the direction of the East Gate like refugees, bringing their families with them.

Apart from the North Gate side's residents, a large number of survivors all came in the direction of the East Gate, densely packed like a swarm of ants.

On the road leading to the East Gate, there were fortifications constructed from wire mesh, cables and sandbags. A team of soldiers armed with rifles stood on guard in front of those fortifications. Two LMGs (light machine guns) were about to create a total blockade of the roads, so that whoever wanted to forcefully break through this route would have to pay a painful price.

Wang Shuang stood ahead on the road holding a whip in his hands and shouted,

"Enter by order, whoever dares to jump the queue shall receive lashes!"

Two squad members stood outside lurking around, seizing men and women with strong bodies from time to time who had jumped the queue. They fiercely whipped the bodies of the queue-jumpers until their skin split and flesh blossomed and they were screaming again and again.

With the deterrence of such a cruel punishment, those who once very much liked to jump queues crowded together to form a group of people who all sensibly formed a long, dragon-like queue. Upon being registered and entering, they became people under the control of Yue Zhong.

A large number of L2 zombies were hunted and so the Z-series zombies hidden in the midst of the zombie hordes didn't have any great ideas. Only a few mechanically ordered the remaining L2s to throw more zombies into the city.

"Xu Zhenggang, how about working for me?"

Sitting inside the IFV, Yue Zhong tried to recruit Xu Zhenggang once again.

This time, Xu Zhenggang didn't give a flat refusal like last time, but rather fell silent, his eyes flashing with an exceptionally complicated light.

Yue Zhong lightly said,

"Before you cried to me for help, you must have done the same to the other side as well right? Yet the person who brought people over to save you wasn't another, it was I Yue Zhong. They made you into an abandoned child, do you still wish to sacrifice your life to these people in such a manner?"

People like Xu Zhenggang who adhered to their own principles

and methods were exactly those who Yue Zhong liked to recruit as his subordinates the most. As soon as Xu Zhenggang became one of Yue Zhong's subordinates, Yue Zhong wouldn't worry about Xu Zhenggang betraying him and could entrust him with the responsibility. In addition, Xu Zhenggang was also an officer who had undergone rigorous military training with outstanding military accomplishments; he was the sort of talent Yue Zhong needed the most.

Yue Zhong continued to say,

"If you enter my side, with your ability, you can protect even more people. Your comrades and brothers can also have better lives."

Xu Zhenggang fell silent for a while, then finally replied to Yue Zhong's soliciting,

"Alright Yue Zhong, I will bring my brothers and join your side."

When zombies raided the West Gate, many of Xu Zhenggang's comrades were killed; at this point there were only thirteen soldiers still living. Nevertheless, these remaining thirteen soldiers had all survived the war with rich combat experience and skillful shooting technique. After Xu Zhenggang agreed to join Yue Zhong, these thirteen soldiers followed in his manner as well and joined Yue Zhong's army.

From the West Gate, the remaining 40+ survivors were also incorporated by Yue Zhong and joined his armed forces.

Yue Zhong walked up to Gu Zhixing and directly requested,

"Gu Zhixing my man, I hope you can come help me."

Gu Zhixing's ability to manipulate flames was extremely remarkable, to the extent that he could already agglomerate a fireball: he was akin to a small humanoid turret with extraordinary battle power. Yue Zhong hoped to also recruit him under his command.

With a rather pallid expression, Flame King Gu Zhixing glanced at Yue Zhong, understanding his intention lightning-fast. He gave a slight chuckle and said,

"Alright Team Yue, since you respect my old bones, then I'll entrust you with this old life."

Gu Zhixing was also an old fox: as soon as Lei Cheng had fled, Yue Zhong and his troops became the strongest force inside the base. A cunning person like him naturally didn't hold any allegiance to the government in his heart-during the two days of fiercely battling zombies, the majority of his men were all killed. The best outcome for him would be to pledge allegiance to Yue Zhong; this way, he could let his children and family live a comfortable life.

Gu Zhixing and Xu Zhenggang surrendered to Yue Zhong and the base's West Gate had also landed in Yue Zhong's hands.

Yue Zhong then quickly mobilized three IFVs, seven Dongfeng trucks and six modified buses to form a huge fleet, which rushed out through the East gate, crazily advancing towards the depths of the zombie hordes.

Yue Zhong himself was lying on Little Greenie's back and looking down from the sky, giving out orders to that huge fleet to commence the assault.

Right after that huge fleet had left the city, countless normal zombies began to surround it.

It was just that those normal zombies could barely even harm the three IFVs, which were akin to an invincible three-headed beast as they led the huge fleet behind them. They crazily ground up the retreating zombie hordes until all of the zombies blocking the road had been steamrolled into meat paste.

The huge fleet continued to assault within the zombie hordes, steamrolling a road of blood formed from meat paste; following Yue Zhong's orders, it rampaged towards the depths of the zombie

hordes.

After the huge fleet had charged 1000m distance into the zombie hordes, there was sudden movement in there. The large number of evolved zombies attacking at the West Gate were constantly approaching in the direction of the huge fleet.

Along the way, countless normal zombies were pushed down onto the ground and trampled into meat paste by the evolved zombies.

Those normal zombies also seemed to be driven by a mysterious force as they desperately collided with the fleet one after another.

Nevertheless, those normal zombies had rather fragile bones, so that when they collided with the IFVs, Dongfeng trucks or modified buses, all the collisions did was make their brains rupture before they were ground into meat paste.

Utilizing heavy-duty vehicles to carry out the assault and grinding up of zombies was also a tactic that Yue Zhong had long thought of; it was just that before, it was not the best time to implement this tactic.

In the midst of the zombie hordes, there were three types of zombies which posed a great threat to the heavy-duty vehicles: L2, S2 and H1.

An L2's attacks could cause damage to the battle vehicles by shaking them. An S2 could easily jump onto a heavy-duty vehicle and then use its sharp claws to slowly wear away the battle vehicle's armor. A H1 could directly use fireballs to bombard the battle vehicles.

After a two-day long siege, a large number of these three types of evolved zombies had died, hence for the first time, Yue Zhong was able to mobilize the heavy-duty vehicles that were available and initiate a group assault on the zombie hordes.

Under the group assault of those heavy-duty vehicles, countless



zombies were ground up, and they began to crazily advance towards the depths of the zombie hordes . Those evolved zombies which had originally gathered at the West Gate, however, were blocked by the densely packed zombie hordes with no way to quickly return and help. They were only able to watch the heavy-duty vehicles charge into the depths of the zombie hordes.

(Note: the author repeats himself so much...)

When the fleet's assault reached 2000m into the zombie hordes, there was a steep rise in the number of mutated zombies (◆◆■◆◆?). In the midst of the zombie hordes, there were almost 100 Type 2 evolved zombies consisting of types L2 and S2. They crazily fled out of the sea of zombies into the distance.

A large number of zombies automatically parted, providing that small group of evolved zombies with an escape route.

"They finally appeared,"

Yue Zhong watched the elite army of nearly 100 evolved zombies flee with an emboldened light in his eyes. Little Greenie flew towards that small zombie horde.

Once the Z-type zombies possessed wisdom, they became as cowardly as human executives. If the situation was just slightly bad, it would take the elite troops and flee.

In the middle of the group of zombies, a Z1 held onto an L2's head as it watched Yue Zhong riding on Little Greenie in the sky. Upon seeing this, its very human-like eyes flashed with a hint of fear and it emitted a sharp whistle , pushing the L2 to go a little faster.

Little Greenie took Yue Zhong and they caught up very quickly to the zombie group.

Yue Zhong lightly jumped down from Little Greenie's back.

As soon as Yue Zhong landed, 5 S2s rushed over towards him like ghosts.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold light and he rushed towards those five S2s◆◆consecutively dealing five sword blows like thunder and directly beheading the five S2s rushing over.

Taking advantage of the situation in which Yue Zhong had finished five S2s, Little Greenie surged towards the Z1.

Upon seeing Little Greenie, the Z1's eyes immediately became crimson and a powerful spiritual shockwave bombarded towards Little Greenie.

However, mutated beasts innately had extremely powerful spirits. The Z1's spiritual shockwave had no effect on Little Greenie in the slightest. In one pounce, Little Greenie snatched away the Z1 and vigorously scratched it, cutting the Z1 into several pieces with his sharp claws.

When the Z1 died, the remaining zombies surrounding the outside of Qing Yuan County immediately collapsed into a mess. They were simply relying on their instincts to chase after the noise the huge fleet made.

"I've already dealt with the zombie commander, right now you must immediately return to the city and not spread this news."

Yue Zhong pulled out a radio and sent an order to Wu Guang, who had launched the assault.

(Note: Wu Guang is the soldier who left Xu Zhenggang first)

Once he received Yue Zhong's order, Wu Guang immediately drove back in the direction of the East Gate with the huge fleet. The zombie hordes' commander had been dealt with and the remaining zombies' strength didn't pose any threat to the people in the city, so they naturally had to immediately return since fuel was also a very precious resource.

After the death of the Z1, those 100 Type 2 evolved zombies gathered around it immediately pounced crazily towards Yue Zhong, who glanced at them and ran away. Those 100+ evolved

zombies included over 40 L2s that had gathered together, so even Yue Zhong would find it difficult to defeat them.

After Yue Zhong led the 100+ zombies around in a circle, he suddenly activated his [Shadow Steps Skill]; his entire body was like thunder as he rushed in the direction of where the Z1 had died. Between a few ups and downs, he threw off those 100+ evolved zombies; where the Z1 had died, a Skill Book suddenly burst out of the Z1, as well as a green Treasure Box (Note: Chinanovel translated 蓝 as blue, whilst Youjin translated it as green, which I'll use as well) and 200 Survival Coins, all of which Yue Zhong put into his bag.

After doing all this, Yue Zhong jumped onto Little Greenie's back and rode him back towards the city.

# Chapter 194: Seize power!

---

Level 3 Treasure: Dark Magic Sword. This is an extremely sharp-edged magic sword that has the power to slice through gold and split jade.]

[Level 4 Skill Book: Second-order Shadow Steps. Advanced Shadow Steps Skill! Only after Shadow Steps Skill has been enhanced 3 times can this skill be learnt. After activating this skill, Agility can be increased by 90 points in a timespan of 5 minutes and 40 points of stamina are consumed.]

Yue Zhong carefully examined the Dark Magic Sword in his hands, a model similar to the Tang Sword in sharpness. Its whole body was black, the blade was 1.5m long and etched upon it were strange runes. The sword hilt had three grooves and the whole body of it exuded a cold chill.

Yue Zhong played with the Dark Magic Sword for a while and rejoiced in his heart, before immediately putting it back into his Storage Ring.

As for the Second-order Shadow Steps Skill, it was directly thrown by Yue Zhong into the Storage Ring and stored there.

When the Z-series zombie had died, the remaining 100,000+ zombies were no longer able to organize a large-scale siege. Once Yue Zhong had returned to the base camp, he had immediately let most of his comrades go back and rest.

After the present day's battle, Yue Zhong's elite troops went around putting out fires everywhere; although they had gained strength, the amount of stamina they had lost wasn't small. Every one of them was tired and once they lay down on their beds, they fell into a deep sleep like dogs would.

From time to time, gunshots sounded from the North Gate, where the governmental forces were guarding; it was the shooting

experts among the police, special police and armed police forces eradicating the normal zombies.

Among the government-controlled armed forces, there were also many marksmen, especially the elites in the special police and armed police forces, who had already undergone rigorous training before the 'end of the world'. After, they progressed very quickly, and so many of them became marksmen.

As night fell, there was no moon in the sky and the whole earth was shrouded in a layer of darkness. There were only a few places that were illuminated by lights.

Under the cover of darkness, Yue Zhong, Cheng Yu and Chen Shitou, as well as the first and second teams directly under him, sneaked quietly into the vicinity of the North Gate.

The North Gate had the same defense system as the West and South Gates, with an IFV as the core, as well as two light machine guns and two heavy machine guns forming a barrage, which blocked the path leading to the inner city.

A team composed of over forty survivors and a dozen policemen was patrolling upon the city walls, to prevent the zombies below from carrying out a siege.

Near the North Gate, more than a dozen houses had been converted to temporary barracks by governmental requisition; they were full of special police, armed police and normal police. If there were any signs of trouble, those troops could emerge from the houses and provide reinforcements to the front line.

Yue Zhong and his men carefully crawled forward, and sneaked up to the IFV. Then they suddenly moved out and rushed in the direction of the IFV like thunder, whilst at the same time, Yue Zhong activated his Art of Fear Skill.

Under the powerful coercion of the Art of Fear Skill, the six policemen and three soldiers surrounding the IFV instantly fainted

out of fright.

After Yue Zhong had instantly dealt with those nine armed men, Cheng Yu immediately brought people with him as he quickly approached those nine people and firmly tied all of them up , at the same time gagging them with rags.

Cheng Yu took out a blowgun coated with powerful anesthetic and heavily blew, making a policemen standing guard in front of the building immediately faint.

Almost simultaneously, Yue Zhong activated his Art of Fear Skill and directed it towards the other policeman; the huge mental coercion turned into a straight line that bombarded the policeman's sea of consciousness, directly causing him to faint.

After getting rid of those two policemen, Yue Zhong and his men rushed into the building. The team of elite soldiers closely followed behind Yue Zhong and quickly rushed into the building too.

When Yue Zhong arrived in front of a room, the Dark Magic Sword in his hand lightly struck towards the room's lock, and broke it off like cutting through tofu.

Upon opening the door to the room, he saw that there were only eight policemen who were fast asleep with barely any defenses. They had never thought that Yue Zhong would attack right when the zombies had retreated.

A team infiltrated the room and very skillfully stunned those eight policemen, before tying them up and gagging them.

Using this method, Yue Zhong and his men raided room after room, capturing the policemen, armed policemen and special policemen who were all asleep and stunning all of them.

"What are you people?"

When Yue Zhong and his group reached the seventh floor, a policeman who came out to urinate saw them; his complexion paled and he loudly shouted.

Yue Zhong's figure flashed and he rushed towards the policeman in just a few moments; he used his hand like a knife to hack at the policeman's neck, and the policeman fainted.

TL: Like this

However, that policeman's sharp cry alerted the other policemen.

After Yue Zhong and his men took advantage of the opportunity to capture all the policemen in a room who didn't have time to arm themselves, they finally faced resistance from the remaining police.

Six policemen with Type-54 Pistols guarded over a path, unceasingly opening fire to stop the advance of Yue Zhong and his men.

Yue Zhong activated his Encompassing Body Armor Skill for the first time and bone armor with astonishing defense quickly covered his entire body.

He endured the shots coming from the six policemen and crazily rushed forward; the bullets hit the bone armor on his body and ricocheted away, not even able to leave a trace on it.

In under six seconds, Yue Zhong covered a distance of 100m and appeared in front of those policemen. With one strike for each, he chopped at the policemen's necks and they all fainted.

After finishing off those six policemen, Yue Zhong and his men directly charged up to the police and special police blocking the way, stunning all of them in one move. In situations without devices like 40mm rocket launchers, grenades and other heavy weaponry, normal bullets simply couldn't penetrate through the bone armor covering Yue Zhong.

Grinding up the enemies like a tank, Yue Zhong rampaged like a devil, chopping at all of the policemen blocking the way and making them faint. He KO'ed all the way up to the top floor.

Chen Jianfeng (Leader of the Survival Camp) saw how Yue Zhong

took big steps into the command room, covered in bone armor by means of activating the Encompassing Body Armor Skill. He let out a long sigh, saying,

"So it turned out to be you, Yue Zhong! There are some things that I still don't understand, why would you launch a raid at this sort of time? In the present situation, only if our two sides join forces can we block this time's zombie siege."

In the whole base, there was only Yue Zhong's faction that had the power and ability to launch a raid on the governmental forces. When Chen Jianfeng heard the gunfight from below, he inferred who the intruder was. It was just that he wasn't able to understand why Yue Zhong would launch a raid on the base at this sort of time.

Even if Yue Zhong had forcibly seized the base's power, as well as the police, special police and armed police forces, he would temporarily have no way of making use of them. Without the test of time, if Yue Zhong gave weapons to those police, special police and armed police forces, there was a possibility that the other side would immediately turn on and open fire towards him.

Behind Chen Jianfeng stood Wei Fei, who was glaring at Yue Zhong with an appearance full of the desire to battle.

(Note: Wei Fei is the dude who we saw a while back. He's the captain of the special police squadron, likes to think he's good at fighting and has decent strength)

Yue Zhong stared at Chen Jianfeng and said slowly word by word,

"Mayor Chen! I have already gotten rid of this time's zombie horde commander. Although there are still 100,000 zombies outside, there is nothing to fear. Eradicating them is only a matter of time. You should surrender! Over half of your subordinates have already been captured by me. If you continue to stubbornly resist, both sides will only suffer from meaningless casualties and nothing



more."

It was only because he had gotten rid of the commander amid the zombies that Yue Zhong dared to launch a raid on the government's side. Otherwise, in order to keep hold of the base, he would choose to temporarily get along in peace with the government.

Chen Jianfeng fell silent for a while before sighing,

"Alright! I surrender!"

The current balance of power was already very clear: Yue Zhong's side had control over a large number of survivors and troops. Also, over 70 of the base's combatants were gathered in this building. If Chen Jianfeng continued to let people resist, that would only create more casualties and hold no meaning.

There were relations between Chen Jianfeng and Chen Yao, therefore he knew that Yue Zhong counted as a qualified leader. Therefore, in a hopeless situation, he was unwilling to let others die in vain.

"The tides have been set!"

After hearing the words of Chen Jianfeng, Yue Zhong lightly let out a sigh of relief as well. If Chen Jianfeng let people continue to resist, casualties might appear in his men. Amid the ranks of the police, special police and armed police, there were also many snipers. In street fighting, they were the most formidable killers. If the battle was with Yue Zhong's first and second squads, in which every member was an elite evolver whose level exceeded 10, even they might be hit by a headshot from far away.

Just then, Wei Fei, who was standing next to Chen Jianfeng, stepped out; he looked at Yue Zhong and spoke in a voice full of the desire to fight,

"Yue Zhong! I want to have a fight with you!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Wei Fei and he frowned,

"If I fight with you, what's in there for me?"

Wei Fei's eyes flashed and he said word by word,

"If you have a single victory against me, I will work for you! If you lose, help me properly take care of Mayor Chen's family. Let me bring my God & Devil World equipment and leave the base."

Wei Fei had once received Chen Jianfeng's kindness. Only now would he be able to dedicated his life to Chen Jianfeng. With his current power, as long as he did not encounter a massive wave of zombies, he could live alone outside the base very comfortably. He wanted to continuously strengthen himself and not be bound by leveling up by wantonly killing zombies. Subsequently, he proposed to have a battle with Yue Zhong as he wanted to gain satisfaction.

Yue Zhong glanced at Wei Fei, then said in a low voice,

"Good!"

Right after Yue Zhong's words had landed, a light flashed in Wei Fei's eyes and an invincible murderous aura spread out from his body. He took a step then rushed forwards like a cheetah towards Yue Zhong , waving a Tang Sword in his hand as he chopped towards Yue Zhong's body.

Wei Fei had already gone through many wars and at this time his enhanced level had already reached up to Level 26; also, he had enhanced the Level 2 Skill High-speed Movement twice. At this time, when he activated his High-speed Movement Skill, his whole person became like a ghost. It actually overwhelmed Yue Zhong's agility, which had been enhanced many times. In the blink of an eye he appeared in front of Yue Zhong and the sword cut fiercely into Yue Zhong's waist. The sharp Tang Sword struck onto the tough bone armor and emitted a clashing metallic sound, whilst simultaneously leaving a shallow sword mark.

# Chapter 195: Zombicide!

---

"Fast! He is also a speed-type evolver!"

Yue Zhong was caught off guard when Wei Fei chopped at his body. He immediately brandished his sword and chopped at Wei Fei's right shoulder.

Wei Fei's reaction was highly sensitive and his swordplay was superb; he flicked his sword upwards and fiercely clashed with Yue Zhong's Dark Magic Sword that chopped down.

The two swords met with a huge, explosive force; Yue Zhong and Wei Fei both took two steps back. Based on physical strength, they were equal. The God & Devil World equipment on Yue Zhong were excellent, but Wei Fei had the backing of the base-the majority of the base's good equipment landed on him, therefore the enhanced strength provided by his items wasn't far from Yue Zhong's.

After probing the disparity in strength between both sides, Wei Fei's figure flashed and like a phantom, he moved at high speed in a series of blurs. He launched a hurricane-like attack towards Yue Zhong; one attack after another, he slashed at Yue Zhong from all directions.

Yue Zhong could only retract his line of defense, barely withstanding Wei Fei's slashes. Before the 'end of the world', Wei Fei had already practiced brilliant swordplay with famous masters; his accomplishments in swordplay were much greater than Yue Zhong's, and every time Yue Zhong struck out with his sword, it would easily be negated by Wei Fei. In addition, his strategic attacks were even able to leave hints of scars on Yue Zhong's bone armor. If he didn't have the protection of the bone armor, Yue Zhong, who had never been properly trained, would long have been defeated.

Ever since the 'end of the world', it was the first time that his plot armor had been broken through Yue Zhong had faced this sort of

expert. Even Ji Qingwu, whose swordplay was exquisite, didn't give him that much pressure.

"This tortoiseshell-like defense is truly too hard to deal with!"

Wei Fei evaded an attack from Yue Zhong and slashed towards his right arm: however, there was the clashing, metallic sound and the attack only left a shallow mark.

Seeing this scene, Wei Fei couldn't help to start feeling a trace of powerlessness. He had already slashed Yue Zhong's body nine times; if the protection of the bone armor wasn't present, then every slash could make Yue Zhong lose power. However, with the protection of the bone armor, he couldn't even leave light injuries on Yue Zhong. In front of Yue Zhong's strong defense, the speed that he was initially proud of now seemed a bit weak.

"Not bad! This fellow's power isn't weak! I should deal with him now!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold light and he activated his Gravity Manipulation Skill; continuous ripples of gravity spread out with him acting as the center. Wei Fei was affected by the gravitational ripples and his body suddenly sank, making his movements become contorted.

At that moment, Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps Skill and his whole person's speed surged, overwhelming Wei Fei. He took one step out and fiercely bombarded Wei Fei's abdomen with a meteor-like punch, sending Wei Fei flying backwards a few meters. Wei Fei spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and collapsed onto the ground with no strength left.

"Do you want to continue?"

Yue Zhong pointed at empty space and a sharp bone spike shot out of his palm, looming at Wei Fei's throat. If Wei Fei moved, that sharp bone spike could pierce through Wei Fei's throat.

"No need, you've won!"

Wei Fei let out a wry smile and was panting heavily. The power of the bone armor defense on Yue Zhong's body was too amazing; from the moment he had no way to break the defense, it implied that he had already lost for the most part of the battle.

Since Wei Fei had been defeated, there was now nobody who could stop Yue Zhong.

With Chen Jianfeng's cooperation, the whole base's remaining police, special police and armed police had surrendered to Yue Zhong. The whole base's authority had also landed in Yue Zhong's hands.

Once the base's authority had landed in Yue Zhong's hands, the troublesome matters had only just began. A series of troublesome things like the base's security, the distribution of goods, hygiene, the distribution of food, appeasing the people's hearts and so on all approached Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong dismissed all the officials in the base of their duties, only letting them keep some of their private belongings. However, the first people to seek refuge with him, Kong Tao and Chen Zhiguang, as well as others who were worthy, were able to be kept and help deal with some home affairs. Chen Jianfeng was also removed from his duties and only assisted Yue Zhong in dealing with home affairs with his identity as a Chief of Staff.

(Note: Kong Tao does public relations-he led Yue Zhong to a nightclub a while back to try and please him. Chen Zhiguang welcomes people to the base-after learning Yue Zhong's an evolver, he tried to curry favor with him)

Chen Jianfeng had strong capabilities and he was handy in dealing with home affairs. Nevertheless, Yue Zhong didn't dare to completely hand over the governmental powers into his hands.

Moreover, for the officials and their children who liked to extort and rape women, the most heinous crimes resulted in being directly killed. The rest were all sent by Yue Zhong into the scum

battalion for use as cannon fodder.

In front of Yue Zhong's powerful army, even those people who held complaints in their hearts didn't dare to disobey his orders.

From the police side, all sorts of inner (familial) connections and the trash who did nothing but eat were eliminated, only leaving the policemen with ability and a sense of justice. They had rich experience in maintaining law and order, and were much better in this aspect than Yue Zhong's comrades who had half-baked backgrounds.

The two strong special police and armed police powers were directly disbanded by Yue Zhong and the members were divided into small, individual squads. Before, the special police and armed police were actually the strongest armed forces that Chen Jianfeng grasped, and so there were many sharpshooters with extraordinary skill among them.

Some of the special police's individuals even had battle power above that of Yue Zhong's elite first and second teams.

After going through the simpler procedures, Yue Zhong mobilized his troops and launched a large wipe-out of the zombies outside the town, with the IFVs and other heavy vehicles as the center of the attack.

The four IFVs and the battalion of heavy vehicles led the assault, grinding back and forth over the zombies. Then all the units took turns to battle, using the Replica Tang Sword to crazily behead those normal zombies. The evolved zombies were fought by Yue Zhong's most elite, immediate first and second teams, who beheaded all of them.

Without the orders of the Z-series zombie, those normal zombies were just a complete mess; against Yue Zhong's troops, who were armed to the teeth and were continually being strengthened, they had almost no strength to fight back. After three days of fierce fighting, Yue Zhong finally wiped out the 100,000 zombies

surrounding the outside of the base. The price paid was that a lot of fuel was consumed, 20 people from the scum battalion were infected and 30 (normal) survivors were also infected.

"Victory! Victory! The 100,000 zombies outside of Qing Yuan County have already all been wiped out by the men under Captain Yue!"

Not long after the last wave of zombies was eradicated by Yue Zhong, news of the victory immediately spread across Qing Yuan County.

Upon hearing news of the victory, the slightly lifeless Qing Yuan County became excited again and cheers sounded throughout the town.

The matter of the 100,000 zombies outside of Qing Yuan County was constantly suspended above all the townspeople's heads like the sword of Damocles. If the town was broken into, all of the people in Qing Yuan County would be torn to pieces by those zombies. The event of Yue Zhong and his men wiping out the 100,000 zombies was truly uplifting.

"Due to wiping out most of the zombies, Captain Yue has decided that for today's rations, everyone will get an extra sweet bun."

(Note: the Chinese characters used actually mean 'welfare meals', but I thought that 'rations' would work better. If you think that I should change it back to the original, please leave your thoughts in the comments.)

The second announcement immediately then spread among the crowd.

Hearing this message, the survivors of Qingyuan were even happier and praises of Yue Zhong were constantly heard. The majority of the survivors had always relied on rations to survive and had almost never eaten until they were full. For a bun, many women would even be willing to sell their own body. Right now,

Yue Zhong had announced that everyone could receive an extra sweet bun, so naturally that would make them excited.

When the rations were being handed out, every survivor had a greedy, starved light exposed in their eyes as they saw hamper after hamper of white buns. The survivors that had received those sweet buns ate them in large mouthfuls, their eyes full of a brief happiness.

Most of the survivors felt very content towards the white buns that Yue Zhong had distributed; however, there were also those who were unsatisfied with such treatment.

(Note: So the next part can be considered slightly racist, but in a lot of stories the bad guys are always the government officials and/or foreigners.)

In one residential area, 43 foreigners of different skin color each held a bowl of gruel and a sweet bun. They looked at each other with bitter faces. Before, they were among the privileged residents of the specialty region; although they were unable to eat as they wanted there, like before the 'end of the world', they would definitely not go hungry. They simply didn't put meals like gruel and buns in their eyes.

A black man looked at the bowl of gruel in his hands and said in a slightly vulgar way,

"Damn! It's gruel again. We've already eaten this sort of stuff for three days now. Right now I've got diarrhea. Oh, God! This bastard Yue Zhong is really too stingy."

(TL Note: So I said I wouldn't censor anything unless absolutely necessary, but out of courtesy to those who may be eating something while reading this, I changed the 'diarrhea' part from the original because... well just copy this> '??' into some machine translator and you'll know.)



A blonde, blue-eyed, middle-aged woman with a slightly obese figure called Felicity frowned; she looked at the black man and said,

"Ekko! Please can you be a bit more civilized when you talk, your statement has made me lose my desire to eat."

(Note: wow, loads of notes in this chapter. Anyway, I have no idea on how to translate '????', despite searching it up in loads of online dictionaries and stuff. If anyone knows, please tell me in the comments. For now, I'm using 'Ekko' because '????' is also the name in Chinese for the League of Legends hero~)

Ekko shrugged, coldly smiled and continued to disgust Felicity,

"These disgusting things are just like my vomit from this morning. Watching you eat those things is just like watching you eat my vomit. Oh, God, this is really too amusing."

Ekko's words made the foreigners gathered around lose their appetite; they glared at him one after another.

A gentle-looking young man wearing glasses called Choi Min-ho said,

"This will not do. I suggest that we should come together, find this place's supreme ruler Yue Zhong and have a talk with him. To fight for the rights we should have."

"Good!"

"Choi Min-ho, you should be our representative!"

"I choose Choi Min-ho to be our representative!"

One after another, those 43 foreigners elected Choi Min-ho as their representative, hoping that on their behalf, he could negotiate with Yue Zhong to obtain the treatment that they wanted. This was the principle of 'shoot the bird that takes the lead', which was not only understood by the Chinese people but also by the foreigners living in China, who were very clear on this.

(Note: 'hè qí qí kǎ qí qí' = shoot the bird that takes the lead-a Chinese proverb that basically means that the foreigners want Choi Min-ho to take one for the team.)

Choi Min-ho finished his sweet bun in a couple of mouthfuls, stood up and righteously said,

"Good! I will represent everybody and go fight for the treatment that everyone deserves."

Choi Min-ho also wasn't a fool. He understood the principle of 'shoot the bird that takes the lead'. However, if it was well-manuevered, the bird that takes the lead wouldn't necessarily be unable to turn into the leader. Risks and opportunities always coexist.

Wang Shuang (3rd year Uni student saved by Yue Zhong near the start of the series) found Yue Zhong practicing shooting at the shooting gallery and said with a headache,

"Captain Yue! Those foreigners are making trouble and want to see you!

Yue Zhong put down his gun and his eyebrows furrowed. He slowly asked,

"What's the matter?"

Wang Shuang let out a wry smile and said,

"The 43 foreigners in the base have formed a group and are strongly requesting us to give them humanitarian aid and fair treatment in accordance with international practice."

"Humanitarian aid? Chen Jianfeng and his people have really fattened up these foreigners' courage. I am just going to see them once."

Yue Zhong smiled coldly and strode outside.

# Chapter 196: Dealing with Foreign Friends

---

Very quickly, Yue Zhong reached the western district's square, only to see that 43 foreigners stood there. There were both men and women among those 43 foreigners and they were all well-dressed; like dogs, their appearances hadn't been 'baptised' by the 'end of the world' in the slightest. Before, when the base was in its most difficult time, it didn't let these foreign friends suffer any hardships.

Seven of Yue Zhong's official members stood at the side armed with rifles, coldly staring at those foreigners. If they moved in the slightest, a bullet would mercilessly penetrate through their bodies.

Yue Zhong walked up to the center of the square, overlooked the 43 foreigners below and said icily,

"I am the one called Yue Zhong. If you have anything to say then quickly speak, as you only have this one chance."

Yue Zhong did not actually hate foreigners. It was just that the base's treatment towards the foreigners was much better than to the country's people themselves. Whilst a large number of compatriot survivors were starving, those foreigners were living carefree in the specialty region. It was this that made Yue Zhong feel very uncomfortable. Receiving worse treatment than the foreigners upon their own country's ground, Yue Zhong really didn't know whether this country was the foreigners' or his own.

"Chief Yue Zhong, hello. I am Choi Min-ho, chairman of South Korea DY Group's Asian Division! I hereby submit a request on behalf of the following friends from Japan, America, Italy and the United Kingdom. We hope that you can comply with international practice and provide us with humanitarian assistance."

"We are very fond of China, this beautiful, mysterious, friendly and culturally advanced country. We have always followed the

rules of your country China and have not done anything that has violated your country's laws. Therefore we hope that you protect our private property and give us fair treatment." Choi Min-ho lightly smiled towards Yue Zhong and said.

Foreigners as despotic and arrogant as Toshi Kameda were not that many; the reason he could behave that way was because he was closely colluding with the base's senior officials. Toshi Kameda had the resources to be arrogant. The 43 foreigners gathered on the square basically did still abide with China's laws. Even within the base, their behavior was still much better than that of the senior officials and their children. This was also something they relied on to dare to come up with a request for Yue Zhong.

(Note: Previously, chinanovel translated Toshi Kameda as Gui Tianshou, which is what it is in Chinese. However, it's said that he's Japanese, so I tried my best to translate the name into its Japanese version. To remind any readers, Toshi Kameda was a Japanese VIP who was 'trampled over' by Yue Zhong and later assassinated or something.)

"I say this with much regret, Mr Choi Min-ho! All things like international practice and humanitarian aid don't work here in my place. The only thing I can do is be fair and treat you and other people equally. If you want enough to eat, then you must do the same as other people and work. If you don't work, then you can only receive an amount of rations that will not be able to fill up your stomach."

"Of course, if you think that the treatment at my place is harsh: as compensation for you abiding with China's laws, right now you can all take your personal belongings with you and leave. I will not stop you. Wang Shuang, you can just follow this principle to deal with them. If they make trouble again, send the men to the scum battalion and the women will be incorporated into the third labor camp." Yue Zhong lightly said those words, then turned around and left.

After the 'end of the world', order collapsed and morality fell. Many men released the dark incarnation from their hearts and committed various crimes. The majority of women were weak but in the same way, many of them also cruelly\* committed various felonies like eating, killing and abusing people. These women were dealt with mercilessly by Yue Zhong in the same way: those who deserved death were directly killed, whilst the women who didn't quite deserve the death sentence were put into labor camps.

(\*Note: the idiom used here literally means 'with a cruel heart and poisonous hand', basically 'cruel'.)

These slave laborers had no human rights-not only were they held in prisons, they also had to do heavy labor. If necessary, they would be given to soldiers who had made great merits to enjoy. One of the most important reasons for the existence of females was that they could give birth. As long as there were offspring, the race would be able to continue.

With the keynote that Yue Zhong had set down, Wang Shuang's courage was boosted. He looked at Choi Min-ho and the other foreigners, all of them looking rather pale, and said loudly,

"All of you, come over here to report your specialty. We will allocate jobs to you depending on your specialty and those without any ability will become laborers. Of course, if you take your private property and leave this place right now, we will also not stop you."

(Note: the original phrase for 'laborers' was actually 'coolies'. 'Coolies', which is a proper word, just sounds kind of strange to me, so I stuck with 'laborers'.)

At this time, there were still many zombies littered around Qing Yuan County. Without any methods of transportation, if normal people left the city, they might immediately be devoured up completely by those zombies. Choi Min-ho and those foreigners naturally weren't stupid and could only go up sensibly to report their own specialty one by one, then let Wang Shuang make

arrangements.

As he watched the foreigners who, before the 'end of the world', had a social status far above him obediently come up to him one by one and report their specialty, a sense of superiority spontaneously welled up in him. There was even a French woman who threw him a flirtatious look. By now, Wang Shuang had already grown to become a Level 13 Evolver and he kept two beautiful women. Back then, if he hadn't been determined to follow Yue Zhong, right now, he would either have landed in the mouths of zombies or he would be the lowest level survivor bitterly struggling amidst cold and hunger.

Yue Zhong had just returned to the shooting gallery when Xu Zhenggang came up to him. Looking at Xu Zhenggang, he felt a bit surprised and asked,

"What happened?"

After Xu Zhenggang had accepted Yue Zhong's recruitment and joined his forces, as always, he didn't have the intention of improving their personal relationship. He always stayed among his own squad members and trained them; during battle he was also the first to rush up to the front line with a very strong desire to fight. Xu Zhenggang really was the perfect role model of a soldier, the best knife.

(Note: 'best knife' sounds somewhat strange but I couldn't think of any other way to put it than to literally translate the term. Its meaning should be clear though.)

With a straight face, Xu Zhenggang slowly said,

"Captain Yue! I believe that there is a problem with the current establishment of our armed forces! Not including the scum battalion, our current armed personnel have already exceeded 500 men. Using the crude establishment of teams, squadrons, brigades and the like to command the troops to launch a coordinated attack is very problematic. If our armed forces continue increasing, this

sort of model is not conducive to our command and control over them. Personally, I think that we should initiate a formalized reorganization of the troops whilst our armed personnel are still not that many in number."

When Yue Zhong had originally reorganized the teams at Always Bright Village, he didn't think too much at the time. It was just that he had wanted to organize an elite squad, pass through the zombie hordes and go back to Guangxi to find his loved ones. Yue Zhong didn't have a military background and he also didn't have much experience, therefore he only ended up forming a bizarre, crude establishment consisting of a team, squadron and brigade.

(Note: Always Bright Village was where Yue Zhong overthrew Tiger, before he headed to Longhai City Base.)

For searching for supplies and battles on a small scale, this type of crude establishment didn't have many problems. However, with one glance, professional military officers like Xu Zhenggang would be able to make out the shortcomings of an establishment as such, that it wasn't conducive to the control and mobilization of a large force. Also, the prospects of promotion for the squad members wasn't clear enough-being promoted to the official team meant already reaching the peak.

Yue Zhong understood everything instantly.

(◆◆◆◆h◆◆◆ ?)

"You mean to carry out a reorganization of the troops in accordance with the establishment and model of the regular army?"

Xu Zhenggang rigidly handed a copy of the information to Yue Zhong.

"Right! The current military establishment has already undergone the test of time and practice. There are basically no major oversights. I believe that we should reorganize according to

the establishment and model of the regular army. This is the establishment that is able to emerge from our current military strength, please have a look."

Yue Zhong received that copy of information to have a look, only to see that upon the copy, it was written clearly that the military strength of his powers could be reorganized into a reinforced battalion, with four reinforced companies under its management. Even the number of people in each company and the basic equipment required was clearly written down. It was only for the military officers of the individual companies and platoons that nothing was written.

After Yue Zhong finished reading that information copy, he said towards Xu Zhenggang,

"I know now! I will consider it, you withdraw first!"

"Yes!" Xu Zhenggang performed a standard military salute towards Yue Zhong and then withdrew.

The rumor of Yue Zhong preparing to reorganize the troops spread very quickly among the captains of each team. Many people had their hearts heat up and people began walking around in Yue Zhong's area more frequently.

In the establishment of that battalion, Yue Zhong himself would naturally serve as the commander. The person he chose as deputy battalion commander was Chi Yang, which no one objected. However, regarding the officer positions below battalion commander-company commander, deputy company commander, platoon commander and deputy platoon commander-people couldn't help but be tempted.

Three days later, Yue Zhong summoned all of the main personnel under his command to Qing Yuan County to have a meeting.

The seats in the meeting room had long been filled up with the captains of each team under Yue Zhong's command, all of them



from different social classes. Before the 'end of the world', some were farmers, some were villagers, some were soldiers, some were prisoners, some were students... there were all kinds of people gathered together here due to a strange combination of circumstances, yet between them, they still formed small groups in accordance with their status and motives.

Sitting beside Liu Yan, Kong Tianyu cracked a smile and said,

"Captain Liu, this time I will congratulate you first. You began following Captain Yue the earliest, it looks like the position of a company commander won't escape from you."

(Note: Kong Tianyu is a ruthless guy under Yue Zhong's command. I have no idea when he appeared-if anyone does know, please tell me in the comments. Liu Yan is an ex-gunman of Tiger, whom Yue Zhong overthrew.)

Liu Yan glanced in the direction of Chen Shitou and slowly let out a sigh,

"Not necessarily. Chi Yang can definitely become the commanding officer of a company. Ji Qingwu will maybe become the commanding officer of a company as well. Captain Yue always holds Da Gouzi in high regard, maybe he can also become the commanding officer of a company. There is also Chen Shitou, whose daughter has an ambiguous relationship (affair) with Captain Yue. He also isn't weak in strength and so he is another candidate for the company commander positions. Wang Shuang is actually Captain Yue's classmate and his earliest follower. That fellow Xu Zhenggang has outstanding military accomplishments and puts his whole heart into developing the armed forces. He has the support of Wu Guang and others from the former army as well, and is also a candidate for the company commander positions. Ah, the competition is fierce!!"

Kong Tianyu's eyebrows furrowed and he thought for a moment: it really was as Liu Yan had said, the competition for the company

commander positions truly was fierce to the extreme.

The captains of the other individual teams were also discussing between each other in low voices, mainly about the four company commander positions. One company commander would be able to have 100 subordinates. Even amid Yue Zhong's influence, they would be a vital officer.

Just then, Yue Zhong strode into the meeting room, with Guo Yu, who was wearing a professional suit, following behind him as if she were his shadow.

As soon as Yue Zhong entered the meeting room, all of the captains quietened down, their eyes full of glows as they looked towards him.

After he sat down and observed the surroundings, Yue Zhong said to Guo Yu,

"The meeting officially starts. Guo Yu, come read out my decision."

# Chapter 197: Re-organize the Troops!

---

Now announce Captain Yue's personnel appointments. From today onwards, the official teams will be disbanded, all personnel will be converted to military personnel and supplies can be obtained in accordance with the corresponding military rank."

"In accordance with our side's current armed forces, the regiment will consist of four battalions. The post of Regiment Commander will be held by Yue Zhong, who shall also hold the post of Commander of the 1st Main Battalion. The post of Regiment Vice\commander will be held by Chi Yang, who shall also hold the post of Commander of the 2nd Main Battalion. The Vice\commander of the 1st Main Battalion will be Xu Zhenggang. The Vice\commander of the 2nd Main Battalion will be Liu Yan. The Commander of the 3rd Defense Battalion will be Da Gouzi and the Vice\commander will be Wang Shuang. The immediate Commander of the 4th Special Combat Battalion will be Ji Qingwu and the Vice\commander will be Cheng Yu."

(Note: Cheng Yu is an assassin whom Yue Zhong recruited a while ago.)

"The 1st Main Battalion will manage four companies. The Commander of the 1st Company will be Liu Yan and the Vice\commander will be Zhao Xing. The Commander of the 2nd Company will be Kong Tianyu and the Vice\commander will be Lang Zi. The Commander of the 3rd Company will be Chen Shitou and the Vice\commander will be Xiao Ming. The Commander of the 4th Armored Company will be Wu Guang and the Vice\commander will be Lang Zi.

(Note: Zhao Xing is from the Chen Family's Village; Lang Zi used to be under Xu Zhenggang's command; Chen Shitou was the best hunter from the Chen Family's Village; Xiao Ming is an ex\gunman from Always Bright Village; Wu Guang also used to be under Xu Zhenggang's command.)

"The 2nd Main Battalion will manage three companies. The Commander of the 1st Company..."

"The 3rd Defense Battalion will manage two companies. The Commander of the 1st Company will be..."

"... The 4th Special Combat Battalion will be directly under Captain Yue and no one else has the right to mobilize the battalion."

After the entire base had landed in Yue Zhong's hands, the number of people under his control had already broken past the mark of 10,000. After the 'end of the world', men had relatively strong bodies and thus their survival rate was quite high. Among the 10,000 people, there were over 5000 men, whilst the rest were women and children. If Yue Zhong engaged carelessly in military activities, he would be entirely capable of pulling out a large army of 4000 men.

Nevertheless, the result would be that there'd be a shortage of manpower in all aspects. Subsequently, Yue Zhong only established four battalions with just over 1000 men.

The 1st Main Battalion under Yue Zhong's command had over 400 people altogether, grouping a large number of the elite soldiers and evolvers together. Moreover, those who previously had a military occupation were greatest in number and formed one of the strongest battalions. The majority of the soldiers in Chi Yang's 2nd Main Battalion had already experienced the battle in Qing Yuan County; those who had fought with the zombies also gained an enhanced element of survival, but their strength was still much less than that of Yue Zhong's 1st Battalion.

Nevertheless, they were all evolvers and didn't lack courage when fighting zombies, so as long as their training was stricter, their strength would not be weak. Da Gouzi's Defense Battalion only had two companies (platoons) of veteran evolvers, while most of the rest were newly recruited survivors, whose strength in

melee combat might not even exceed that of the Scum Battalion.

The Special Combat Battalion that Ji Qingwu presided over assembled the outstanding evolvers whom were under Yue Zhong's command: Cheng Yu, Wei Fei, Gu Zhixing and others who had extraordinary strength or whose level exceeded 15. These evolvers had great ability and the aim was for them to be used like a sharp, indestructible blade.

(Note: Wei Fei= guy Yue Zhong fought with a couple of chapters ago. Gu Zhixing = Flame King Gu.)

With assassinations and blasting, each one of them could fight one against ten when hunting high\leveled zombies and mutated beasts.

However, evolvers like this were very rare and currently, Ji Qingwu's Special Combat Battalion only had 23 people.

Once the integration of the military was complete, Ji Qingwu's Special Combat Battalion received rigorous training from the former elite, special soldier Wei Fei and the former top killer Cheng Yu. The evolvers of the Special Combat Battalion had all been enhanced to a very high degree and had all hunted over 100 zombies. It was just that the majority of them were like Yue Zhong and didn't come from any particular background, killing weaklings such as normal zombies, which they could rely on their absolute power to easily pulverize. However, in order to deal with the cunning of humans, without the corresponding military achievements and fighting capability, it wouldn't be possible. For instance, with a skill like scouting, if the person had not undergone rigorous training and hadn't received guidance from their seniors, it would be very hard for them to become an excellent scout.

The difference between evolvers and normal humans was that after undergoing enhancement, an evolver's physique would be much stronger in quality than the average person. In this way, as

long as an evolver underwent rigorous training, their strength would be able to rival that of those special forces from before the 'end of the world'.

Apart from the Special Combat Battalion, Yue Zhong's other individual forces all started their formal military training; the two main battalions practised combat whilst also starting their military training under the guidance of Xu Zhenggang and those other former government army officers.

Yue Zhong had even specially opened a military academy, with himself as Principal. The few platoon leaders who had come to his side to seek refuge from the government became lecturers and explained a variety of military combat skills to each of the commanding officers of Yue Zhong's forces.

The zombies in the vicinity of Shang Lin County, who were preparing to attack Qing Yuan County, were all swept away. Yue Zhong immediately sent people to Shanglin to search for a large quantity of supplies. The supplies that Yue Zhong controlled instantly became even richer and more diverse. In that battle, the fuel consumption was great, but that was compensated for by what was obtained from the petrol stations in Shanglin County and its vicinity, thus there was still a surplus.

Shanglin County was renowned for producing imitations of well-known electric vehicle brands. In the county, therefore, there was a large amount of components involved in the production of electric vehicles and motorcycles. At the same time, there was a large number of half-completed electric vehicles and motorcycles. Those electric vehicles and motorcycles were transported back and the two main battalions were equipped with them.

In a situation as such, where there weren't enough APCs (armored personnel carriers), these motorcycles and electric vehicles could greatly strengthen the mobility of Yue Zhong's side.

Right after the consumption of fuel had been solved, another urgent issue was placed in front of Yue Zhong: the ammunition that they had stocked wasn't enough to support them if they were to fight a large battle.

Even if Yue Zhong was frugal, after going through many large battles like recovering the grainery, protecting Qing Yuan County and recovering Big Cliff Village, the consumption of the ammunition that he had stocked up was inevitable. Currently, all that remained of the ammunition Yue Zhong had stocked up on was one-third of what he had once recovered from the military compound. As for the IFVs, his trump cards, each one only had two boxes of ammunition left.

When going to Shanglin County to search for supplies, Yue Zhong and his team had also discovered many pleasant surprises. They had found two mutated water snake scales en route. Apparently, those zombies were only interested in the flesh and blood of the mutated beasts and not the scales, which they had no way to digest.

At the shooting gallery, Yue Zhong had just began his shooting training; both of his hands were steady and with a Type 03 Rifle, he fired 10 consecutive shots at a target 100m away. After those ten shots, ten bullet holes appeared in the place of the '10' ring on the target (bullseye). In just ten shots, Yue Zhong had actually reached a terrifying score of 100. Yue Zhong looked at that target from afar and his eyes flashed with a hint of satisfaction. Ever since the 'end of the world', there wasn't a single day where he stopped training his shooting skills. His hard work had finally brought him a huge achievement. Yue Zhong turned his head around to look at the little loli Yao Yao, who was wearing a small-sized military uniform and also holding a Type 03 Rifle. He wriggled his finger at her provocatively.

Yao Yao rolled her eyes at him and lifted up the Type 03 Rifle, which, to her, was gigantic; she aimed at a target 100m away and

fired ten consecutive shots. After those 10 shots, 7 bullet holes appeared on the '10' ring of Yao Yao's target, 2 bullet holes appeared on the '9' ring and 1 bullet hole appeared on the '8' ring. This loli Yao Yao had actually also received a good score of 96.

Yue Zhong looked at Yao Yao's target from afar and the little bit of smugness in his heart vanished into thin air. He had been continually improving, yet this loli Yao Yao's progress was even more monstrous than his, making him feel slightly depressed. It's important to know that the first time both sides competed at shooting, Yao Yao's shots were all off target. As Yao Yao watched the target in the distance, her adorable little cheeks showed a depressed expression. This time, she had lost to Yue Zhong again. Yue Zhong glanced at this loli with outstanding talent and lightly smiled. He questioned,

"You've lost! This time, what have you decided to lose to me?"

Normally, Yue Zhong and Yao Yao would place some bets on their competition. Yao Yao mostly sought for free time to hang around outside. On the other hand, Yue Zhong liked seeing this genius loli Yao Yao's difficult appearance.

Yao Yao hesitated for a moment before having a feel in the pockets of her military uniform. She pulled out a sharp dagger and handed it to Yue Zhong, saying,

"I lose this to you."

To Yao Yao, this sharp dagger for self defense was a very important item.

Right when Yao Yao was going through her pockets, with his sharp eyes, Yue Zhong spotted something that shouldn't have been there appear in his field of vision. His face instantly darkened and with one hand, he grabbed the loli Yao Yao. From her pockets, he turned out a grenade.

(Note: the raws say 'sweet potato grenade'. I assume this is not an



explosive root vegetable, but rather a grenade that is shaped somewhat oddly.)

"Wait a moment, what's this thing?"

Yao Yao looked at the grenade in Yue Zhong's hands and her little face paled. She twisted her petite body and tried to escape. This grenade was what she had just stolen from the Special Combat Battalion. She also knew that this sort of thing could not be seen by Yue Zhong, otherwise it would be over for her. However, Yue Zhong's big hands were like pincers\ no matter how much Yao Yao struggled, she was unable to break free from his big hands.

"This should be what you've stolen! You little rascal!"

Yue Zhong pressed Yao Yao down firmly onto his thigh with his left hand, his right hand spanking Yao Yao's little buttocks with a 'pa pa pa'.

(Note: now, I know some people enjoy the xxx scenes, but I don't think this is what you're looking for.)

"Wa!!!!" After Yao Yao's bottom had been hit by Yue ZHong a few times, her eyes were red and she started crying loudly.

"And you're still crying! Stealing things isn't right in the first place. If this was in an Arab country or somewhere similar, your hand would be directly chopped off. Moreover, this sort of thing is too dangerous. Even with a moment of carelessness, your small physique would explode into pulp. And you still dare to play with anything!" Yue Zhong scolded as he stared at Yao Yao. If naughty children like her weren't given a bit of a lesson, she could overturn the heavens.

Yao Yao clenched her teeth and stared at Yue Zhong with her slightly red eyes and an extremely unyielding, stubborn appearance.

"Never mind! This time I'll let you off! This grenade is confiscated! Go back and properly attend lessons!"

Originally, Yue Zhong had wanted to detonate the grenade himself to teach Yao Yao how dangerous they were, but then he changed his mind and did not do so. This was because grenades were also scarce resources; back then, if he didn't have a large number of grenades, he wouldn't have been able to kill that mutated rat king.

As soon as Yue Zhong loosened his grip, Yao Yao leapt off of his thigh and both of her red eyes stared at him, looking reluctantly at the grenade in his hands. Then she swiftly ran off, until not even her shadow could be seen.

Right after Yue Zhong had taught Yao Yao a lesson, Xia Yue and Gao Ying were brought by two soldiers up to him.

(Note: Those two people told Yue Zhong where this military base was in exchange for being taken back to Long Hai City Base.)

Yue Zhong glanced at Xia Yue, who always seemed elegant and attractive, and lightly said,

"Miss Xia Yue, would you please tell me what you're here to ask me for?"

After Qing Yuan County had landed in Yue Zhong's hands, Xia Yue and Gao Ying hadn't really been living well. Yue Zhong's treatment towards them was the same as to normal survivors: only by doing work could they have food to eat\ otherwise, they would only be able to eat rations.

Xia Yue was of noble birth, although before the 'end of the world', she was really nothing more than a college student without any particularly outstanding ability. There were a lot of students with a master's degree or PhD here in Yue Zhong's place, and there were also many with rich work experience. Compared with other people, her only advantage was a beautiful appearance and body.

Xia Yue had no way of finding the job she wanted, therefore she ended up looking for Yue Zhong.

## Chapter 198: Xia Yue's Trade!

---

Xia Yue looked towards Yue Zhong and laughed heartily, "I hope to join the new government as an official, with a rank not lower than major."

The separation between the government and army ensured that those of higher positions would not be overcompensated from both sides. After Yue Zhong had carried out the reorganization of the the troops, he also began separating government officials from the military into 2 divisions.

However, due to the fact that they were in a war situation, the government also implemented a rank system. Officials would be compensated accordingly with their rank. Amongst the new government, the rank of a major would represent one of the core members.

Yue Zhong frowned and looked at Xia Yue. He slowly said, "Miss Xia Yue, I am truly grateful that you pointed out the compound to me at that time. However, I did guarantee your freedom as well as a smooth journey to Long Hai Survival Base at your request. We had a clear deal then, if you want to become an essential member of the new government, may I ask, what can you offer in return?"

Yue Zhong knew that Xia Yue was not a fool, he wanted to know what she could offer to exchange for a better life in the future.

Xia Yue pointed towards Gao Ying beside her and lightly smiled, "Gao Ying possesses the complex knowledge of reusing ammunition and he has plenty of experience in it. I assume that you do need someone of his calibre right?"

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, but then he shook his head, "I already have several people with knowledge in the reusage of ammunition under my wing; just based on this, it is not enough for you to become a major."

After obtaining the base, the first thing Yue Zhong did was to scout for talents. In the midst of those thousands of people, there were 6 who possessed the skill of knowing how to reuse ammunition. Of course, none of them possessed actual experience.

After all, in China, the reusage of ammunition only helped for a short while during the Sino-Japanese War; in the age of new China, with the aid of large-scale manufacturing, the prior technology and knowledge were not worth advancing.

Currently, Yue Zhong had neither the power nor skills to make new ammunition; if he had the skills to, there was no need to rely on the complex reusage of ammunition.

Yue Zhong's refusal did not cause Xia Yue to even blink-she still maintained her charm and said, "What about an entire arsenal of armed weaponry, are you interested?"

Upon hearing Xia Yue's words, Yue Zhong's reaction was greater than that of seeing beautiful ladies. What he sorely lacked right now was weapons! Advanced weaponry! He could only improve the overall fighting capabilities of his team with enough weaponry.

Yue Zhong stared at Xia Yue and warmly said, "Deal! As long as you help me obtain that arsenal of weapons, I will arrange for you to be a government official with the rank of major."

An exchange of a major rank for an entire supply of weaponry, this transaction was beneficial to him no matter how it was looked at.

Xia Yue looked at Yue Zhong while smiling brightly. As long as Yue Zhong obtained that arsenal of weapons, she could lead a comfortable life. Although she knew the location of weapon storage, she did not possess the capability to obtain it herself. By giving it to Yue Zhong, it would be most beneficial to her.

When Gao Ying joined the ammunition research department, he quickly imparted the technique and knowledge to the 300 people

that Yue Zhong had selected to join the department. In the midst of these 300, the ratio of males to females was 50:50, and all of them cherished their jobs, as it meant that they would be able to earn their keep.

However, things were not that simple as Yue Zhong originally thought: while Gao Ying had taught the skills required, the core materials needed were beyond what Yue Zhong's camp could produce on a large-scale basis.

Due to the fact that there were no specialists who could manufacture ammunition, Gao Ying could only head to the processing plants and lead the manufacturing of ammunition heads. The gunpowder and primer required also needed Gao Ying to assign people to manufacture. In a short time, it was not possible to start large-scale ammunition production.

When Gao Ying had finished assigning duties with regards to ammunition, Yue Zhong started his preparations for the assault on the weapon storage facility.

The location of the facility that Xua Yue was referring to lay between Long Hai City and SY City, somewhere in the mountainous area. It was about 300km away from Qing Yuan Country. If it was before the Z-Day, it would have been just a day's journey; however, now that times had changed, the various transportation channels had been blocked, and there was the possibility of meeting with different types of accidents and situations. Yue Zhong could not afford to be hasty, and he wanted to be fully prepared.

Not long after, a huge fleet led by 2 IFVs left Long Hai City, consisting of a machine gun-mounted car, 5 fully loaded Dong Feng Warrior vehicles, 20 hummers, 15 other DongFeng trucks, 4 large modified tankers and 10 modified buses. It was heading towards the weapons facility under the directions of Xia Yue.

"Captain Yue! There are cars blocking our way in front! There is

also a large mob of zombies walking around. Please give your orders on how to proceed!"

On that highway, the entire fleet under Yue Zhong had come to a halt: at a distance of about 200m in front, there were many abandoned cars and zombies shambling around aimlessly.

The reason for zombies appearing here was that these were the previous owners of these private vehicles and they were trapped here. When the world was turned upside down, a huge majority had scrambled in an attempt to flee the city by private transportation. Unfortunately, the moment there was a pile-up, they left their lives here.

Yue Zhong came down from one of the Dong Feng Warrior Vehicles, gazed at a blocked tunnel in the distance and furrowed his brows. These various blocked tunnels were costing him a lot of time. If there was no blockage, this journey of 300km would have been smooth sailing, completed in a day itself.

The various zombies around the blocked highway started struggling and making their way towards the fleet as they became attracted to the sound of the vehicles.

There were over 100 zombies in total and among them, there were even 16 L1s and 6 S1s.

"Liu Yan, take the 1st Company and handle them! It would be best if you don't use any guns!" Yue Zhong took one look at the hundreds of zombies and gave his command to Liu Yan.

"Yes! Captain Yue!" Liu Yan drew the Replica Tang Sword hanging at his waist and shouted at the warriors of the 1st Company, "Brothers, let's charge!"

"Kill!" The warriors of the 1st Company drew out their Replica Tang Swords in sync and shouted with valor; their aggression surged as they advanced towards those zombies.

The 1st Company was formed by various elite warriors after the

reorganization of the previous smaller Teams 1, 2, 3 and 4, and they were extremely well-adapted to melee combat. Under the lead of Liu Yan, they quickly made their way into the middle of the horde, slashing their blades nonstop as if they were mowing their lawns. They beheaded many zombies as they went without a single scratch on themselves.

Against these normal zombies, the members of the 1st Company did not even need to utilize any special skills.

"Kong Tian Yu, clear the road!" Yue Zhong ordered.

"Yes! Captain Yue!" After receiving the command, Kong Tian Yu shouted towards the 2nd Company, "Brothers, follow me!"

After he finished speaking, Kong Tian Yu brought his men and started to clear the vehicles on the road carefully. Amongst those cars, there were still a number of corpses trapped between or within them. When the team encountered these zombies, they would immediately cut off the zombies' head viciously. After clearing the zombies, those evolvers who focused on their strength helped push the cars to the sides. This was followed by warriors who carried equipment to suck out the fuel from these cars and load them into fuel tanks.

The absorbing of fuel from these abandoned vehicles was an important and necessary step when searching for resources. In the short-term, fuel was a non-renewable resource-Yue Zhong's strength was partly due to his conservative measures as well. Other than the officials of the government and military, no one else had vehicles that they could use as they liked.

Currently, in Qing Yuan County, the preferred mode of transport was by bicycle. Many workers opted to cycle their way to work. These bicycles also naturally became an indispensable and preferred mode of transport within Yue Zhong's establishment. Many felt proud to own one.

In truth, be it in Qing Yuan County, Big Stone Town or Stone

Horse Town nearby, all those abandoned cars would usually be stripped and dismantled, and any sort of parts and engines would be brought back. Even the steel casings could be brought back to be recycled and processed. The spare tires would also be brought back for other uses. However, they came across these cars during an expedition, Yue Zhong prioritised the recovering of the fuel only; he could only ignore the other usual practices for now.

The cars were pulled aside one by one and emptied of their fuel.

Right at this time, a giant approximately 3.5m tall with thick arms and feet walked out of one of the highway exits. It had a body covered with extremely hard scales and its eyes were filled with intelligence and were emitting a terrifying aura. It held a mutated cow's carcass in its right hand and its mouth was smeared with fresh blood.

[Level 45 Type-2 Infection Evolved L3. It possesses strange strength and extremely tough scales. It possess the Infection ability, and can turn a living being into an infected one.]

Yue Zhong received the notification the moment he laid eyes on that L3.

That L3 also saw Yue Zhong and his troops; it tossed the half-eaten carcass of the mutated cow aside, before striding forward towards them with big steps.

Yue Zhong looked at the L3, pointed his finger at it and magic flames appeared out of thin air. He rapidly shot a fireball at the L3's body.

With a 'boom', the L3 received the fireball directly, yet its body only shook slightly; its steps did not waver, and it continued advancing towards Yue Zhong. There was not even a single burn or scratch on its face.

Due to its height of 3.5m, with every step the L3 took, its stride was twice that of normal humans and its speed was seemingly



faster than an S1 by 3 times.

"All units standby!" When Yue Zhong saw that the L3 was unharmed by that fireball attack, he gasped silently. After giving the order, he rushed towards the L3 with haste

# Chapter 199: L3!!

---

Yue Zhong approached the L3 while continuously firing at it with a Type 03 Rifle. The rifle bullets hit the scales of the L3 and ricocheted off it one after another, unable to cause any traces of damage in the slightest. Yue Zhong had long been mentally prepared for a situation in which the Type 03 Rifle had no way of causing harm to the L3. After he rapidly drew closer to the L3, he brandished the Dark Magic Sword and slashed at the L3's thigh. The L3's body was much too large-it would be very difficult for Yue Zhong to behead the L3.

Yue Zhong's sword chopped onto that L3's thigh and there was the sound of metal clashing. With Yue Zhong's huge strength that was 4 times a normal person's, that Dark Magic Sword, which could even cut through gold and jade, only just cut open the L3's scales when the force of the attack erupted. It merely penetrated less than 1cm into the L3's flesh.

To the 3.5m tall, giant-like L3, that 1cm deep wound simply didn't amount to much. It waved a fist and with a piercing 'whoosh' sound, the attack bombarded towards Yue Zhong like an incoming artillery shell.

"Too hard! Fucking bastard!" Yue Zhong swore in a low voice and took one step to the left, evading the L3's vicious blow in an extremely graceful manner.

The L3's fist didn't lose any strength as it pounded onto the earth and that incomparably huge strength erupted, blasting out a large hole in the concrete ground. The surrounding ground shook slightly.

Upon seeing this, Yue Zhong couldn't help but feel a chill in his heart. If that fist full of strength had bombarded onto Yue Zhong's body, even with his enhancements, his bones would still be fractured and his body doomed.

(Note: I translated '◆◆◆◆◆◆◆◆' rather literally as 'fractured bones and doomed body' - you can guess the meaning anyway :p)

Yue Zhong's figure flashed and he went around to the back of the L3 with 7 times a normal person's agility; he raised the Stinger and fired two consecutive shots at the back of the L3's head.

The two Stinger bullets struck the back of the L3's head and left two holes that were 2cm deep.

"It's still good! The Stinger bullets can still harm it!" Seeing this, Yue Zhong lightly let out a sigh of relief. If even the Stinger bullets couldn't harm the L3, that L3 was too terrifying and tricky.

After being hit in the back of the head two consecutive times by Yue Zhong, that L3 was also enraged. It turned around and sent another fist bombarding towards him. Yue

Zhong's speed was far above that of the L3's and there also weren't any surrounding zombie hordes to block the way: his figure flashed and he easily evaded that, before going behind the L3 again.

Yue Zhong took out a grenade and directly threw it at the L3.

The majority of zombies didn't have the concept of dodging and so the grenade successfully collided with the L3's right leg, producing a tremendous noise. That grenade made a huge explosion on the L3's thigh.

After the smoke and dust dissipated, Yue Zhong looked closer and saw a scene that made him incomparably panic-stricken. The explosion of the grenade had actually only left a big hole in the scales of the L3's thigh, exposing the grey bones within, which had a very metallic luster; not even the bones had been fractured.

That L3's eyes flashed with an ominous hint and it chased behind Yue Zhong, waving a fist and striking towards him.

Yue Zhong's body bent, evading that L3's attack, before taking advantage of the opportunity to appear near the L3's thigh: he

slashed at the dense area where the bones were exposed.

The sharp Dark Magic Sword chopped onto the L3's grey bones and actually made a few sparks fly out; the huge recoil was transmitted along the hilt of Yue Zhong's sword and shook his right hand until it stung. His attack had only left a shallow mark on the L3's grey bones. If he wanted to fracture the L3's bones, he might be able to do so only if he slashed at the same spot for dozens of times.

The L3 waved a fist that bombarded towards Yue Zhong, forcing him to retreat again.

Yue Zhong went behind the L3 and activated the Encompassing Body Armor Skill; after he was covered in bone armor, a bone spike shot out of his right hand into the ground, supporting him as he rushed forward to the back of the L3's head. Rapidly, he pressed the Stinger against the back of the L3's head and fired four consecutive shots.

The four rounds of Stinger bullets were constantly fired through the same wound in the L3's head. After the four shots, that L3 actually still hadn't died; instead, it angrily waved its hands behind itself and a fist came bombarding towards Yue Zhong.

"What a hard skull!!" Yue Zhong was greatly startled. The bone spike extended and he evaded one of the L3's vicious attacks, only the bone spike supporting him was bombarded into pieces by the L3's fist.

When Yue Zhong landed on the ground, he immediately put away the Stinger and whipped out the Dark Magic Sword. With a few flashes, he moved up to the front of the L3 and slashed many times at the L3's grey bones, hoping to break the bones in its feet.

The L3 was furious and waved a fist that bombarded towards Yue Zhong, forcing him to retreat.

(Note: best fight scene ever, L3 waves fist and bombards, Yue

Zhong retreats, rinse and repeat. I suppose it's kind of realistic though?)

That L3 possessed both outstanding defensive power and incomparably tyrannical attack power. Its only weakness was that its speed was slow and so the L3 simply couldn't even touch Yue Zhong's body, which had undergone many enhancements.

Nevertheless, its tyrannical defensive power gave Yue Zhong endless headaches.

"Damn it!!" After Yue Zhong had slashed at the L3 for dozens of times, he rapidly took a few steps back and with the flick of a hand, a Type 40 RPG Launcher appeared out of thin air.

Yue Zhong pulled the trigger and a rocket shell bombarded that L3's right leg with a huge 'bang'. That L3's right leg was finally broken by the terrifying power of the rocket shell and the L3 itself was also sent flying by the explosion; it lost its balance and collapsed onto the ground.

Upon seeing this scene, Yue Zhong also let out a light sigh of relief; if even the Type 40 RPG wasn't able to get rid of this L3, then the situation would be troublesome.

Yue Zhong instantly activated the Devil Flame Skill and a group of crimson-colored flames arose from his right palm. His figure flashed and he rushed towards that L3.

That L3, which had collapsed to the ground, swatted at Yue Zhong as if he were a fly.

Yue Zhong jumped up and evaded that L3's vicious attack, before jumping onto its back. With the violent flames on his right hand, he fiercely bombarded the L3's head. The violent flames enveloped the L3's head and the searing heat made its brains begin to boil. As long as it kept on burning, even if the L3's skull could withstand being shot with a large-caliber bullet, its brains would still be cooked by Yue Zhong's flames.

However, zombies relied on their diseased brain tissue to coordinate their actions: as soon as their brain tissue was cooked, they would also die.

The L3 had already evolved to have vision and was able to feel some pain, and also had an awareness of danger to some degree. It waved its large hands and swatted behind itself at Yue Zhong, wanting to chase away this fly that it hated.

Yue Zhong instantly activated his Shadow Steps Skill and his speed surged to the limit; he dodged the L3's attacks whilst continuously using the Devil Flame to crazily burn away the L3's head.

That crimson-colored flame constantly enveloped the L3's head and didn't stop; 15 seconds later, both of the L3's arms were finally powerless and it dropped to the ground. A large, glowing spiritual ball entered Yue Zhong's body.

[Congratulations on rising to Level 36, you have gained 2 enhancement points!]

[Congratulations on rising to Level 37, you have gained 2 enhancement points!]

"Enhance Stamina by 2 points and Spirit by 2 points!" Only after he got rid of that L3 did Yue Zhong finally let out a sigh of relief. He thought for a while and chose to enhance his physical strength and spirit.

In this time's fight with that L3, Yue Zhong had employed 3 skills in a row, thus his consumption of stamina and spirit was not little. In order to have sustainable battle power and the ability to activate skills at any time from this day onward, he chose to enhance stamina and spirit.

"This Yue Zhong really is frightening, he can actually even kill a monster like this!" Xia Yue watched Yue Zhong get rid of the giant-like L3 and her heart was filled with shock. She had witnessed Yue

Zhong's tyranny before-it was just that this time, it gave her the most tremendous shock. That L3 was an invincible, terrifying existence that not even grenades could kill, yet it was actually killed by Yue Zhong. This naturally made her endlessly horrified in her heart.

After that L3 had died, a Skill Book, a Green Treasure Box and 200 Survival Coins burst out from beside its body.

[Level 4 Skill: Rebirth!

This is a passive skill that can only be learnt in situations where vitality is above 100 points without the assistance of equipment. In addition, the evolver's profession must mainly be that of the battle type in order to learn this. After learning this passive skill, even heavy injuries like broken limbs or crushed bones can slowly recover unless the person has died on the spot. Lost limbs can be regenerated and the speed of regeneration depends on your body's vitality and how much energy is absorbed during the recovery process.]

[Level 3 Treasure: Power Belt! After equipping this, strength increases by 6 points.]

"This skill is truly too good!" Yue Zhong looked at that Level 4 Skill Rebirth and his eyes flashed with a strange light. He had to learn this passive skill: after learning this, even if he lost an arm, it could grow back again.

It was only that upon seeing the requirements to learn the Rebirth Skill, Yue Zhong's eyes lightly flickered. Having to reach 100 points of vitality without the boosts from any equipment wasn't an easy condition. Currently, Yue Zhong only had 61 points of vitality without his equipment on; if he wanted to reach 100 points, it would be too unrealistic to achieve it purely through leveling-he would need to distribute 20 levels' worth of points to vitality.

Right when Yue Zhong was putting his spoils of war into his

inventory, a large L2 walked over in front of him and its fist fiercely bombarded towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's figure flashed and he immediately went behind the L2; he slashed at the L2's head and instantly sent it flying. The Dark Magic Sword was extremely sharp and in Yue Zhong's hands, it could already send an L2's head flying: however, if he wanted to kill an L3 with it, the Dark Magic Sword wasn't sharp enough.

"Continue to clear the road!" Yue Zhong didn't look at that L2 again and ordered.

With the efforts of Kong Tianyu's 2nd Company, the cars blocking the road were all pushed aside and a big path was cleared for the main forces.

During the clearing process, there were also 4 intact Hummers that joined Yue Zhong's fleet and once again, the fleet had expanded.

The fleet travelled for another day and stopped beside a branch road in accordance with Xia Yue's instructions.

"The arsenal is right inside there! As long as you keep on walking along this lane, you'll be able to see it." Xia Yue said to Yue Zhong as she pointed at an ordinary lane leading into the remote mountains and ancient forests.

(Note: 路- basically leading into the wilderness.)

Yue Zhong looked at that area of wilderness and his eyebrows lightly furrowed. The tyrannical mutated beasts were greatest in number in this sort of undeveloped remote place. Even the slightest mistake would result in the destruction of his only elite main battalion here in this place.

"I will first go to scout, you people wait here for orders!" Yue Zhong ordered.



# Chapter 200: Mutant Wolf Pack

---

Yue Zhong and a driver rode in a Hummer, following the lane leading into the weapons facility that was hidden deep within the mountains.

"Liang Hu! Fall Back! Fall Back!" All of a sudden, Yue Zhong had a premonition and he immediately shouted at the warrior responsible for driving.

Liang Hu immediately set the Hummer in reverse and retreated crazily.

From the forest, a number of giant wolves with grey fur and bodies as sturdy as lions leapt out like lightning, landing on the ground. If Xu Zhenggang had advanced earlier, he might have crashed into the midst of those giant wolves.

Yue Zhong activated his Eyes of Perception Skill and the information of the giant wolves immediately flooded into his brain:

[Level 35 Mutant Beast-Type: Mutant Grey Wolves. They possess tough skin and sharp claws, which can even tear through steel. Furthermore, they are usually gathered in packs, hence they are a tougher opponent to face.]

Yue Zhong lifted his gaze, only to see that the total number of wolves actually exceeded a hundred; he could only imagine how tough these wolves were before the 'end of the world' and his scalp went numb.

Those 100 Mutant Grey Wolves immediately rushed towards Yue Zhong and his subordinate with horrifying speed.

"Retreat quickly!" Yue Zhong quickly took out his Type 03 Rifle, aimed at the Mutant Wolves and fired three shots.

Those 3 bullets were aimed specifically between the eyebrows of 3 of the wolves: however, they become embedded in the fur and

didn't penetrate the skin. It was obvious that while the toughness of the fur could not match the Mutant Water Pythons' scales, it was not that weak either.

On the contrary, the speed of the wolves was much greater than the water pythons= by running at their maximum speed, they could still chase the Hummer and the distance between was gradually decreasing.

"Go call for backup! Let them come with reinforcements! I will hold them off!" Yue Zhong activated his Bone Armor and jumped down from the vehicle. If there was no one to hold the wolves off, even Liang Hu would be killed alongside with the Hummer.

Receiving Yue Zhong's command, Liang Hu knew he would not be of much help by staying and hence he sped off.

The moment Yue Zhong landed, he pointed his ring at the Mutant Wolves and a huge fireball instantly shot towards one of the wolves; it exploded upon impact, killing it immediately.

After killing a wolf in one attack, Yue Zhong shot out a bone spear with his right hand, supporting his leap towards higher ground on the side. Those wolves had claws that could cut through steel and so Yue Zhong did not dare get surrounded in their midst.

(Note: alright, it's bone spear from now on. It sounds better than spike, although it's not really what the raws say.)

When the unfortunate wolf died under Yue Zhong's fireball, 7 or 8 of the other wolves immediately made short work of its carcass, tearing into it aggressively. The rest of the wolves were leaping towards Yue Zhong as they jumped up onto higher ground.

With a single slash, Yue Zhong killed the foremost Mutant Wolf and followed up with another shot of his bone spear to send himself up on to a tree.

When he was up on the tree, Yue Zhong immediately retrieved the Stinger and fired 2 shots at the wolves below. With Yue

Zhong's superb marksmanship, 2 more wolves died miserably when their heads exploded. Their corpses were also cleaned out by their companions without a thought.

With the flip of his hand, Yue Zhong drew out a JS12.7mm Sniper Rifle into his hands. This was one of the items he had recovered when sweeping through the army barracks. Yue Zhong supported the JS12.7mm rifle in his arms, then immediately aimed and fired at the wolves below him.

With a single loud "peng", a hole appeared in the Mutant Wolf's head and it fell lifelessly onto the floor; likewise, it was torn apart by its companions.

"Luckily for me, wolves don't know how to climb trees. If not, it would be problematic!" Yue Zhong sat on the tree, calmly picking off the wolves one by one with the JS12.7mm rifle. The only regret was that the killing of these Mutant Beasts with the usage of non-system weapons did not give him any experience.

After Yue Zhong had killed about 7 of the wolves with the rifle, one of the them suddenly leapt upwards, and stuck its sharp claws into the tree, making its way up the tree one step at a time (TN: more like paw by paw eh?

divinecelestialbeinglol: that's very funny Kun).

Yue Zhong's face paled and he immediately fired a shot at the wolf, making its head explode.

However, it was too late: as if they had all gained the instinct, one by one, they started to throw themselves onto the tree and made use of their claws to climb up it.

It was just that before Z-Day, wolves were not beasts that could climb trees, but after the events of Z-Day, their bodies had undergone huge enhancements. Yet to suddenly gain the ability to climb trees well, that was not too plausible.

Those making their way up the tree proceeded slowly; after Yue

Zhong observed for a while, he kept the JS12.7mm rifle and made use of his knife to behead one of the Mutant Wolves that had just managed to climb up the tree, sending its head flying.

Even when the wolves were climbing up from all directions, Yue Zhong remained calm and beheaded each and every wolf that made its way up as if he were harvesting grass.

After killing 5 wolves in a matter of seconds, the rest of the Mutant Wolves jumped down from the tree. They were not as unintelligent as the normal zombies. When they failed in an attempt, they would think of other methods. As the wolves came down from the tree, Yue Zhong reverted to using the JS12.7mm rifle to take out the Mutant Wolves.

Staring at Yue Zhong atop the tree, one of the Mutant Wolves' eyes flashed and it took a vicious bite out of the tree. After evolving, these wolves had teeth and claws that could pierce through steel-the force behind their bites could only be imagined from this. With just one bite, a huge hole appeared in the tree. The rest of the wolves noticed and immediately started attacking the tree with a crazy fervor.

Wood chips flew everywhere and huge holes appeared one after another; as the wolves bit frenzily, Yue Zhong shot down 2 of the Mutant Wolves. At that moment though, the tree was finally bitten into two and it fell to the ground.

Just before that, Yue Zhong had extended the bone spear with his right hand, piercing through a tree someplace else before retracting it. The bone spear brought him towards another tree, rendering the efforts of the Mutant Wolves for naught.

Seeing how slippery Yue Zhong was, the Mutant Wolves patrolled for a while before heading off. Had they been normal zombies, they would've waited there dumbly and be picked up off one by one by Yue Zhong. However, these Mutant Wolves had left in the end, highlighting the differences between Mutant Beasts and

Zombies.

Yue Zhong saw that the wolves were leaving and his face changed; he immediately jumped down from the tree. He lifted the Stinger and fired 2 shots at the escaping wolves, killing 2 of them by exploding their heads.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's taunts, the Mutant Wolves changed directions immediately like a tornado and rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange light and he slashed six times almost instantaneously: 6 of the wolves which had just pounced towards him were cut into two in mid-air, blood spraying everywhere.

Out of the 7 wolves that had charged at Yue Zhong, one of them had dodged Yue Zhong's fatal attacks; it came up in front of him and bit down furiously on his Bone Armor. Under the ferocious attack of the Mutant Wolf with teeth like steel, Yue Zhong's armor cracked and bits of bones were sent flying; however, it was not bitten through. Yue Zhong waved the sword and directly sliced towards the head of the Mutant Wolf.

As for the parts of the bone armor that were bitten, with just a small squirm, the cavities were filled.

Upon seeing this, Yue Zhong's mood calmed down: relying on the safety of the tree, he slashed everywhere, and each and every wolf that reached him died under his blade. If there were too many Mutant Wolves gathering around, Yue Zhong would then immediately make use of the Bone Spear to travel atop the tree.

After Yue Zhong had made short work of another 23 Mutant Wolves, the rest of the wolves decided not to be swept into his pace and set off escaping into the woods, ignoring his taunts and challenges.

"These mutant beasts are really tough to deal with!" Yue Zhong

leapt down from the tree, looked at the 30 plus Mutant Wolves' corpses, and furrowed his brows.

While these wolves were vulnerable to Yue Zhong's attacks, with regards to the main battalion that he had just established, only the heavy machine guns and infantry making use of the ZPT90-type 25mm cannons could deal serious damage to these wolves.

Other than that, the normal warriors could only use grenades or rocket launchers to even pose a threat to them. That was not to say that they could be used freely, as those weapons were powerful yet scarce resources, their amount dwindling with every usage. As of now, Yue Zhong's encampment did not possess much heavy weaponry.

Yue Zhong looked at the various corpses lying around, and used his Dark Magic Sword to slice open one of the Mutant Wolves' head, searching for its nucleus and blood essence; however, he did not manage to find any nucleus, just blood essences of various sizes.

Yue Zhong was delighted, and quickly kept all the corpses into his storage ring.

After cleaning up the loot into his ring, Yue Zhong immediately set off towards the direction he came from with haste.

Within moments, Yue Zhong saw his 1st Company already on their way to provide reinforcements. With the 2 ZPT90-type 25mm cannons, even if the wolves were to attack again, Yue Zhong had confidence in annihilating them.

Liu Yan saw that Yue Zhong was covered in the wolves' blood, and asked worriedly, "Captain Yue, are you alright?"

"I'm fine!" He waved his hands, looked towards the front and hesitated for a while before ordering, "Let's continue onwards!"

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's orders, the entire fleet embarked on their route forward, the arsenal of weapons providing them with a

strong sense of temptation as only a peerless beauty could.

"Stop!!" After advancing for quite a distance, Yue Zhong once again called for a stop-at the same time, he got down extremely quickly from the Hummer.

Right in the middle of the road, a Dong Feng warrior vehicle loaded with machine guns seemed to have been stepped on by some gigantic monster; it was flattened beyond recognition and dark red blood was scattered around the vehicle, giving the entire scene an extremely strange vibe.

# Table of Contents

## [God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 101: Breaking Through the Base](#)

[Chapter 102: Infantry Fighting Vehicle \(IFV\)](#)

[Chapter 103: Wu Guang's Heartfelt Words.](#)

[Chapter 104: Yue Zhong's Transformation](#)

[Chapter 105: Exploring Stone Horse Village](#)

[Chapter 106: Domestic Animal](#)

[Chapter 107: Mutated Monkey](#)

[Chapter 108: Slaughtering Monkey Group](#)

[Chapter 109: Explosive Killing Mutated Fierce Ape](#)

[Chapter 110: Attack Stone Horse Village](#)

[Chapter 111: Fierce Battle](#)

[Chapter 112: Close Combat Unit](#)

[Chapter 113: Fierce L2](#)

[Chapter 114: Life-Saving Plant](#)

[Chapter 115: Fishing for Snakes](#)

[Chapter 116: Green Feather Eagle](#)

[Chapter 117: Taming Greenie](#)

[Chapter 118: Small village](#)

[Chapter 119: Old Family Village](#)

[Chapter 120: Probe](#)

[Chapter 121: Attendant](#)

[Chapter 122: Man Eating Monster](#)

[Chapter 123: Respect and Fear](#)

[Chapter 124](#)

[Chapter 125: Behead](#)

[Chapter 126: Military Camp Information](#)

[Chapter 127: Long Hai City Base Guests](#)

[Chapter 128: H1](#)

[Chapter 129: Crash Job](#)

[Chapter 130: Capturing the Military Base](#)

[Chapter 131: Long Hai City Reaction](#)

[Chapter 132: Chen Jianfeng](#)



[Chapter 133: Yao Yao](#)

[Chapter 134: Military Training](#)

[Chapter 135: Poplar Tree Village](#)

[Chapter 136: Xue Kaishan](#)

[Chapter 137: Mob](#)

[Chapter 138: Beheading Xue Kaishan](#)

[Chapter 139: Scum Battalion](#)

[Chapter 140: Rebel Girl Zhang Jingqiao](#)

[Chapter 141: Meet Again](#)

[Chapter 142: Lobbyist](#)

[Chapter 143: Entering the Base Again](#)

[Chapter 144: Japanese](#)

[Chapter 145: Gui Tianshou](#)

[Chapter 146: Delivered to Police](#)

[Chapter 147: Debauchery](#)

[Chapter 148: Kong's Heavenly Reputation](#)

[Chapter 149: Switching from Arrogance to Deference](#)

[Chapter 150: Lei Sheng](#)

[Chapter 151](#)

[Chapter 152](#)

[Chapter 153](#)

[Chapter 154](#)

[Chapter 155](#)

[Chapter 156](#)

[Chapter 157](#)

[Chapter 158](#)

[Chapter 159](#)

[Chapter 160](#)

[Chapter 161](#)

[Chapter 162](#)

[Chapter 163](#)

[Chapter 164](#)

[Chapter 165](#)

[Chapter 166](#)

[Chapter 167](#)

[Chapter 168](#)

[Chapter 169](#)

[Chapter 170](#)

[Chapter 171](#)

[Chapter 172](#)

[Chapter 173](#)

[Chapter 174](#)

[Chapter 175](#)

[Chapter 176](#)

[Chapter 177](#)

[Chapter 178](#)

[Chapter 179](#)

[Chapter 180](#)

[Chapter 181](#)

[Chapter 182](#)

[Chapter 183](#)

[Chapter 184](#)

[Chapter 185](#)

[Chapter 186](#)

[Chapter 187](#)

[Chapter 188](#)

[Chapter 189 – The Zombie Horde Retreats](#)

[Chapter 190](#)

[Chapter 191](#)

[Chapter 192](#)

[Chapter 193: Grinding with the Zombie Hordes!](#)

[Chapter 194: Seize power!](#)

[Chapter 195: Zombicide!](#)

[Chapter 196: Dealing with Foreign Friends](#)

[Chapter 197: Re-organize the Troops!](#)

[Chapter 198: Xia Yue's Trade!](#)

[Chapter 199: L3!!](#)

[Chapter 200: Mutant Wolf Pack](#)